THE NEW TESTAMENT IN BASIC ENGLISH

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
IN
BASIC ENGLISH

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
IN
BASIC ENGLISH



NEW YORK
E. P. DUTTON & CO., Inc.
1945

COPYRIGHT, 1941

BY E. P. DUTTON & CO., INC.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

PRINTED IN THE U.S.A.

First Edition *June, 1941*
Second Edition . . . *July, 1941*
Third Edition *July, 1941*
Fourth Edition . . . *August, 1941*
Fifth Edition *August, 1941*
Sixth Edition . . . *October, 1941*
Seventh Edition . . *October, 1941*
Eighth Edition . . *November, 1941*
Ninth Edition . . *November, 1941*
Tenth Edition . . *November, 1941*
Eleventh Edition . . . *April, 1944*
Twelfth Edition . . *January, 1945*

NOTE

THE form in which the New Testament is given here is not simply another example of the Bible story put into present-day English. The language used is Basic English.[1]

Basic English, produced by Mr C. K. Ogden of the Orthological Institute, is a simple form of the English language which, with 850[2] words, is able to give the sense of anything which may be said in English.

Working with the Orthological Institute, a Committee under the direction of Mr S. H. Hooke, Professor of Old Testament Studies in the University of London, has been responsible for a new English form of the Bible based on the Hebrew and the Greek.

In this undertaking, the latest ideas and discoveries in connection with the work of putting the Bible into other languages were taken into account, and when the Basic form was complete it was gone over in detail by a Committee formed by the Syndics of the Cambridge University Press.

The Basic New Testament, which in this way was watched over by two separate groups of experts through its different stages, is designed to be used wherever the English language has taken root.

Frequently, the narrow limits of the word-list make it hard to keep the Basic completely parallel with the Greek; but great trouble has been taken with every verse and every line to make certain that there are no errors of sense and no loose wording. It is only natural that, from time to time, some of the more delicate

[1] The language of this *Note*.

[2] By the addition of 50 Special Bible words and the use of 100 words listed as giving most help in the reading of English verse, this number has been increased to 1000 for the purpose of putting the Bible into Basic.

shades of sense have not been covered; on the other hand, it is well to keep in mind that in the Authorised Version the power and music of the language sometimes take so much of the reader's attention that these more delicate shades are overlooked.

In fact, the Basic expert is forced, because of the limited material with which he is working, to give special care to the sense of the words before him. There is no question of the Basic work taking the place of the Authorised Version or of coming into competition with it; but it may be said of this new English Bible that it is in a marked degree straightforward and simple and that these qualities give it an independent value.

THE NEW TESTAMENT

ST MATTHEW p. 1
ST MARK 70
ST LUKE p. 114
ST JOHN 189

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES p. 244

LETTER OF PAUL TO THE ROMANS p. 315
1ST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS 344
2ND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS 373
LETTER OF PAUL TO THE GALATIANS 392
LETTER OF PAUL TO THE EPHESIANS 402
LETTER OF PAUL TO THE PHILIPPIANS 412
LETTER OF PAUL TO THE COLOSSIANS 419
1ST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS 425
2ND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS 431
1ST LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY 435
2ND LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY 443
LETTER OF PAUL TO TITUS 449
LETTER OF PAUL TO PHILEMON 453
LETTER TO THE HEBREWS 455
LETTER OF JAMES 478
1ST LETTER OF PETER 486
2ND LETTER OF PETER 495
1ST LETTER OF JOHN 500
2ND LETTER OF JOHN 508
3RD LETTER OF JOHN 509
LETTER OF JUDE 510
REVELATION OF JOHN 513

Where, in agreement with the Revised Version, certain verses of the Authorised Version have been taken out, the old verse-numbering has been kept.

ST MATTHEW

THE GENERATIONS OF JESUS CHRIST

1 THE book of the generations of Jesus Christ, the
son of David, the son of Abraham.
The son of Abraham was Isaac; and the son of
Isaac was Jacob; and the sons of Jacob were Judah and
his brothers; and the sons of Judah were Perez and
Zerah by Tamar; and the son of Perez was Hezron;
and the son of Hezron was Ram; and the son of Ram
was Amminadab; and the son of Amminadab was
Nahshon; and the son of Nahshon was Salmon; and the
son of Salmon by Rahab was Boaz; and the son of Boaz
by Ruth was Obed; and the son of Obed was Jesse;
and the son of Jesse was David the king;

And the son of David was Solomon by her who had
been the wife of Uriah; and the son of Solomon was
Rehoboam; and the son of Rehoboam was Abijah; and
the son of Abijah was Asa; and the son of Asa was
Jehoshaphat; and the son of Jehoshaphat was Joram;
and the son of Joram was Uzziah; and the son of Uzziah
was Jotham; and the son of Jotham was Ahaz; and the
son of Ahaz was Hezekiah; and the son of Hezekiah was
Manasseh; and the son of Manasseh was Amon; and the
son of Amon was Josiah; and the sons of Josiah were
Jechoniah and his brothers, at the time of the taking
away to Babylon.

And after the taking away to Babylon, Jechoniah
had a son Shealtiel; and Shealtiel had Zerubbabel; and
Zerubbabel had Abiud; and Abiud had Eliakim; and
Eliakim had Azor; and Azor had Zadok; and Zadok had
Achim; and Achim had Eliud; and Eliud had Eleazar;
and Eleazar had Matthan; and Matthan had Jacob; and
the son of Jacob was Joseph the husband of Mary, who
gave birth to Jesus, whose name is Christ.

So all the generations from Abraham to David are 17
fourteen generations; and from David to the taking
away to Babylon, fourteen generations; and from the
taking away to Babylon to the coming of Christ, four-
teen generations.

THE BIRTH OF CHRIST

Now the birth of Jesus Christ was in this way: when 18
his mother Mary was going to be married to Joseph,
before they came together the discovery was made that
she was with child by the Holy Spirit. And Joseph her 19
husband, being an upright man, and not desiring to
make her a public example, had a mind to put her away
privately. But when he was giving thought to these 20
things, an angel of the Lord came to him in a dream,
saying, "Joseph, son of David, have no fear of taking
Mary as your wife; because that which is in her body
is of the Holy Spirit. And she will give birth to a son; 21
and you will give him the name Jesus; for he will give
his people salvation from their sins." Now all this took 22
place so that the word of the Lord by the prophet might
come true,

See, the unmarried woman will be with child, and will 23
give birth to a son,
And they will give him the name Immanuel,

that is, God with us. And Joseph did as the angel of 24
the Lord had said to him, and took her as his wife; and 25
he had no connection with her till she had given birth
to a son; and he gave him the name Jesus.

HEROD AND THE WISE MEN

2 Now when the birth of Jesus took place in Beth- 1
lehem of Judaea, in the days of Herod the king,
there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,
saying, "Where is the King of the Jews whose birth 2
has now taken place? We have seen his star in the east

and have come to give him worship." And when it came 3
to the ears of Herod the king, he was troubled, and all
Jerusalem with him. And he got together all the chief 4
priests and scribes of the people, questioning them as to
where the birth-place of the Christ would be. And they 5
said to him, "In Bethlehem of Judaea; for so it is said
in the writings of the prophet,

You Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, 6
Are not the least among the chiefs of Judah:
Out of you will come a ruler,
Who will be the keeper of my people Israel".

Then Herod sent for the wise men privately, and put 7
questions to them about what time the star had been
seen. And he sent them to Bethlehem and said, "Go 8
and make certain where the young child is; and when
you have seen him, let me have news of it, so that I may
come and give him worship". And after hearing the 9
king, they went on their way; and the star which they
saw in the east went before them, till it came to rest
over the place where the young child was. And when 10
they saw the star, they were full of joy. And they came 11
into the house, and saw the young child with Mary, his
mother; and falling down on their faces they gave him
worship; and from their store they gave him offerings
of gold, perfume, and spices. And it was made clear to 12
them by God in a dream that they were not to go back
to Herod; so they went into their country by another way.

THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT

And when they had gone, an angel of the Lord came 13
to Joseph in a dream, saying, "Get up and take the
young child and his mother, and go into Egypt, and do
not go from there till I give you word; for Herod will
be searching for the young child to put him to death".
So he took the young child and his mother by night and 14
went into Egypt; and was there till the death of Herod; 15
so that the word of the Lord through the prophet might

come true, "Out of Egypt have I sent for my son".
Then Herod, when he saw that he had been tricked by 16
the wise men, was very angry; and he sent out, and put
to death all the male children in Bethlehem, and in all
the parts round about it, from two years old and under,
acting on the knowledge which he had got with care
from the wise men. Then the word of Jeremiah the 17
prophet came true,

In Ramah there was a sound 18
Of weeping and great sorrow,
Rachel weeping for her children,
And she would not be comforted for their loss.

But when Herod was dead, an angel of the Lord came 19
in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, "Get up and 20
take the young child and his mother, and go into the
land of Israel: because they who were attempting to take
the young child's life are dead". And he got up, and 21
took the young child and his mother, and came into
the land of Israel. But when it came to his ears that 22
Archelaus was ruling over Judaea in the place of his
father Herod, he was in fear of going there; and God
having given him news of the danger in a dream, he
went out of the way into the country parts of Galilee.
And he came and was living in a town named Nazareth: 23
so that the word of the prophets might come true, "He
will be named a Nazarene".

THE PREACHING OF JOHN

3 AND in those days John the Baptist came preaching 1
in the waste land of Judaea, saying, "Let your 2
hearts be turned from sin; for the kingdom of
heaven is near". For this is he of whom Isaiah the 3
prophet said,

The voice of one crying in the waste land,
'Make ready the way of the Lord,
Make his roads straight'.

Now John was clothed in *camel's* hair, with a leather 4
band about him; and his food was locusts and honey.
Then Jerusalem and all Judaea went out to him, and 5
all the people from near Jordan; and they were given 6
baptism by him in the river Jordan, saying openly that
they had done wrong. But when he saw a number of 7
the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he
said to them, "Offspring of snakes, at whose word are
you taking flight from the wrath to come? Let your 8
change of heart be seen in your works: and say not to 9
yourselves, 'We have Abraham for our father'; because
I say to you that God is able from these stones to make
children for Abraham. And even now the axe is put to 10
the root of the trees; every tree then which does not
give good fruit is cut down, and put into the fire. Truly, 11
I give baptism with water to those of you who have
sorrow for their sins; but he who comes after me is
greater than I, whose shoes I am not good enough to
take up: he will give you baptism with the Holy Spirit
and with fire: in whose hand is the instrument with 12
which he will make clean his grain; he will put the good
grain in his store, but the waste will be burned up in
the fire which will never be put out."

JESUS GIVEN BAPTISM

Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan, 13
to be given baptism by him. But John would have kept 14
him back, saying, "It is I who have need of baptism
from you, and do you come to mė?" But Jesus made 15
answer, saying to him, "Let it be so now: because so it
is right for us to make righteousness complete". Then
he gave him baptism. And Jesus, having been given 16
baptism, straight away went up from the water; and, the
heavens opening, he saw the Spirit of God coming down
on him as a dove; and a voice came out of heaven, saying, 17
"This is my dearly-loved Son, with whom I am well
pleased".

JESUS TESTED BY THE EVIL ONE

4 THEN Jesus was sent by the Spirit into the waste 1
land to be tested by the Evil One. And after going 2
without food for forty days and forty nights, he
was in need of it. And the Evil One came and said to 3
him, "If you are the Son of God, give the word for these
stones to become bread". But he made answer and said, 4
"It is in the Writings, 'Bread is not man's only need,
but every word which comes out of the mouth of God'".
Then the Evil One took him to the holy town; and he 5
put him on the highest point of the Temple and said to
him, "If you are the Son of God, let yourself go down; 6
for it is in the Writings,

He will give his angels care over you;
And in their hands they will keep you up,
So that your foot may not be crushed against a stone".

Jesus said to him, "Again it is in the Writings, 'You 7
may not put the Lord your God to the test'". Again, 8
the Evil One took him up to a very high mountain, and
let him see all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory
of them; and he said to him, "All these things will I 9
give you, if you will go down on your face and give me
worship". Then said Jesus to him, "Away, Satan: for 10
it is in the Writings, 'Give worship to the Lord your
God and be his servant only'". Then the Evil One went 11
away from him, and angels came and took care of him.

Now when it came to his ears that John had been put 12
in prison he went away to Galilee; and going away from 13
Nazareth, he came and made his living-place in Caper-
naum, which is by the sea, in the country of Zebulun
and Naphtali: so that the word of the prophet Isaiah 14
might come true,

The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, 15
By the way of the sea, the other side of Jordan,
Galilee of the Gentiles,
The people who were in the dark 16

Saw a great light,
And to those in the land of the shade of death
Did the dawn come up.

THE PREACHING OF JESUS

From that time Jesus went about preaching and saying, 17
"Let your hearts be turned from sin, for the kingdom of heaven is near".

And when he was walking by the sea of Galilee, he 18
saw two brothers, Simon, whose other name was Peter, and Andrew his brother, who were putting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. And he said to them, 19
"Come after me, and I will make you fishers of men". And straight away they let go the nets and went after 20
him. And going on from there he saw two other brothers, 21
James the son of Zebedee and John his brother, in the boat with their father, stitching up their nets; and he said, "Come". And they went straight from the boat 22
and their father and came after him.

And Jesus went about in all Galilee, teaching in their 23
Synagogues and preaching the good news of the kingdom, and making well those who were ill with any disease among the people. And news of him went out 24
through all Syria; and they took to him all who were ill, with different diseases and pains, those having evil spirits, and those who were out of their minds and those who had no power of moving. And he made them well. And there went after him great numbers from Galilee 25
and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judaea and from the other side of Jordan.

TEACHING ON THE MOUNTAIN

5 AND seeing great masses of people he went up into 1
the mountain; and when he was seated his disciples came to him. And with these words he gave them 2
teaching, saying,

"Happy are the poor in spirit: for the kingdom of 3
heaven is theirs.

"Happy are those who are sad: for they will be com- 4
forted.

"Happy are the gentle: for the earth will be their 5
heritage.

"Happy are those whose heart's desire is for right- 6
eousness: for they will have their desire.

"Happy are those who have mercy: for they will be 7
given mercy.

"Happy are the clean in heart: for they will see God. 8

"Happy are the peacemakers: for they will be named 9
sons of God.

"Happy are those who are attacked on account of 10
righteousness: for the kingdom of heaven will be theirs.
Happy are you when men give you a bad name, and are 11
cruel to you, and say all evil things against you falsely,
because of me. Be glad and full of joy; for great is your 12
reward in heaven: for so were the prophets attacked
who were before you.

"You are the salt of the earth; but if its taste goes 13
from the salt, how will you make it salt again? it is then
good for nothing but to be put out and crushed under
foot by men. You are the light of the world. A town 14
put on a hill may be seen by all. And a burning light is 15
not put under a vessel, but on its table; so that its rays
may be shining on all who are in the house. Even so 16
let your light be shining before men, so that they may
see your good works and give glory to your Father in
heaven.

"Let there be no thought that I have come to put an 17
end to the law or the prophets. I have not come for
destruction, but to make complete. Truly I say to you, 18
Till heaven and earth come to an end, not the smallest
letter or part of a letter will in any way be taken from
the law, till all things are done. Whoever then goes 19
against the smallest of these laws, teaching men to do
the same, will be named least in the kingdom of heaven;
but he who keeps the laws, teaching others to keep them,
will be named great in the kingdom of heaven. For I 20

say to you, If your righteousness is not greater than the
righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will never
go into the kingdom of heaven.

"You have knowledge that it was said in old times, 21
'You may not put to death; and whoever puts to death
will be in danger of being judged;' but I say to you that 22
everyone who is angry with his brother will be in danger
of being judged; and he who says to his brother, '*Raca*,'
will be in danger from the Sanhedrin; and whoever says,
'You foolish one,' will be in danger of the hell of fire.
If then you are making an offering at the altar and there 23
it comes to your mind that your brother has something
against you, while your offering is still before the altar, 24
first go and make peace with your brother, then come
and make your offering. Come to an agreement quickly 25
with him who has a cause against you at law, while you
are with him on the way, for fear that he may give you
up to the judge and the judge may give you to the police
and you may be put into prison. Truly, I say to you, 26
You will not come out from there till you have made
payment of the very last farthing.

"You have knowledge that it was said, 'You may 27
not have connection with another man's wife': but I say 28
to you that everyone whose eyes are turned on a woman
with desire has had connection with her in his heart.
And if your right eye is a cause of trouble to you, take 29
it out and put it away from you; because it is better to
undergo the loss of one part, than for all your body to
go into hell. And if your right hand is a cause of trouble 30
to you, let it be cut off and put it away from you; because
it is better to undergo the loss of one part, than for all
your body to go into hell. Again, it was said, 'Whoever 31
puts away his wife has to give her a statement in writing
for this purpose': but I say to you that everyone who 32
puts away his wife for any other cause but the loss of her
virtue, makes her untrue in married life; and whoever
takes her as his wife after she is put away, is untrue in
married life.

"Again, you have knowledge that it was said in old 33
times, 'Do not take false oaths, but give effect to your
oaths to the Lord': but I say to you, Take no oaths at 34
all; not by the heaven, because it is the seat of God:
or by the earth, because it is the resting-place for his 35
foot, or by Jerusalem, because it is the town of the great
King. You may not take an oath by your head, because 36
you are not able to make one hair white or black. But 37
let your words be simply, 'Yes' or 'No': and whatever
is more than these is of the Evil One.

"You have knowledge that it was said, 'An eye for 38
an eye, and a tooth for a tooth': but I say to you, Do not 39
make use of force against an evil man; but to him who
gives you a blow on the right side of your face let the
left be turned. And if any man goes to law with you, 40
and takes away your coat, do not keep back your robe
from him. And whoever makes you go one mile, go 41
with him two. Give to him who comes with a request, 42
and keep not your property from him who would for a
time make use of it.

"You have knowledge that it was said, 'Have love 43
for your neighbour, and hate for him who is against
you': but I say to you, Have love for those who are 44
against you, and make prayer for those who are cruel
to you; so that you may be the sons of your Father in 45
heaven; for his sun gives light to the evil and the good,
and he sends rain on the upright man and on the sinner.
For if you have love for those who have love for you, 46
what credit is it to you? do not the tax-farmers the same?
And if you say, 'Good day,' to your brothers only, what 47
do you do more than others? do not even the Gentiles
the same? Be then complete in righteousness, even as 48
your Father in heaven is complete."

6 "TAKE care not to do your good works before men, 1
to be seen by them; or you will have no reward
from your Father in heaven.

"When then you give money to the poor, do not 2

make a noise about it, as the false-hearted men do in the Synagogues and in the streets, so that they may have glory from men. Truly, I say to you, They have their reward. But when you give money, let not your right 3
hand see what your left hand does: so that your giving 4
may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will give you your reward.

"And when you make your prayers, be not like the 5
false-hearted men, who take pleasure in getting up and saying their prayers in the Synagogues and at the street turnings so that they may be seen by men. Truly I say to you, They have their reward. But when you make 6
your prayer, go into your private room, and, shutting the door, say a prayer to your Father in secret, and your Father who sees in secret will give you your reward. And in your prayer, do not make use of the same words 7
again and again, as the Gentiles do: for they have the idea that God will give attention to them because of the number of their words. So be not like them; because 8
your Father has knowledge of your needs even before you make your requests to him. Let this then be your 9
prayer: 'Our Father in heaven, may your name be kept holy. Let your kingdom come. Let your pleasure be 10
done, as in heaven, so on earth. Give us this day bread 11
for our needs. And make us free of our debts, as we 12
have made those free who are in debt to us. And let us 13
not be put to the test, but keep us safe from the Evil One.' For if you let men have forgiveness for their sins, 14
you will have forgiveness from your Father in heaven. But if you do not let men have forgiveness for their sins, 15
you will not have forgiveness from your Father for your sins.

"And when you go without food, be not sad-faced as 16
the false-hearted are. For they go about with changed looks, so that men may see that they are going without food. Truly I say to you, They have their reward. But 17
when you go without food, put oil on your head and make your face clean; so that no one may see that you 18

are going without food, but your Father in secret; and your Father, who sees in secret, will give you your reward.

"Make no store of wealth for yourselves on earth, 19
where it may be turned to dust by worms and weather,
and where thieves may come in by force and take it
away. But make a store for yourselves in heaven, where 20
it will not be turned to dust and where thieves do not
come in to take it away: for where your wealth is, there 21
will your heart be. The light of the body is the eye; if 22
then your eye is true, all your body will be full of light.
But if your eye is evil, all your body will be dark. If 23
then the light which is in you is dark, how dark it will
be! No man is able to be a servant to two masters: for 24
he will have hate for the one and love for the other, or
he will keep to one and have no respect for the other. You
may not be servants of God and of wealth. So I say to 25
you, Take no thought for your life, about food or drink,
or about clothing for your body. Is not life more than
food, and the body more than its clothing? See the birds 26
of heaven; they do not put seeds in the earth, they do
not get in grain, or put it in storehouses; and your
Father in heaven gives them food. Are you not of much
more value than they? And which of you by taking 27
thought is able to make himself a foot taller? And why 28
are you troubled about clothing? See the flowers of the
field, how they come up; they do no work, they make
no thread: but I say to you that even Solomon in all his 29
glory was not clothed like one of these. But if God gives 30
such clothing to the grass of the field which is here
today, and tomorrow is put into the oven, will he not
much more give you clothing, O you of little faith?
Then do not be full of care, saying, 'What will we have 31
for food or drink?' or, 'With what may we be clothed?'
Because the Gentiles go in search of all these things: 32
for your Father in heaven has knowledge that you have
need of all these things: but let your first care be for 33
his kingdom and his righteousness; and all these other

things will be given to you in addition. Then have no 34
care for tomorrow: tomorrow will take care of itself.
Take the trouble of the day as it comes."

7 "BE not judges of others, and you will not be judged. 1
For as you have been judging, so you will be 2
judged, and with your measure will it be measured
to you. And why do you take note of the grain of dust 3
in your brother's eye, but take no note of the bit of wood
which is in your eye? Or how will you say to your 4
brother, 'Let me take out the grain of dust from your
eye,' when you yourself have a bit of wood in your eye?
You false one, first take out the bit of wood from your 5
eye, then will you see clearly to take out the grain of
dust from your brother's eye.

"Do not give that which is holy to the dogs, or put 6
your jewels before pigs, for fear that they will be crushed
under foot by the pigs whose attack will then be made
against you.

"Make a request, and it will be answered; what you 7
are searching for you will get; give the sign, and the
door will be open to you: because to everyone who 8
makes a request, it will be given, and he who is searching
will get his desire; and to him who gives the sign, the
door will be open. Or which of you, if his son makes 9
a request for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he 10
makes a request for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, 11
then, being evil, are able to give good things to your
children, how much more will your Father in heaven
give good things to those who make requests to him?
All those things, then, which you would have men do 12
to you, even so do you to them: because this is the law
and the prophets.

"Go in by the narrow door; for wide is the door, and 13
open is the way which goes to destruction, and great
numbers go in by it. For narrow is the door and hard 14
the road to life, and only a small number make discovery
of it.

"Be on the watch for false prophets, who come to 15
you in sheep's clothing, but inside they are cruel wolves.
By their fruits you will get knowledge of them. Do 16
men get grapes from thorns or *figs* from *thistles?* Even 17
so, every good tree gives good fruit; but the bad tree
gives evil fruit. It is not possible for a good tree to 18
give bad fruit, and a bad tree will not give good fruit.
Every tree which does not give good fruit is cut down 19
and put in the fire. So by their fruits you will get 20
knowledge of them. Not everyone who says to me, 21
'Lord, Lord,' will go into the kingdom of heaven; but
he who does the pleasure of my Father in heaven.
A great number will say to me on that day, 'Lord, 22
Lord, were we not prophets in your name, and did we
not by your name send out evil spirits, and by your
name do works of power?' And then will I say to them, 23
I never had knowledge of you: go from me, you workers
of evil. Everyone, then, to whom my words come, and 24
who does them, will be like a wise man who made his
house on a rock; and the rain came down and there was 25
a rush of waters and the winds were driving against that
house, but it was not moved; because it was based on
the rock. And everyone to whom my words come and 26
who does them not, will be like a foolish man, who
made his house on sand; and the rain came down and 27
there was a rush of waters and the winds were driving
against that house; and it came down and great was its
fall."

And it came about, when Jesus had come to the end 28
of these words, that the people were surprised at his
teaching, for he was teaching as one having authority,
and not as their scribes.

ALL WITH DISEASES MADE WELL

8 AND when he had come down from the mountain, 1
great numbers of people came after him. And a 2
leper came and gave him worship, saying, "Lord,
if it is your pleasure, you have power to make me clean".
And he put his hand on him, saying, "It is my pleasure; 3
be clean". And straight away he was made clean. And 4
Jesus said to him, "See that you say nothing about this
to anyone; but go and let the priest see you and make
the offering which was ordered by Moses, for a witness
to them".

And when he was come into Capernaum, a certain 5
captain came to him with a request, saying, "Lord, my 6
servant is ill in bed at the house, with no power in his
body, and in great pain". And he said to him, "I will 7
come and make him well". And the captain in answer 8
said, "Lord, I am not good enough for you to come
under my roof; but only say the word, and my servant
will be made well. Because I myself am a man under 9
authority, having under me fighting men; and I say to
this one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come,
and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does
it." And when these words came to the ears of Jesus 10
he was surprised, and said to those who came after him,
"Truly I say to you, I have not seen such great faith,
no, not in Israel. And I say to you that numbers will 11
come from the east and the west, and will take their
seats with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the king-
dom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom will be put 12
out into the dark, and there will be weeping and cries
of pain." And Jesus said to the captain, "Go in peace; 13
as your faith is, so let it be done to you". And the
servant was made well in that hour.

And when Jesus had come into Peter's house, he saw 14
his wife's mother in bed, very ill. And he put his hand 15
on hers and the disease went from her, and she got up
and took care of his needs. And in the evening, they 16

took to him a number of people who had evil spirits:
and he sent the spirits out of them with a word, and
made well all who were ill: so that the word of Isaiah 17
the prophet might come true, "He himself took our
pains and our diseases".

Now when Jesus saw a great mass of people about 18
him, he gave an order to go to the other side. And there 19
came a scribe, and said to him, "Master, I will come
after you wherever you go". And Jesus said to him, 20
"The foxes have holes, and the birds of heaven have a
resting-place; but the Son of man has nowhere to put
his head". And another of the disciples said to him, 21
"Lord, let me first go and give the last honours to my
father". But Jesus said to him, "Come after me; and 22
let the dead take care of their dead".

And when he had got into a boat, his disciples went 23
after him. And there came up a great storm in the sea, 24
so that the boat was covered with the waves: but he
was sleeping. And they came to him, and awaking him 25
said, "Help, Lord; destruction is near". And he said 26
to them, "Why are you full of fear, O you of little
faith?" Then he got up and gave orders to the wind
and the sea; and there was a great calm. And the men 27
were full of wonder, saying, "What sort of man is this,
that even the winds and the sea do his orders?"

IN THE COUNTRY OF THE GADARENES

And when he had come to the other side, to the 28
country of the Gadarenes, there came out to him from
the place of the dead, two who had evil spirits, so violent
that no man was able to go that way. And they gave 29
a loud cry, saying, "What have we to do with you, you
Son of God? Have you come here to give us punishment
before the time?" Now there was, some distance away, 30
a great herd of pigs taking their food. And the evil 31
spirits made strong prayers to him, saying, "If you send
us out, let us go into the herd of pigs". And he said 32

to them, "Go". And they came out, and went into the pigs; and the herd went rushing down a sharp slope into the sea and came to their end in the water. And 33
their keepers took flight and went into the town and gave an account of everything, and of the men who had the evil spirits. And all the town came out to Jesus; 34
and seeing him they made request that he would go away from their part of the country.

TEACHING IN CAPERNAUM

9 AND he got into a boat and went across and came to 1
his town. And they took to him a man stretched 2
on a bed who had no power of moving; and Jesus, seeing their faith, said to the man who was ill, "Son, take heart; you have forgiveness for your sins". And 3
some of the scribes said among themselves, "This man has no respect for God". And Jesus, having knowledge 4
of what was in their minds, said, "Why are your thoughts evil? For which is the simpler, to say, You 5
have forgiveness for your sins; or to say, Get up and go? But so that you may see that on earth the Son of 6
man has authority for the forgiveness of sins," (then said he to the man who was ill) "Get up, and take up your bed, and go to your house." And he got up and 7
went away to his house. But when the people saw it, 8
they were full of fear, and gave glory to God, who had given such power to men.

And when Jesus was going from there, he saw a man 9
whose name was Matthew, seated at the place where taxes were taken; and he said to him, "Come after me". And he got up and went after him.

And it came about, when he was in the house taking 10
food, that a number of tax-farmers and sinners came and took their places with Jesus and his disciples. And when 11
the Pharisees saw it, they said to his disciples, "Why does your Master take food with tax-farmers and sinners?" But on hearing this he said, "Those who 12

are well have no need of a medical man, but those who
are ill. But go and take to heart the sense of these 13
words, 'My desire is for mercy, not offerings': for I
have come not to get the upright, but sinners."

Then the disciples of John came to him, saying, "Why 14
do we and the Pharisees frequently go without food,
but your disciples do not?" And Jesus said to them, 15
"Will the friends of the newly-married man be sad as
long as he is with them? But the days will come when
he will be taken away from them, and then will they go
without food. And no man puts a bit of new cloth on 16
an old coat, for by pulling away from the old, it makes
a worse hole. And men do not put new wine into old 17
wine-skins; or the skins will be burst and the wine will
come out, and the skins are of no more use: but they
put new wine in new wine-skins, and so the two will be
safe."

While he was saying these things to them, there came 18
a ruler and gave him worship, saying, "My daughter
is even now dead; but come and put your hand on her,
and she will come back to life". And Jesus got up and 19
went after him, and so did his disciples. And a woman, 20
who for twelve years had had a flow of blood, came after
him, and put her hand on the edge of his robe: "Because," 21
she said to herself, "if I may but put my hand on his robe,
I will be made well". But Jesus, turning and seeing her, 22
said, "Daughter, take heart; your faith has made you
well". And the woman was made well from that hour.
And when Jesus came into the ruler's house and saw the 23
players with their instruments and the people making a
noise, he said, "Make room; for the girl is not dead, 24
but sleeping". And he was laughed at by them. But 25
when the people were sent out, he went in and took her
by the hand; and the girl got up. And the news of it 26
went out into all that land.

And when Jesus went on from there, two blind men 27
came after him, crying out, "Have mercy on us, you
son of David". And when he had come into the house, 28

the blind men came to him; and Jesus said to them, "Have you faith that I am able to do this?" They said to him, "Yes, Lord". Then he put his hand on their 29
eyes, saying, "As your faith is, let it be done to you". And their eyes were made open. And Jesus gave them 30
a strong order not to let any man have knowledge of it. But they went out and gave news of him in all that 31
land.

And while they were going away, there came to him 32
a man without the power of talking; and with an evil spirit. And when the evil spirit had been sent out, the 33
man had the power of talking: and they were all surprised, saying, "Such a thing has never been seen in Israel". But the Pharisees said, "By the ruler of evil 34
spirits, he sends evil spirits out of men".

And Jesus went about all the towns and small places, 35
teaching in their Synagogues and preaching the good news of the kingdom and making well all sorts of disease and pain. But when he saw all the people, he was moved 36
with pity for them, because they were troubled and wandering like sheep without a keeper. Then he said 37
to his disciples, "There is much grain but not enough men to get it in. Make prayer, then, to the Lord of the 38
grain-fields, that he may send out workers to get in
10 his grain." And he got together his twelve disciples 1
and gave them the power of driving out unclean spirits, and of making well all sorts of disease and pain.

POWERS GIVEN TO THE TWELVE

Now the names of the twelve are these: The first, 2
Simon, who is named Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee and John his brother; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew 3
the tax-farmer; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, who was 4
false to him. These twelve Jesus sent out and gave them 5
orders, saying,

"Do not go among the Gentiles, or into any town
of Samaria, but go to the wandering sheep of the house 6
of Israel, and, on your way, say, 'The kingdom of 7
heaven is near'. Make well those who are ill, give life 8
to the dead, make lepers clean, send evil spirits out of
men; freely it has been given to you, freely give. Take 9
no gold or silver or copper in your pockets; take no 10
bag for your journey, and do not take two coats, or
shoes, or a stick: for the workman has a right to his
food. And into whatever town or small place you go, 11
make search there for someone who is respected, and
make his house your resting-place till you go away.
And when you go in, say, 'May peace be on this house'. 12
And if the house is good enough, let your peace come 13
on it: but if not, let your peace come back to you. And 14
whoever will not take you in, or give ear to your words,
when you go out from that house or that town, put off
its dust from your feet. Truly, I say to you, It will be 15
better for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day
of God's judging than for that town.

"See, I send you out as sheep among wolves. Be then 16
as wise as snakes, and as gentle as doves. But be on 17
the watch against men: for they will give you up to the
Sanhedrins, and in their Synagogues they will give you
blows; and you will come before rulers and kings because 18
of me, for a witness to them and to the Gentiles. But 19
when you are given up into their hands, do not be
troubled about what to say or how to say it: for in that
hour what you are to say will be given to you; because 20
it is not you who say the words, but the Spirit of your
Father in you. And brother will give up brother to 21
death, and the father his child: and children will go
against their fathers and mothers, and put them to
death. And you will be hated by all men because of my 22
name: but he who is strong to the end will have salvation.
But when they are cruel to you in one town, take flight 23
to another: for truly I say to you, You will not have gone
through the towns of Israel before the Son of man comes.

"A disciple is not greater than his master, or a servant 24
than his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he may 25
be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they
have given the name Beelzebub to the master of the
house, how much more to those of his house! Have, 26
then, no fear of them: because nothing is covered which
will not come to light, or secret which will not be made
clear. What I say to you in the dark, say in the light: 27
and what comes to your ear secretly, say publicly from
the house-tops. And have no fear of those who put to 28
death the body, but are not able to put to death the soul.
But have fear of him who has power to give soul and
body to destruction in hell. Are not *sparrows* two a 29
farthing? and not one of them comes to an end without
your Father: but the hairs of your head are all num- 30
bered. Then have no fear; you are of more value than 31
a flock of sparrows. To everyone, then, who gives 32
witness to me before men, I will give witness before
my Father in heaven. But if anyone says before men 33
that he has no knowledge of me, I will say that I have
no knowledge of him before my Father in heaven.

"Do not have the thought that I have come to send 34
peace on the earth; I came not to send peace but a
sword. For I have come to put a man against his father, 35
and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-
in-law against her mother-in-law: and a man will be 36
hated by those of his house. He who has more love for 37
his father or mother than for me is not good enough
for me; he who has more love for son or daughter than
for me is not good enough for me. And he who does not 38
take his cross and come after me is not good enough for
me. He who has the desire to keep his life will have it 39
taken from him, and he who gives up his life because of
me will have it given back to him.

"He who gives honour to you, gives honour to me; 40
and he who gives honour to me gives honour to him
who sent me. He who gives honour to a prophet in the 41
name of a prophet will be given a prophet's reward;

and he who gives honour to an upright man in the name of an upright man will be given an upright man's reward. And whoever gives to one of these little ones 42
a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, truly I say to you, he will not go without his reward."

JESUS AND JOHN THE BAPTIST

11 AND it came about that when Jesus had come to the 1
end of giving these orders to his twelve disciples, he went away from there, teaching and preaching in their towns.

Now when John had news in prison of the works of 2
the Christ, he sent his disciples to say to him, "Are you 3
he who is to come, or are we waiting for another?" And Jesus, answering, said to them, "Go and give news 4
to John of the things which you are seeing and hearing: the blind see; those who were not able to, are walking; 5
lepers are made clean; those who were without hearing now have their ears open; the dead come to life again, and the poor have the good news given to them. And 6
a blessing will be on him who has no doubts about me." And when they were going away, Jesus talking of John 7
said to all the people, "What went you out into the waste land to see? grasses moving in the wind? But 8
what went you out to see? a man delicately clothed? Those who have fair robes are in kings' houses. But 9
why did you go out? to see a prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet. This is he of whom it has 10
been said,

See, I send my servant before your face,
Who will make ready your way before you.

Truly I say to you, Among the sons of women there 11
has not been a greater than John the Baptist: but he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist till now, force 12
has been used against the kingdom of heaven, and violent

men take it. For all the prophets and the law were in 13
force till John. And if you are able to see it, this is 14
Elijah who was to come. He who has ears let him give 15
ear. But what comparison may I make of this genera- 16
tion? It is like children seated in the market-places,
crying out to one another, 'We made music for you and 17
you did not take part in the dance; we gave cries of
sorrow and you made no signs of grief'. For John came, 18
taking no food or drink, and they say, 'He has an evil
spirit'. The Son of man has come feasting and they say, 19
'See a lover of food and wine, a friend of tax-farmers and
sinners!' And wisdom is seen to be right by her works."

HARD WORDS TO CAPERNAUM

Then he went on to say hard things to the towns where 20
most of his works of power were done, because they had
not been turned from their sins. "Unhappy are you, 21
Chorazin! Unhappy are you, Bethsaida! For if the
works of power which were done in you had been done
in Tyre and Sidon, they would have been turned from
their sins in days gone by, clothing themselves in hair-
cloth and putting dust on their heads. But I say to you, 22
It will be better for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judging,
than for you. And you, Capernaum, will you be lifted 23
up to heaven? you will go down into hell: for if the
works of power which were done in you had been done
in Sodom, it would have been here to this day. But I 24
say to you that it will be better for the land of Sodom
in the day of judging, than for you."

At that time Jesus made answer and said, "I give 25
praise to you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,
because you have kept these things secret from the wise
and the men of learning, and have made them clear to
little children. Yes, Father, for so it was pleasing in 26
your eyes. All things have been given to me by my 27
Father; and no one has knowledge of the Son, but the
Father; and no one has knowledge of the Father, but
the Son, and he to whom the Son will make it clear.

Come to me, all you who are full of care and weariness, 28
and I will give you rest. Take my yoke on you, and let 29
me be your teacher; for I am gentle and quiet of heart,
and you will have rest for your souls. For my yoke is 30
not hard, and the weight I put on you is small."

THE LAW OF THE SABBATH

12 At that time Jesus went through the fields on the 1
Sabbath day; and his disciples, being in need of
food, were taking the heads of grain. But the 2
Pharisees, when they saw it, said to him, "See, your
disciples do that which it is not right to do on the
Sabbath". But he said to them, "Have you no know- 3
ledge of what David did when he had need of food, and
those who were with him? how he went into the house 4
of God and took for food the holy bread which it was
not right for him or for those who were with him to
take, but only for the priests? Or is it not said in the 5
law, how the Sabbath is broken by the priests in the
Temple and they do no wrong? But I say to you that 6
a greater thing than the Temple is here. But if these 7
words had been in your minds, 'My desire is for mercy
and not for offerings,' you would not have been judging
those who have done no wrong. For the Son of man is 8
lord of the Sabbath."

And he went from there into their Synagogue: 9
and there was a man with a dead hand. And they put a 10
question to him, saying, "Is it right to make a man well
on the Sabbath day?" so that they might have something
against him. And he said to them, "Which of you, 11
having a sheep, if it gets into a hole on the Sabbath day,
will not put out a helping hand and get it back? Of how 12
much more value is a man than a sheep! For this reason
it is right to do good on the Sabbath day." Then said 13
he to the man, "Put out your hand". And he put it out,
and it was made as well as the other. But the Pharisees 14
went out and made designs against him, how they might

put him to death. And Jesus, having knowledge of this, went away from there, and a great number went after him; and he made them all well, ordering them not to give people word of him: so that what was said by Isaiah the prophet might come true,

15 16 17

See my servant, the man of my selection, 18
My loved one in whom my soul is well pleased:
I will put my Spirit on him,
And he will make my decision clear to the Gentiles.
His coming will not be with fighting or loud cries; 19
And his voice will not be lifted up in the streets.
The crushed stem will not be broken by him; 20
And the feebly burning light will he not put out,
Till he has made righteousness overcome all.
And in his name will the Gentiles put their hope. 21

Then they took to him one with an evil spirit, who was blind, and had no power of talking: and he made him well so that he had the power of talking and seeing. And all the people were surprised and said, "Is not this the son of David?" But the Pharisees, hearing of it, said, "This man only sends evil spirits out of men by Beelzebub, the ruler of evil spirits". And having knowledge of their thoughts he said to them, "Every kingdom having division in itself is made waste, and every town or house having division in itself will come to destruction. And if Satan sends out Satan, he makes war against himself; how then will he keep his kingdom? And if I by Beelzebub send evil spirits out of men, by whom do your sons send them out? So let them be your judges. But if I by the Spirit of God send out evil spirits, then is the kingdom of God come on you. Or how may one go into a strong man's house, and take his goods, if he does not first put cords round the strong man? and then he may take his goods. Whoever is not with me is against me; and he who does not take part with me in getting people together, is driving them away. So I say to you, Every sin and every evil word against God will

22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31

have forgiveness; but for evil words against the Spirit there will be no forgiveness. And whoever says a word 32
against the Son of man, will have forgiveness; but whoever says a word against the Holy Spirit, will not have forgiveness in this life, or in that which is to come.
Make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the 33
tree bad, and its fruit bad; for by its fruit you will get knowledge of the tree. You offspring of snakes, how are 34
you, being evil, able to say good things? because out of the heart's store come the words of the mouth. The 35
good man out of his good store gives good things; and the evil man out of his evil store gives evil things. And 36
I say to you that in the day when they are judged, men will have to give an account of every foolish word they have said. For by your words will your righteousness 37
be seen, and by your words you will be judged."

LOOKING FOR A SIGN

Then some of the scribes and Pharisees hearing this, 38
said to him, "Master, we are looking for a sign from you". But he, answering, said to them, "An evil and 39
false generation is looking for a sign; and no sign will be given to it but the sign of the prophet Jonah: for as 40
Jonah was three days and three nights in the stomach of the great fish, so will the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of 41
Nineveh will come up in the day of judging and give their decision against this generation: because they were turned from their sins at the preaching of Jonah; and now a greater than Jonah is here. The queen of the South 42
will come up in the day of judging and give her decision against this generation: for she came from the ends of the earth to give ear to the wisdom of Solomon; and now a greater than Solomon is here. But the unclean 43
spirit, when he is gone out of a man, goes through dry places looking for rest, and getting it not. Then he says, 44
'I will go back into my house from which I came out';

and when he comes, he sees that there is no one in it,
but that it has been made fair and clean. Then he goes 45
and takes with him seven other spirits worse than him-
self, and they go in and make it their living-place: and
the last condition of that man is worse than the first.
Even so will it be with this evil generation."

While he was still talking to the people, his mother 46
and his brothers came, desiring to have talk with him.
And one said to him, "See, your mother and your 47
brothers are outside, desiring to have talk with you".
But he, in answer, said to him who gave the news, "Who 48
is my mother and who are my brothers?" And he put 49
out his hand to his disciples and said, "See, my mother
and my brothers! For whoever does the pleasure of my 50
Father in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and
mother."

TEACHING BY THE SEASIDE

13 On that day Jesus went out of the house and was 1
seated by the seaside. And great numbers of 2
people came together to him, so that he got into
a boat; and the people took up their position by the sea.
And he gave them teaching in the form of a story, saying, 3
"A man went out to put seeds in the earth; and while 4
he put them in, some seeds were dropped by the wayside,
and the birds came and took them for food: and some 5
of the seed went among the stones where it had not
much earth, and straight away it came up because the
earth was not deep: and when the sun was high, it was 6
burned; and because it had no root it became dry and
dead. And some went among thorns, and the thorns 7
came up and it had no room for growth: and some, 8
falling on good earth, gave fruit, some a hundred, some
sixty, some thirty times as much. He who has ears, let 9
him give ear."

And the disciples came and said to him, "Why do 10
you say things to them in the form of stories?" And he 11
said to them in answer, "To you is given the knowledge

of the secrets of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. Because whoever has, to him will be given, 12
and he will have more; but from him who has not, even what he has will be taken away. For this reason I put 13
things into the form of stories; because they see without seeing, and give ear without hearing, and the sense is not clear to them. And for them the words of Isaiah 14
have come true,

Though you give ear, you will not get knowledge;
And seeing, you will see, but the sense will not be clear to you:
For the heart of this people has become fat 15
And their ears are slow in hearing
And their eyes are shut;
For fear that they might see with their eyes
And give hearing with their ears
And become wise in their hearts
And be turned again to me,
So that I might make them well.

But a blessing on your eyes, because they see; and on 16
your ears, because they are open. For truly I say to you 17
that prophets and upright men had a desire to see the things which you see, and saw them not; and to have knowledge of the words which have come to your ears, and they had it not. Give ear, then, to the story of the 18
man who put the seeds in the earth. When the word of 19
the kingdom comes to anyone, and the sense of it is not clear to him, then the Evil One comes, and quickly takes away that which was put in his heart. This is the seed which was dropped by the wayside. And that which 20
went on the stones, this is he who, hearing the word, straight away takes it with joy; but having no root in 21
himself, he goes on for a time; and when trouble comes, or pain because of the word, he quickly becomes full of doubts. And that which went among the thorns, this is 22
he who has the word; and the cares of this life, and the deceits of wealth, put a stop to the growth of the word

and it gives no fruit. And the seed which was put in 23
good earth, this is he who gives ear to the word, and
gets the sense of it; who gives fruit, some a hundred,
some sixty, some thirty times as much."

And he gave them another story, saying, "The king- 24
dom of heaven is like a man who put good seed in his
field: but while men were sleeping, one who had hate 25
for him came and put evil seeds among the grain, and
went away. But when the green stem came up and 26
gave fruit, the evil plants were seen among it. And the 27
servants of the master of the house came and said to
him, 'Sir, did you not put good seed in your field? how
then has it evil plants?' And he said, 'Someone has done 28
this in hate'. And the servants say to him, 'Is it your
pleasure that we go and take them up?' But he says, 29
'No, for fear that by chance while you take up the evil
plants, you may be rooting up the grain with them.
Let them come up together till the getting in of the 30
grain; and then I will say to the workers, Take up first
the evil plants, and put them together for burning: but
put the grain into my storehouse.'"

He put another story before them, saying, "The 31
kingdom of heaven is like a grain of *mustard*-seed, which
a man took and put in his field: which is smaller than 32
all seeds; but when it has come up, it is greater than the
plants, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of heaven
come and make their resting-places in its branches".

Another story he gave to them: "The kingdom of 33
heaven is like leaven, which a woman took, and put in
three measures of meal, till it was all leavened".

All these things Jesus said to the people in the form 34
of stories; and without a story he said nothing to them:
that it might come true which was said by the prophet, 35

Opening my mouth, I will give out stories;
I will give knowledge of things kept secret from before
all time.

Then he went away from the people, and went into the 36

house; and his disciples came to him, saying, "Make clear to us the story of the evil plants in the field". And he made answer and said, "He who puts the good 37
seed in the earth is the Son of man; and the field is the 38
world; and the good seed is the sons of the kingdom; and the evil seeds are the sons of the Evil One; and he 39
who put them in the earth is Satan; and the getting in of the grain is the end of the world; and those who get it in are the angels. As then the evil plants are got 40
together and burned with fire, so will it be in the end of the world. The Son of man will send out his angels, 41
and they will take out of his kingdom everything which is a cause of error, and all those who do wrong, and 42
will put them into the fire; there will be weeping and cries of sorrow. Then will the upright be shining as the 43
sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears, let him give ear.

"The kingdom of heaven is like a secret store of 44
wealth in a field which a man came across and put back again; and in his joy he goes and gives all he has, to get that field.

"Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a trader 45
searching for jewels. And having come across one jewel 46
of great price, he went and gave all he had in exchange for it.

"Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net, which 47
was put into the sea and took in every sort of fish: when 48
it was full, they took it up on the sands; and seated there they put the good into vessels, but the bad they put away. So will it be in the end of the world: the angels 49
will come and take out the bad from the good, and will 50
put them into the fire: there will be weeping and cries of sorrow.

"Are all these things now clear to you?" They say 51
to him, "Yes". And he said to them, "For this reason 52
every scribe who has become a disciple of the kingdom of heaven is like the owner of a house, who gives out from his store things new and old".

And when Jesus had come to the end of these stories 53
he went away from there. And coming into his country, 54
he gave them teaching in their Synagogue, so that they
were greatly surprised and said, "Where did this man
get this wisdom, and these works of power? Is not this 55
the wood-worker's son? is not his mother named Mary?
and his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas?
And his sisters, are they not all with us? From where, 56
then, has he all these things?" And they were bitter 57
against him. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is
nowhere without honour but in his country and among
his family". And the works of power which he did there 58
were small in number because they had no faith.

JOHN THE BAPTIST IS PUT TO DEATH

14 At that time news of Jesus came to Herod the king; 1
and he said to his servants, "This is John the 2
Baptist; he has come back from the dead, and so
these powers are working in him". For Herod had 3
taken John and put him in prison because of Herodias,
his brother Philip's wife. Because John had said to him, 4
"It is not right for you to have her". And he would 5
have put him to death, but for his fear of the people,
because in their eyes John was a prophet. But when 6
Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias was
dancing before them, and Herod was pleased with her.
So he gave her his word with an oath to let her have 7
whatever she might make request for. And she, at her 8
mother's suggestion, said, "Give me here on a plate the
head of John the Baptist". And the king was sad; but 9
because of his oaths and because of his guests, he gave
the order for it to be given to her; and he sent and had 10
John's head cut off in the prison. And his head was put 11
on a plate and given to the girl; and she took it to her
mother. And his disciples came, and took up his body 12
and put it in the earth; and they went and gave Jesus
news of what had taken place.

THE FIVE CAKES OF BREAD

Now when it came to the ears of Jesus, he went away 13
from there in a boat, to a waste place by himself: and
the people hearing of it, went after him on foot from the
towns. And he came out and saw a great number of 14
people, and he had pity on them, and made well those
of them who were ill. And when evening had come, the 15
disciples came to him, saying, "This place is waste land,
and the time is now past; send the people away so that
they may go into the towns and get themselves food".
But Jesus said to them, "There is no need for them 16
to go away; give them food yourselves". And they 17
say to him, "We have here but five cakes of bread
and two fishes". And he said, "Give them to me". 18
And he gave orders for the people to be seated on the 19
grass; and he took the five cakes of bread and the two
fishes, and looking up to heaven, he said words of blessing,
and made division of the food, and gave it to the disciples,
and the disciples gave it to the people. And they all 20
took of the food and had enough: and they took up twelve
baskets full of broken bits which were not used. And 21
those who had food were about five thousand men, in
addition to women and children.

WALKING ON THE SEA

And straight away he made the disciples get into the 22
boat and go before him to the other side, till he had sent
the people away. And after he had sent the people away, 23
he went up into the mountain by himself for prayer: and
when evening was come, he was there by himself. But 24
the boat was now in the middle of the sea, and was
troubled by the waves: for the wind was against them.
And in the fourth watch of the night he came to them, 25
walking on the sea. And when they saw him walking 26
on the sea, they were troubled, saying, "It is a spirit";
and they gave cries of fear. But straight away Jesus said 27
to them, "Take heart; it is I, have no fear". And Peter, 28

answering, said to him, "Lord, if it is you, give me the order to come to you on the water". And he said, 29
"Come". And Peter got out of the boat, and walking on the water, went to Jesus. But when he saw the wind, 30
he was in fear, and starting to go down, he gave a cry, saying, "Help, Lord". And straight away Jesus put out 31
his hand, and took a grip of him and said to him, "O man of little faith, why were you in doubt?" And when 32
they had got into the boat, the wind went down. And 33
those who were in the boat gave him worship, saying, "Truly you are the Son of God".

And when they had gone across, they came to land 34
at Gennesaret. And when the men of that place had 35
news of him, they sent into all the country round about, and took to him all who were ill; with the request that 36
they might only put their hands on the edge of his robe: and all those who did so were made well.

CLEAN AND UNCLEAN

15 THEN there came to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees 1
and scribes, saying, "Why do your disciples go 2
against the teaching of the fathers? for they take food with unwashed hands". And in answer he said to 3
them, "Why do you, yourselves, go against the word of God on account of the teaching which has been handed down to you? For God said, 'Give honour to your father 4
and mother': and, 'He who says evil of father or mother will be put to death'. But you say, 'If a man says to his 5
father or his mother, That by which you might have had profit from me is given to God; there is no need for 6
him to give honour to his father'. And you have made the word of God of no effect because of your teaching. You false ones, well did Isaiah say of you, 7

This people give me honour with their lips, 8
But their heart is far from me.
But their worship is to no purpose, 9
While they give as their teaching the rules of men."

And he got the people together, and said to them, "Give 10
ear, and let my words be clear to you: Not that which 11
goes into the mouth makes a man unclean, but that which
comes out of the mouth". Then the disciples came and 12
said to him, "Did you see that the Pharisees were
troubled when these words came to their ears?" But 13
he said in answer, "Every plant which my Father in
heaven has not put in the earth, will be taken up by the
roots. Let them be: they are blind guides. And if a 14
blind man is guiding a blind man, the two will go falling
into a hole together." Then Peter said to him, "Make 15
the story clear to us". And he said, "Are you, like 16
them, still without wisdom? Do you not see that what- 17
ever goes into the mouth goes on into the stomach, and
is sent out as waste? But the things which come out of 18
the mouth come from the heart; and they make a man
unclean. For out of the heart come evil thoughts, the 19
taking of life, broken faith between the married, unclean
desires of the flesh, taking of property, false witness,
bitter words: these are the things which make a man 20
unclean; but to take food with unwashed hands does not
make a man unclean."

And Jesus went away from there into the country of 21
Tyre and Sidon. And a woman of Canaan came out 22
from those parts, crying and saying, "Have pity on me,
O Lord, son of David; my daughter is greatly troubled
with an unclean spirit". But he gave her no answer. 23
And his disciples came and said to him, "Send her away,
for she is crying after us". But he made answer and 24
said, "I was sent only to the wandering sheep of the
house of Israel". But she came and gave him worship, 25
saying, "Help, Lord". And he made answer and said, 26
"It is not right to take the children's bread and give it
to the dogs". But she said, "Yes, Lord: but even the 27
dogs take the bits from under their masters' table".
Then Jesus answering said to her, "O woman, great is 28
your faith: let your desire be done". And her daughter
was made well from that hour.

And Jesus went from there and came to the sea of 29
Galilee; and he went up into the mountain, and took his
seat there. And there came to him great numbers of 30
people having with them those who were broken in
body, or blind, or without voice, or wounded, or ill in
any way, and a number of others; they put them down
at his feet and he made them well: so that the people 31
were full of wonder when they saw that those who had
no voice were talking, the feeble were made strong,
those whose bodies were broken had the power of
walking, and the blind were able to see: and they gave
glory to the God of Israel.

THE SEVEN CAKES OF BREAD

And Jesus got his disciples together, and said, "I have 32
pity for the people, because they have now been with
me three days and have no food: and I will not send
them away without food, or they will have no strength
for the journey". And the disciples say to him, "How 33
may we get enough bread in a waste place, to give food
to such a number of people?" And Jesus says to them, 34
"How much bread have you?" And they said, "Seven
cakes, and some small fishes". Then he gave an order 35
to the people to be seated on the earth; and he took the 36
seven cakes of bread and the fishes; and having given
praise, he gave the broken bread to the disciples, and
the disciples gave it to the people. And they all took 37
food, and had enough; and they took up of the broken
bits, seven baskets full. And there were four thousand 38
men who took food, together with women and children.
And when he had sent the people away, he got into the 39
boat, and came into the country of Magadan.

THE SIGN OF JONAH

16 AND the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and testing 1
him, made a request to him to give them a sign
from heaven. But in answer he said to them, "At 2
nightfall you say, 'The weather will be good, for the

sky is red'. And in the morning, 'The weather will be 3
bad today, for the sky is red and angry'. You are able
to see the face of heaven, but not the signs of the times.
An evil and false generation is searching after a sign; 4
and no sign will be given to it, but the sign of Jonah."
And he went away from them.

And when the disciples came to the other side they 5
had not taken thought to get bread. And Jesus said to 6
them, "Take care to have nothing to do with the leaven
of the Pharisees and Sadducees". And they were 7
reasoning among themselves, saying, "We took no
bread". And Jesus, seeing it, said, "O you of little 8
faith, why are you reasoning among yourselves, because
you have no bread? Do you still not see, or keep in 9
mind the five cakes of bread of the five thousand, and
the number of baskets you took up? Or the seven cakes 10
of bread of the four thousand, and the number of baskets
you took up? How is it that you do not see that I was 11
not talking to you about bread but about keeping away
from the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees?" Then 12
they saw that it was not the leaven of bread which he
had in mind, but the teaching of the Pharisees and
Sadducees.

THE ROCK AND THE CHURCH

Now when Jesus had come into the parts of Caesarea 13
Philippi, he said, questioning his disciples, "Who do
men say that the Son of man is?" And they said, "Some 14
say John the Baptist; some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah,
or one of the prophets". He says to them, "But who 15
do you say that I am?" And Simon Peter made answer 16
and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living
God". And Jesus made answer and said to him, "A 17
blessing on you, Simon Bar-jonah: because this know-
ledge has not come to you from flesh and blood, but
from my Father in heaven. And I say to you that you 18
are Peter, and on this rock will my church be based;

and the doors of hell will not overcome it. I will give 19
to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatever
is fixed by you on earth will be fixed in heaven: and
whatever you make free on earth will be made free in
heaven." Then he gave orders to the disciples to give 20
no man word that he was the Christ.

From that time Jesus went on to make clear to his 21
disciples, how he would have to go up to Jerusalem and
undergo much at the hands of those in authority and the
chief priests and scribes, and be put to death, and the
third day come again from the dead. And Peter pro- 22
testing said to him, "Be it far from you, Lord; it is
impossible that this will come about". But he, turning 23
to Peter, said, "Get out of my way, Satan: you are a
danger to me because your mind is not on the things of
God, but on the things of men". Then Jesus said to his 24
disciples, "If any man would come after me, let him
give up all, and take up his cross, and come after me.
Because whoever has a desire to keep his life safe will 25
have it taken from him; but whoever gives up his life
because of me will have it given back to him. For what 26
profit has a man, if he gets all the world with the loss
of his life? or what will a man give in exchange for his
life? For the Son of man will come in the glory of his 27
Father with his angels; and then he will give to every
man the reward of his works. Truly I say to you, There 28
are some of those here who will not have a taste of
death, till they see the Son of man coming in his king-
dom."

THE VOICE FROM THE CLOUD

17 AND after six days Jesus takes with him Peter, and 1
James, and John his brother, and makes them go
up with him into a high mountain by themselves.
And he was changed in form before them; and his face 2
was shining as the sun, and his clothing became white
as light. And Moses and Elijah came before their eyes, 3

talking with him. And Peter made answer and said to 4
Jesus, "Lord, it is good that we are here: if you will
let me, I will make here three tents, one for you, and
one for Moses, and one for Elijah". While he was still 5
talking, a bright cloud came over them: and a voice out
of the cloud, saying, "This is my dearly-loved Son with
whom I am well pleased; give ear to him". And at 6
these words the disciples went down on their faces in
great fear. And Jesus came and put his hand on them 7
and said, "Get up and have no fear". And lifting up 8
their eyes, they saw no one, but Jesus only.

And when they were coming down from tne mountain, 9
Jesus gave them orders, saying, "Let no man have word
of what you have seen, till the Son of man has come
again from the dead". And his disciples questioning 10
him, said, "Why, then, do the scribes say that Elijah
has to come first?" And in answer he said, "Elijah 11
truly has to come and put all things right: but I say to 12
you that Elijah has come, and they had no knowledge of
him, but did to him whatever they were pleased to do;
the same will the Son of man undergo at their hands".
Then the disciples saw that he was talking to them of 13
John the Baptist.

And when they came to the people, a man went down 14
on his knees to him, saying, "Lord have mercy on my 15
son: for he is off his head, and is in great pain; and
frequently he goes falling into the fire, and frequently
into the water. And I took him to your disciples, and 16
they were not able to make him well." And Jesus 17
answering, said, "O false and foolish generation, how
long will I be with you? how long will I put up with
you? let him come here to me". And Jesus gave orders 18
to the unclean spirit, and it went out of him: and the
boy was made well from that hour. Then the disciples 19
came to Jesus privately, and said, "Why were we not
able to send it out?" And he says to them, "Because 20
of your little faith: for truly I say to you, If you have
faith as a grain of *mustard*-seed, you will say to this

mountain, 'Be moved from this place to that'; and it will be moved; and nothing will be impossible to you".

And while they were going about in Galilee, Jesus 22
said to them, "The Son of man will be given up into the hands of men; and they will put him to death, and 23
the third day he will come again from the dead". And they were very sad.

And when they had come to Capernaum, those who 24
took the Temple tax came to Peter and said, "Does not your master make payment of the Temple tax?" He 25
says, "Yes". And when he came into the house, Jesus said to him, "What is your opinion, Simon? from whom do the kings of the earth get payment or tax? from their sons or from other people?" And when he said, "From 26
other people," Jesus said to him, "Then are the sons free. But, so that we may not be a cause of trouble to 27
them, go to the sea, and let down a hook, and take the first fish which comes up; and in his mouth you will see a bit of money: take that, and give it to them for me and you."

JESUS AND THE CHILDREN

18 In that hour the disciples came to Jesus, saying, "Who 1
is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" And he took 2
a little child, and put him in the middle of them, and 3
said, "Truly I say to you, If you do not have a change of heart and become as little children, you will not go into the kingdom of heaven. Whoever, then, will make 4
himself as low as this little child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoever gives honour 5
to one such little child in my name, gives honour to me: but whoever is a cause of trouble to one of these little 6
ones who have faith in me, it would be better for him to have a great stone fixed to his neck, and to come to his end in the deep sea. A curse is on the earth because 7
of trouble! for it is necessary for trouble to come; but unhappy is that man through whom the trouble comes.

And if your hand or your foot is a cause of trouble, let 8
it be cut off and put it away from you: it is better for
you to go into life with the loss of a hand or a foot, than
having two hands or two feet, to go into the eternal
fire. And if your eye is a cause of trouble to you, take 9
it out, and put it away from you: it is better for you to
go into life with one eye, than having two eyes, to go
into the hell of fire. Let it not seem to you that one of 10
these little ones is of no value; for I say to you that in
heaven their angels see at all times the face of my Father
in heaven. What would you say now? if a man has a 12
hundred sheep, and one of them has gone out of the way,
will he not let the ninety-nine be, and go to the moun-
tains in search of the wandering one? And if he comes 13
across it, truly I say to you, he has more joy over it
than over the ninety-nine which have not gone out of
the way. Even so it is not the pleasure of your Father 14
in heaven for one of these little ones to come to de-
struction.

"And if your brother does wrong to you, go, make 15
clear to him his error between you and him in private:
if he gives ear to you, you have got your brother back
again. But if he will not give ear to you, take with you 16
one or two more, that by the lips of two or three
witnesses every word may be made certain. And if he 17
will not give ear to them, let it come to the hearing of
the church: and if he will not give ear to the church,
let him be to you as a Gentile and a tax-farmer. Truly 18
I say to you, Whatever things are fixed by you on earth
will be fixed in heaven: and whatever you make free on
earth will be made free in heaven. Again, I say to you, 19
that if two of you are in agreement on earth about any-
thing for which they will make a request, it will be done
for them by my Father in heaven. For where two or three 20
are come together in my name, there am I among them."

Then Peter came and said to him, "Lord, what 21
number of times may my brother do wrong against me,
and I give him forgiveness? till seven times?" Jesus 22

says to him, "I say not to you, Till seven times; but, Till seventy times seven. For this reason the kingdom 23
of heaven is like a king, who went over his accounts with his servants. And at the start, one came to him 24
who was in his debt for ten thousand pounds. And 25
because he was not able to make payment, his lord gave orders for him, and his wife, and his sons and daughters, and all he had, to be given for money, and payment to be made. So the servant went down on his face and 26
gave him worship, saying, 'Lord, give me time to make payment, and I will give you all'. And the lord of that 27
servant, being moved with pity, let him go, and made him free of the debt. But that servant went out, and 28
meeting one of the other servants, who was in debt to him for one hundred pence, he took him by the throat, saying, 'Make payment of your debt'. So that servant 29
went down on his face requesting him and saying, 'Give me time and I will make payment to you'. And he 30
would not: but went and put him into prison, till he had made payment of the debt. So when the other servants 31
saw what was done, they were very sad, and came and gave word to their lord of what had been done. Then 32
his lord sent for him, and said, 'You evil servant; I made you free of all that debt, because of your request to me: was it not right for you to have mercy on the other 33
servant, even as I had mercy on you?' And his lord 34
was very angry, and put him in the hands of those who would give him punishment, till he made payment of all the debt. So will my Father in heaven do to you, 35
if you do not everyone, from your hearts, give forgiveness to his brother."

TEACHING ON MARRIED LIFE

19 AND it came about that after saying these words, Jesus 1
went away from Galilee, and came into the parts of Judaea on the other side of Jordan. And a great 2
number went after him; and he made them well there.

And certain Pharisees came to him, testing him, and 3
saying, "Is it right for a man to put away his wife for
every cause?" And he said, in answer, "Have you not 4
seen in the Writings, that he who made them at the
first made them male and female, and said, 'For this 5
cause will a man go away from his father and mother,
and be joined to his wife; and the two will become one
flesh'? So that they are no longer two, but one flesh. 6
Then let not that which has been joined by God be
parted by man." They say to him, "Why then did 7
Moses give orders that a husband might give her a
record of putting away and be free from her?" He says 8
to them, "Moses, because of your hard hearts, let you
put away your wives: but it has not been so from the
first. And I say to you, Whoever puts away his wife 9
for any other cause than the loss of her virtue, and takes
another, is untrue in married life: and he who takes her
as his wife when she is put away, is untrue in married
life." The disciples say to him, "If this is the position 10
of a man in relation to his wife, it is better not to be
married". But he said to them, "Not all men are able 11
to take in this saying, but only those to whom it is
given. For there are men who, from birth, were without 12
sex: and there are some who were made so by men:
and there are others who have made themselves so
for the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to take it,
let him take it."

"OF SUCH IS THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN"

Then some people took little children to him, so that 13
he might put his hands on them in blessing: and the
disciples said sharp words to them. But Jesus said, 14
"Let the little ones come to me, and do not keep them
away: for of such is the kingdom of heaven". And he 15
put his hands on them, and went away.

And one came to him and said, "Master, what good 16
thing have I to do, so that I may have eternal life?"

And he said to him, "Why are you questioning me 17
about what is good? One there is who is good: but if
you have a desire to go into life, keep the rules of the
law." He says to him, "Which?" And Jesus said, 18
"Do not put anyone to death, Do not be untrue in
married life, Do not take what is not yours, Do not give
false witness, Give honour to your father and your 19
mother: and, Have love for your neighbour as for your-
self". The young man says to him, "All these things 20
have I done: what more is there?" Jesus said to him, 21
"If you have a desire to be complete, go, get money
for your property, and give it to the poor, and you will
have wealth in heaven: and come after me". But hearing 22
these words the young man went away sorrowing: for
he had much property.

And Jesus said to his disciples, "Truly I say to you, 23
It is hard for a man with much money to go into the
kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, It is simpler 24
for a *camel* to go through a needle's eye, than for a man
with much money to go into the kingdom of God."
And the disciples, hearing this, were greatly surprised, 25
saying, "Who then may have salvation?" And Jesus, 26
looking at them, said, "With men this is not possible;
but with God all things are possible". Then Peter said 27
to him, "See, we have given up everything and have
come after you; what then will we have?" And Jesus 28
said to them, "Truly I say to you that in the time when
all things are made new, and the Son of man is seated in
his glory, you who have come after me will be seated
on twelve seats, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.
And everyone who has given up houses, or brothers, 29
or sisters, or father, or mother, or child, or land, for
my name, will be given a hundred times as much, and
have eternal life. But a great number who are first will 30
20 be last, and some who are last will be first. For the 1
kingdom of heaven is like the master of a house, who
went out early in the morning to get workers into his
vine-garden. And when he had made an agreement with 2

the workmen for a penny a day, he sent them into his vine-garden. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others in the market-place doing nothing; and he said to them, 'Go into the vine-garden with the others, and whatever is right I will give you'. And they went to work. Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did the same. And about the eleventh hour he went out and saw others doing nothing; and he says to them, 'Why are you here all the day doing nothing?' They say to him, 'Because no man has given us work'. He says to them, 'Go in with the rest, into the vine-garden'. And when evening came, the lord of the vine-garden said to his manager, 'Let the workers come, and give them their payment, from the last to the first'. And when those men came who had gone to work at the eleventh hour, they were given every man a penny. Then those who came first had the idea that they would get more; and they, like the rest, were given a penny. And when they got it, they made a protest against the master of the house, saying, 'These last have done only one hour's work, and you have made them equal to us, who have undergone the hard work of the day and the burning heat'. But he, in answer, said to one of them, 'Friend, I do you no wrong: did you not make an agreement with me for a penny? Take what is yours, and go away; it is my pleasure to give to this last, even as to you. Have I not the right to do as seems good to me with what is mine? or is your eye evil, because I am good?' So the last will be first, and the first last."

THE SON OF MAN WILL BE PUT TO DEATH

And when Jesus was going up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve disciples on one side, and said to them, "See, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be given into the hands of the chief priests and scribes; and they will give orders for him to be put to death, and will give

him up to the Gentiles to be made sport of, and to be whipped, and to be put to death on the cross: and the third day he will come back again from the dead".

Then the mother of the sons of Zebedee came to him 20
with her sons, giving him worship and making a request
of him. And he said to her, "What is your desire?" 21
She says to him, "Let my two sons be seated, the one
at your right hand, and the other at your left, in your
kingdom". But Jesus made answer and said, "You 22
have no idea what you are requesting. Are you able to
take of the cup which I am about to take?" They say 23
to him, "We are able". He says to them, "Truly, you
will take of my cup: but to be seated at my right hand
and at my left is not for me to give, but it is for those
for whom my Father has made it ready". And when it 24
came to the ears of the ten, they were angry with the
two brothers. But Jesus said to them, "You see that 25
the rulers of the Gentiles are lords over them, and their
great ones have authority over them. Let it not be so 26
among you: but if anyone has a desire to become great
among you, let him be your servant; and whoever has 27
a desire to be first among you, let him take the lowest
place: even as the Son of man came not to have servants, 28
but to be a servant, and to give his life for the salvation
of great numbers of men."

And when they were going out from Jericho, a great 29
number went after him. And two blind men seated by 30
the wayside, when they had the news that Jesus was
going by, gave a loud cry, saying, "Lord, son of David,
have mercy on us". And the people gave them orders 31
to be quiet; but they went on crying even louder, "Lord,
son of David, have mercy on us". And Jesus, stopping, 32
sent for them, and said, "What would you have me do
to you?" They say to him, "Lord, that our eyes may 33
be open". And Jesus, being moved with pity, put his 34
fingers on their eyes: and straight away they were able
to see, and went after him.

"GLORY TO THE SON OF DAVID"

21 AND when they were near Jerusalem, and had come 1
to Bethphage, to the mountain of Olives, Jesus
sent two disciples, saying to them, "Go into the 2
little town in front of you, and straight away you will
see an ass with a cord round her neck, and a young one
with her; let them loose and come with them to me.
And if anyone says anything to you, you will say, 'The 3
Lord has need of them'; and straight away he will send
them." Now this took place, so that these words of the 4
prophet might come true,

Say to the daughter of Zion, 5
See, your King comes to you,
Gentle and seated on an ass,
And on a young ass.

And the disciples went and did as Jesus had given them 6
orders, and got the ass and the young one, and put their 7
clothing on them, and he took his seat on it. And all 8
the people put their clothing down in the way; and
others got branches from the trees, and put them down
in the way. And those who went before him, and those 9
who came after, gave loud cries, saying, "Glory to the
son of David: A blessing on him who comes in the
name of the Lord; Glory in the highest". And when 10
he came into Jerusalem, all the town was moved, saying,
"Who is this?" And the people said, "This is the 11
prophet Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee".

TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE

And Jesus went into the Temple and sent out all who 12
were trading there, overturning the tables of the money-
changers and the seats of those trading in doves. And 13
he said to them, "It is in the Writings, 'My house is
to be named a house of prayer,' but you are making it
a hole of thieves". And the blind, and the broken in 14

body, came to him in the Temple, and he made them
well. But when the chief priests and the scribes saw the 15
works of power which he did, and the children crying
out in the Temple, "Glory to the son of David"; they
were angry and said to him, "Have you any idea what 16
these are saying?" And Jesus said to them, "Yes: have
you not seen in the Writings, 'From the lips of children
and babies at the breast you have made your praise
complete'?" And he went away from them, and went 17
out of the town to Bethany, and was there for the night.

Now in the morning while he was coming back to the 18
town, he had a desire for food. And seeing a *fig*-tree by 19
the wayside, he came to it, and saw nothing on it, but
leaves only; and he said to it, "Let there be no fruit
from you from this time forward for ever". And straight
away the fig-tree became dry and dead. And when the 20
disciples saw it, they were surprised, saying, "How did
the fig-tree become dry in so short a time?" And Jesus 21
in answer said to them, "Truly I say to you, If you have
faith, without doubting, not only may you do what has
been done to the fig-tree, but even if you say to this
mountain, 'Be taken up and put into the sea,' it will be
done. And all things, whatever you make request for 22
in prayer, having faith, you will get."

And when he had come into the Temple, the chief 23
priests and those in authority over the people came
to him while he was teaching, and said, "By what
authority do you do these things? and who gave you
this authority?" And Jesus said to them in answer, 24
"I will put one question to you, and if you give me the
answer, I will say by what authority I do these things.
The baptism of John, where did it come from? from 25
heaven or from men?" And they were reasoning among
themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven'; he will
say to us, 'Why then did you not have faith in him?'
But if we say, 'From men'; we are in fear of the people, 26
because all take John to be a prophet." And they made 27
answer and said, "We have no idea". Then he said to

them, "And I will not say to you by what authority
I do these things. But how does it seem to you? 28
A man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said,
'Son, go and do work today in the vine-garden'. And 29
he said in answer, 'I will not': but later, changing his
decision, he went. And he came to the second and said 30
the same. And he made answer, and said, 'I go, sir':
and went not. Which of the two did his father's 31
pleasure?" They say, "The first". Jesus said to them,
"Truly I say to you, that tax-farmers and loose women
are going into the kingdom of God before you. For 32
John came to you in the way of righteousness, and you
had no faith in him, but the tax-farmers and the loose
women had faith in him: and you, when you saw it, did
not even have regret for your sins, so as to have faith
in him.

"Give ear to another story. A master of a house made 33
a vine-garden, and put a wall round it, and put in a
crushing-machine for the wine, and made a tower, and
let it out to field workers, and went into another country.
And when the time for the fruit came near, he sent his 34
servants to the workmen, to get the fruit. And the 35
workmen made an attack on his servants, giving blows
to one, putting another to death, and stoning another.
Again, he sent other servants more in number than the 36
first: and they did the same to them. But after that he 37
sent his son to them, saying, 'They will have respect
for my son'. But when the workmen saw the son, they 38
said among themselves, 'This is he who will one day
be the owner of the property; come, let us put him to
death, and take his heritage'. And they took him and, 39
driving him out of the vine-garden, put him to death.
When, then, the lord of the vine-garden comes, what 40
will he do to those workmen?" They say to him, "He 41
will put those cruel men to a cruel death, and will let
out the vine-garden to other workmen, who will give
him the fruit when it is ready". Jesus says to them, 42
"Did you never see in the holy Writings,

The stone which the builders put on one side,
The same has been made the chief stone of the building:
This was the Lord's doing,
And it is a wonder in our eyes?

For this reason I say to you, The kingdom of God will 43
be taken away from you, and will be given to a nation
producing the fruits of it. Any man falling on this stone 44
will be broken, but he on whom it comes down will be
crushed to dust." And when his stories came to the ears 45
of the chief priests and the Pharisees, they saw that he
was talking of them. And though they had a desire to 46
take him, they were in fear of the people, because in
their eyes he was a prophet.

22 AND Jesus, talking to them again in stories, said: 1
"The kingdom of heaven is like a certain king, 2
who made a feast when his son was married, and 3
sent out his servants to get in the guests to the feast:
and they would not come. Again he sent out other 4
servants, with orders to say to the guests, 'See, I have
made ready my feast: my oxen and my fat beasts have
been put to death, and all things are ready: come to the
feast'. But they gave no attention, and went about their 5
business, one to his farm, another to his trade: and the 6
rest put violent hands on his servants, and did evil to
them, and put them to death. But the king was angry; 7
and he sent his armies, and those who had put his
servants to death he gave to destruction, burning down
their town with fire. Then he said to his servants, 'The 8
feast is ready but the guests were not good enough.
Go then to the cross-roads, and get all those whom you 9
see to come to the bride-feast.' And those servants went 10
out into the streets, and got together all those whom
they came across, bad and good: and the feast was full
of guests. But when the king came in to see the guests, 11
he saw there a man who had not on a guest's robe; and 12
he says to him, 'Friend, how came you in here not
having a guest's robe?' And he had nothing to say.

Then the king said to the servants, 'Put cords round his 13
hands and feet and put him out into the dark; there will
be weeping and cries of sorrow'. For out of all to whom 14
the good news has come, only a small number will get
salvation."

TO CAESAR OR TO GOD

Then the Pharisees went and had a meeting to see 15
how they might make use of his words to take him.
And they sent to him their disciples, with the Herodians, 16
saying, "Master, we see that you are true, and that you
are teaching the true way of God, and have no fear of
anyone: because you have no respect for a man's position.
Give us, then, your opinion of this: Is it right to give 17
tax to Caesar, or not?" But Jesus saw their trick and 18
said, "Oh false ones, why are you attempting to put
me in the wrong? Let me see the tax money." And 19
they gave him a penny. And he said to them, "Whose 20
is this image and name on it?" They say to him, 21
"Caesar's". Then he said to them, "Give to Caesar the
things which are Caesar's; and to God the things which
are God's". And hearing it, they were full of wonder, 22
and went away from him.

On the same day there came to him the Sadducees, 23
who say that there is no coming back from the dead:
and they put a question to him, saying, "Master, Moses 24
said, 'If a man, at the time of his death, has no children,
let his brother take his wife, and get a family for his
brother'; now there were among us seven brothers; 25
and the first was married and at his death, having no
seed, gave his wife to his brother; in the same way the 26
second and the third, up to the seventh. And last of all 27
the woman came to her end. When they come back from 28
the dead, then, whose wife will she be of the seven?
because they all had her." But Jesus said to them in 29
answer, "You are in error, not having knowledge of
the holy Writings, or of the power of God. For when 30
they come back from the dead there are no husbands

and wives, but they are as the angels in heaven. But as 31
for the future life, have you no knowledge of what was
said to you by God in the Writings: 'I am the God of 32
Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'?
God is not the God of the dead but of the living." And 33
the people hearing it were surprised at his teaching.

THE CHIEF RULE IN THE LAW

But the Pharisees, hearing how the mouths of the 34
Sadducees had been stopped, came together; and one 35
of them, a teacher of the law, put a question to him,
testing him, and saying, "Master, which is the chief 36
rule in the law?" And he said to him, "Have love for 37
the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your
soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest 38
rule. And a second like it is this, Have love for your 39
neighbour as for yourself. On these two rules all the 40
law and the prophets are based."

Now while the Pharisees were together, Jesus put a 41
question to them, saying, "What is your opinion of the 42
Christ? whose son is he?" They say to him, "The son
of David". He says to them, "How then does David 43
in the Spirit give him the name of Lord, saying,

The Lord said to my Lord, 44
Be seated at my right hand,
Till I put under your feet all those who are against you?

If David then gives him the name of Lord, how is he 45
his son?" And no one was able to give him an answer, 46
and so great was their fear of him, that from that day
no one put any more questions to him.

THE CURSE ON THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES

23 THEN Jesus said to the people and to his disciples: 1
"The scribes and the Pharisees have the authority 2
of Moses; all things, then, which they give you 3
orders to do, these do and keep: but do not take their

works as your example for they say and do not. They 4
make hard laws and put great weights on men's backs;
but they themselves will not put a finger to them. But 5
all their works they do so as to be seen by men: for
they make wide their *Phylacteries*, and the edges of their
robes, and the things desired by them are the first places 6
at feasts, and the chief seats in the Synagogues, and 7
words of respect in the market-places, and to be named
by men, Teacher. But you may not be named Teacher: 8
for one is your teacher, and you are all brothers. And 9
give no man the name of father on earth: because one
is your Father, who is in heaven. And you may not 10
be named guides: because one is your Guide, even
Christ. But let the greatest among you be your servant. 11
And whoever makes himself high will be made low, 12
and whoever makes himself low will be made high.

"But a curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false 13
ones! because you are shutting the kingdom of heaven
against men: for you do not go in yourselves, and those
who are going in, you keep back.

"A curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false ones! 15
for you go about land and sea to get one disciple, and
having him, you make him twice as much a son of hell
as yourselves.

"A curse is on you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever 16
takes an oath by the Temple, it is nothing; but whoever
takes an oath by the gold of the Temple, he is re-
sponsible'. You foolish ones and blind: which is greater, 17
the gold, or the Temple which makes the gold holy?
And, 'Whoever takes an oath by the altar, it is nothing; 18
but whoever takes an oath by the offering which is on
it, he is responsible'. You blind ones: which is greater, 19
the offering, or the altar which makes the offering holy?
He, then, who takes an oath by the altar, takes it by the 20
altar and by all things on it. And he who takes an oath 21
by the Temple, takes it by the Temple, and by him whose
house it is. And he who takes an oath by heaven, takes 22
it by the seat of God, and by him who is seated on it.

"A curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false ones! 23
for you make men give a tenth of all sorts of sweet-
smelling plants, but you give no thought to the more
important things of the law, righteousness, and mercy,
and faith; and it was right for you to do these, but not
to let the others go undone. You blind guides, who take 24
out a fly from your drink, but make no trouble over a
camel.

"A curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false ones! 25
for you make clean the outside of the cup and of the
plate, but inside they are full of violent behaviour and
uncontrolled desire. You blind Pharisee, first make clean 26
the inside of the cup and of the plate, so that the outside
may become equally clean.

"A curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false ones! 27
for you are like the resting-places of the dead, which are
made white, and seem beautiful on the outside, but
inside are full of dead men's bones and of all unclean
things. Even so you seem to men to be full of righteous- 28
ness, but inside you are all false and full of wrong-
doing.

"A curse is on you, scribes and Pharisees, false ones! 29
because you put up buildings for housing the dead bodies
of the prophets, and make fair the last resting-places of
good men, and say, 'If we had been living in the days 30
of our fathers, we would not have taken part with them
in the blood of the prophets'. So that you are witnesses 31
against yourselves that you are the sons of those who
put the prophets to death. Make full, then, the measure 32
of your fathers. You snakes, offspring of snakes, how 33
will you be kept from the punishment of hell? For this 34
reason, I send you prophets, and wise men, and scribes:
some of them you will put to death and put on the cross,
and to some of them you will give blows in your
Synagogues, driving them from town to town; so that 35
on you may come all the blood of the upright on the
earth, from the blood of upright Abel to the blood of
Zachariah son of Barachiah, whom you put to death

between the Temple and the altar. Truly, I say to you, 36
All these things will come on this generation.

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, putting to death the prophets, 37
and stoning those who are sent to her! Again and again
would I have taken your children to myself as a bird takes
her young ones under her wings, and you would not! See, 38
your house is made waste. For I say to you, You will 39
not see me from this time till you say, 'A blessing on
him who comes in the name of the Lord'."

ON THE MOUNTAIN OF OLIVES

24 AND Jesus went out of the Temple, and on the way 1
his disciples came to him, pointing out the buildings
of the Temple. But he, answering, said to them, 2
"See you not all these things? truly I say to you that
here there will not be one stone resting on another,
which will not be pulled down".

And while he was seated on the mountain of Olives, 3
the disciples came to him privately, saying, "Make clear
to us, when will these things be? and what will be the
sign of your coming and of the end of the world?" And 4
Jesus said to them in answer, "Take care that you are
not tricked. For people will come in my name, saying, 5
'I am the Christ'; and a number will be turned from the
true way through them. And news will come to you of 6
wars and talk of wars: do not be troubled: for these
things have to be; but it is still not the end. For nation 7
will be moved against nation, and kingdom against
kingdom, and men will be without food, and the earth
will be shaking in different places; but all these things 8
are the first of the troubles. Then they will be cruel to 9
you, and will put you to death: and you will be hated by
all nations because of my name. And numbers of people 10
will be turned from the right way and will give one
another up, and have hate for one another. And a 11
number of false prophets will come, causing error. And 12
because wrongdoing will be increased, the love of most

people will become cold. But he who goes through to 13
the end will get salvation. And this good news of the 14
kingdom will be given through all the world for a witness
to all nations; and then the end will come.

"When, then, you see in the holy place the unclean 15
thing which makes destruction, of which word was given
by Daniel the prophet" (let this be clear to the reader),
"then let those who are in Judaea go in flight to the 16
mountains: let not him who is on the house-top go down 17
to take anything out of his house: and let not him who 18
is in the field go back to get his coat. But it will be hard 19
for women who are with child and for those with babies
at the breast in those days. And say a prayer that your 20
flight may not be in the winter, or on a Sabbath.
Because in those days there will be great sorrow, such 21
as there has not been from the start of the world till
now, or ever will be. And if those days had not been 22
made short there would have been no salvation for any,
but because of the saints those days will be made short.
Then if any man says to you, 'See, here is the Christ,' 23
or, 'Here'; do not put faith in him; for there will come 24
up false Christs, and false prophets, who will do great
signs and wonders; so that if possible even the saints
might be tricked. See, I have made it clear to you before 25
it comes about. If, then, they say to you, 'See, he is in 26
the waste land'; go not out: 'See, he is in the inner
rooms'; put no faith in it. Because as in a thunderstorm 27
the bright light coming from the east is seen even in the
west; so will be the coming of the Son of man. Wherever 28
the dead body is, there will the eagles come together.

"But straight away, after the trouble of those days, the 29
sun will be made dark and the moon will not give her
light and the stars will come down from heaven and the
powers of heaven will be moved: and then the sign of 30
the Son of man will be seen in heaven: and then all the
nations of the earth will have sorrow, and they will see
the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with
power and great glory. And he will send out his angels 31

with a great sound of a horn, and they will get his saints together from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

"Now take an example from the *fig*-tree: when her 32
branch has become soft, and puts out its leaves, you are certain that the summer is near; even so, when you see 33
all these things, you may be certain that he is near, even at the doors. Truly I say to you, This generation will 34
not come to an end till all these things are complete. Heaven and earth will come to an end, but my words 35
will not come to an end. But of that day and hour no 36
one has knowledge, not even the angels in heaven, or the Son, but the Father only. And as were the days of 37
Noah, so will be the coming of the Son of man. Because 38
as in those days before the overflowing of the waters, they were feasting, and taking wives and getting married, till the day when Noah went into the ark, and they had 39
no care till the waters came, and took them all away; so will be the coming of the Son of man. Then two men 40
will be in the field; one is taken, and one let go; two 41
women will be crushing grain; one is taken, and one let go. Be watching, then: for you have no knowledge 42
on what day your Lord will come. But be certain of this, 43
that if the master of the house had had knowledge of the time when the thief was coming, he would have been watching, and would not have let his house be broken into. Be ready, then: for at a time which you have no 44
thought of the Son of man will come. Who is the true 45
and wise servant, whom his lord has put over those in his house, to give them their food at the right time? A blessing on that servant, who will be doing so when 46
his lord comes. Truly, I say to you, he will put him over 47
all he has. But if that evil servant says in his heart, 'My 48
lord is a long time in coming'; and is cruel to the other 49
servants, taking his pleasure with those who are overcome with wine; the lord of that servant will come in 50
a day when he is not looking for him, and in an hour of which he has no knowledge, and will have him cut in 51

two, and will give him a part in the fate of the false ones: there will be weeping and cries of sorrow."

25 "THEN the kingdom of heaven will be like ten young women, the friends of the bride, who took their lights, and went out with the purpose of meeting the husband. And five of them were foolish, and five were wise. For the foolish, when they took their lights, took no oil with them. But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lights. Now the husband was a long time in coming, and they all went to sleep. But in the middle of the night there is a cry, 'The husband comes! Go out to him.' Then all those young women got up, and made ready their lights. And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us of your oil; for our lights are going out'. But the wise made answer, saying, 'There may not be enough for us and you; it would be better for you to go to the traders, and get oil for yourselves'. And while they went to get oil, the master came; and those who were ready went in with him to the feast: and the door was shut. After that the others came, saying, 'Lord, Lord, let us in'. But he made answer and said, 'Truly I say to you, I have no knowledge of you'. Keep watch, then, because you are not certain of the day or of the hour.

"For it is as when a man, about to take a journey, got his servants together, and gave them his property. And to one he gave five pounds, to another two, to another one; to everyone as he was able; and he went on his journey. Straight away he who had been given the five pounds went and did trade with them, and made five more pounds. In the same way he who had been given the two got two more. But he who was given the one went away and put it in a hole in the earth, and kept his lord's money in a secret place. Now after a long time the lord of those servants comes, and makes up his account with them. And he who had the five pounds came with his other five pounds, saying, 'Lord, you gave

into my care five pounds: see, I have got five more'.
His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and true servant: 21
you have been true in a small thing, I will give you
control over great things: take your part in the joy of
your lord'. And he who had the two pounds came and 22
said, 'Lord, you gave into my care two pounds: see,
I have got two more'. His lord said to him, 'Well done, 23
good and true servant: you have been true in a small
thing, I will give you control over great things: take
your part in the joy of your lord'. And he who had had 24
the one pound came and said, 'Lord, I had knowledge
that you are a hard man, getting in grain where you have
not put seed, and making profits for which you have
done no work: and I was in fear, and went away, and 25
put your pound in the earth: here is what is yours'.
But his lord in answer said to him, 'You are a bad and 26
unready servant; if you had knowledge that I get in
grain where I did not put seed, and make profits for
which I have done no work, why, then, did you not put 27
my money in the bank, and at my coming I would have
got back what is mine with interest?' 'Take away, then, 28
his pound and give it to him who has the ten pounds.
For to everyone who has will be given, and he will have 29
more: but from him who has not, even what he has will
be taken away. And put out the servant who is of no 30
profit into the outer dark: there will be weeping and
cries of pain.'

"But when the Son of man comes in his glory, and 31
all the angels with him, then will he be seated in his
glory: and before him all the nations will come together; 32
and they will be parted one from another, as the sheep
are parted from the goats by the keeper. And he will 33
put the sheep on his right, but the goats on the left.
Then will the King say to those on his right, 'Come, 34
you who have the blessing of my Father, into the king-
dom made ready for you before the world was: for I was 35
in need of food, and you gave it to me: I was in need of
drink, and you gave it to me: I was wandering, and you

took me in; I had no clothing, and you gave it to me: 36
when I was ill, or in prison, you came to me'. Then will 37
the upright make answer to him, saying, 'Lord, when
did we see you in need of food, and give it to you? or
in need of drink, and give it to you? And when did we 38
see you wandering, and take you in? or without clothing,
and give it to you? And when did we see you ill, or in 39
prison, and come to you?' And the King will make 40
answer and say to them, 'Truly I say to you, Because
you did it to the least of these my brothers, you did it
to me'. Then will he say to those on the left, 'Go from 41
me, you cursed ones, into the eternal fire which is ready
for the Evil One and his angels: for I was in need of 42
food, and you gave it not to me; I was in need of drink,
and you gave it not to me: I was wandering, and you 43
took me not in; without clothing, and you gave me no
clothing; ill, and in prison, and you came not to me'.
Then will they make answer, saying, 'Lord, when did 44
we see you in need of food, or drink, or wandering, or
without clothing, or ill, or in prison, and did not take
care of you?' Then will he make answer to them, saying, 45
'Truly I say to you, Because you did it not to the least
of these, you did it not to me'. And these will go away 46
into eternal punishment; but the upright into eternal
life."

THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER

26 AND when Jesus had come to the end of all these 1
words, he said to his disciples, "After two days 2
is the Passover, and the Son of man will be given
up to the death of the cross". Then the chief priests, 3
and the rulers of the people came together in the house
of the high priest, who was named Caiaphas. And they 4
made designs together to take Jesus by some trick, and
put him to death. But they said, "Not while the feast 5
is going on, for fear of trouble among the people".

Now when Jesus was in Bethany in the house of Simon 6
the leper, there came to him a woman having a bottle 7

of perfume of great price, and she put the perfume on his head when he was seated at table. But when the 8
disciples saw it, they were angry, saying, "To what purpose is this waste? For we might have got much 9
money for this and given it to the poor." But Jesus 10
seeing it said to them, "Why are you troubling the woman? she has done a kind act to me. For the poor 11
you have ever with you, but me you have not for ever. For in putting this perfume on my body, she did it to 12
make me ready for my last resting-place. Truly I say to 13
you, Wherever this good news goes out in all the world, what this woman has done will be talked of in memory of her."

Then one of the twelve, who was named Judas Iscariot, 14
went to the chief priests and said, "What will you give 15
me, if I give him up to you?" And the price was fixed at thirty bits of silver. And from that time he was 16
watching for a chance to give him into their hands.

Now on the first day of unleavened bread the disciples 17
came to Jesus, saying, "Where are we to make ready for you to take the Passover meal?" And he said to 18
them, "Go into the town to such a man, and say to him, 'The Master says, My time is near: I will keep the Passover at your house with my disciples'". And the 19
disciples did as Jesus had said to them; and they made ready the Passover. Now when evening was come, he 20
was seated at table with the twelve disciples; and while 21
they were taking food, he said, "Truly I say to you that one of you will be false to me". And they were very 22
sad, and said to him, one by one, "Is it I, Lord?" And 23
he made answer and said, "He who takes food from the plate with me, the same will be false to me. The Son of 24
man goes, even as the Writings say of him: but a curse is on that man through whom the Son of man is given up; it would have been well for that man if he had never come into the world." And Judas, who was false to him, 25
made answer and said, "Is it I, Master?" He says to him, "Yes". And when they were taking food, Jesus 26

took bread, and after blessing it, he gave the broken bread to the disciples, and said, "Take it; this is my body". And he took a cup, and having given praise, he gave it to them, saying, "Take of it, all of you, for this is my blood of the testament, which is given for men for the forgiveness of sins. But I say to you that from now I will not take of this fruit of the vine, till that day when I take it new with you in my Father's kingdom."

And after a song of praise to God, they went out to the mountain of Olives.

Then said Jesus to them, "All of you will be turned away from me this night: for it is said in the Writings, 'I will put to death the keeper of the sheep, and the sheep of the flock will be put to flight'. But after I am come back from the dead, I will go before you into Galilee." But Peter made answer and said to him, "Though all may be turned away from you, I will never be turned away". Jesus said to him, "Truly I say to you that this night, before the hour of the *cock's* cry, you will say three times that you have no knowledge of me". Peter says to him, "Even if I am put to death with you, I will not be false to you". So said all the disciples.

GETHSEMANE

Then comes Jesus with them to a place named Gethsemane, and says to his disciples, "Be seated here, while I go over there for prayer". And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and became sad and very troubled. Then says he to them, "My soul is very sad, even to death: keep watch with me here". And he went forward a little, and falling down on his face in prayer, he said, "O my Father, if it is possible, let this cup go from me; but let not my pleasure, but yours be done". And he comes to the disciples, and sees that they are sleeping, and says to Peter, "What, were you not able to keep watch with me one hour? Keep watch with prayer, so that you may not be put to the test: the

spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is feeble." Again, a 42
second time he went away, and said in prayer, "O my
Father, if this may not go from me without my taking
it, let your pleasure be done". And he came again and 43
saw them sleeping, for their eyes were tired. And he 44
went away from them again, and a third time said the
same prayer. Then he comes to the disciples, and says 45
to them, "Go on sleeping now, and take your rest: for
the hour is come, and the Son of man is given into the
hands of evil men. Up, let us be going: see, he who 46
gives me up is near."

JUDAS GIVES A SIGN

And while he was still talking, Judas, one of the 47
twelve, came, and with him a band, armed with swords
and sticks, from the chief priests and those in authority
over the people. Now the false one had given them a 48
sign, saying, "The one to whom I give a kiss, that is
he: take him". And straight away he came to Jesus, 49
and said, "Master," and gave him a kiss. And Jesus 50
said to him, "Friend, do that for which you have come".
Then they came and put hands on Jesus, and took him.
And one of those who were with Jesus put out his hand, 51
and took out his sword and gave the servant of the high
priest a blow, cutting off his ear. Then says Jesus to 52
him, "Put up your sword again into its place: for all
those who take the sword will come to death by the
sword. Does it not seem possible to you that if I make 53
request to my Father, he will even now send me an army
of angels? But how then would the Writings come true, 54
which say that so it has to be?" In that hour said Jesus 55
to the people, "Have you come out as against a thief
with swords and sticks to take me? I was teaching every
day in the Temple and you took me not. But all this 56
has taken place so that the writings of the prophets
might come true." Then all his disciples went away
from him, and took flight.

THE SANHEDRIN

And those who had made Jesus prisoner took him 57
away to the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where
the scribes and those in authority over the people had
come together. But Peter went after him at a distance, 58
to the house of the high priest, and went in and took his
seat with the servants, to see the end. Now the chief 59
priests and all the Sanhedrin were looking for false
witness against Jesus, so that they might put him to
death; and they were not able to get it, though a 60
number of false witnesses came. But later there came 61
two, who said, "This man said, 'I am able to give the
Temple to destruction, and to put it up again in three
days'". And the high priest got up and said to him, 62
"Have you no answer? what is it which these say against
you?" But Jesus said not a word. And the high priest 63
said to him, "I put you on oath, by the living God, that
you will say to us if you are the Christ, the Son of God".
Jesus says to him, "You have said: but I say to you, 64
From now you will see the Son of man seated at the
right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of
heaven". Then the high priest, violently parting his 65
robes, said, "He has said evil against God: what more
need have we of witnesses? for now his words against
God have come to your ears: what is your opinion?" 66
They made answer and said, "It is right for him to be
put to death". Then they put shame on him, and were 67
cruel to him: and some gave him blows, saying, "Be a 68
prophet, O Christ, and say who gave you a blow!"

Now Peter was seated in the open square outside the 69
house: and a servant-girl came to him, saying, "You
were with Jesus the Galilaean". But he said before 70
them all that it was false, saying, "I have no knowledge
of what you say". And when he had gone out into the 71
doorway, another saw him and says to those who were
there, "This man was with Jesus the Nazarene". And 72
again he said with an oath, "I have no knowledge of

the man". And after a little time those who were near 73
came and said to Peter, "Truly you are one of them;
because your talk is witness against you". Then with 74
curses and oaths he said, "I have no knowledge of the
man". And straight away there came the cry of a cock.
And the word of Jesus came back to Peter, when he said, 75
"Before the hour of the cock's cry, you will say three
times that you have no knowledge of me". And he went
out, weeping bitterly.

CHRIST BEFORE PILATE

27 Now when it was morning, all the chief priests and 1
those in authority took thought together with
the purpose of putting Jesus to death. And they 2
put cords on him and took him away, and gave him up
to Pilate the ruler.

Then Judas, who was false to him, seeing that he 3
was to be put to death, in his regret took back the thirty
bits of silver to the chief priests and those in authority,
saying, "I have done wrong in giving into your hands 4
an upright man". But they said, "What is that to us?
it is your business". And he put down the silver in the 5
Temple, and went out; and put himself to death by
hanging. And the chief priests took the silver, and said, 6
"It is not right to put it in the Temple store for it is the
price of blood". And they made a decision to get with 7
the silver the potter's field, as a place for the dead of
other countries. For this cause that field was named, 8
The field of blood, to this day. Then came true that 9
which was said by Jeremiah the prophet, "And they
took the thirty bits of silver, the price of him who was
valued by the children of Israel; and they gave them for 10
the potter's field, as I had word from the Lord".

BARABBAS OR JESUS?

And Jesus was before the ruler, who put a question 11
to him, "Are you the King of the Jews?" And Jesus

said to him, "You say so". But when the chief priests 12
and those in authority made statements against him, he
gave no answer. Then says Pilate to him, "Do you give 13
no attention to what their witnesses say against you?"
And he gave him no answer, not even a word: so that 14
the ruler was greatly surprised. Now at the feast it was 15
the way for the ruler to let free to the people one
prisoner, at their selection. And they had then an im- 16
portant prisoner, whose name was Barabbas. So when 17
they came together, Pilate said to them, "Whom will
you have? Barabbas, or Jesus who is named Christ?"
For he saw that for envy they had given him up. 18
And while he was on the judge's seat, his wife sent to 19
him, saying, "Have nothing to do with that upright
man, for I have had much trouble this day in a dream
because of him". Now the chief priests and those in 20
authority got the people to make request for Barabbas,
and for Jesus to be put to death. But the ruler made 21
answer and said to them, "Which of the two is it your
pleasure that I let go free?" And they said, "Barabbas".
Pilate says to them, "What, then, am I to do with Jesus 22
who is named Christ?" They all say, "Let him be put
to death on the cross". And he said, "Why, what evil 23
has he done?" But they gave loud cries, saying, "To
the cross with him!" So when Pilate saw that he was 24
able to do nothing, but that trouble was working up,
he took water, and washing his hands before the people,
said, "The blood of this upright man is not on my hands:
you are responsible". And all the people made answer 25
and said, "Let his blood be on us, and on our children".
Then he let Barabbas go free: but after having Jesus 26
whipped, he gave him up to be put to death on the cross.

JESUS PUT TO DEATH ON THE CROSS

Then the ruler's armed men took Jesus into the open 27
square, and got all their band together. And they took 28
off his clothing, and put on him a red robe. And they 29

made a crown of thorns and put it on his head, and a rod in his right hand, and they went down on their knees before him, and made sport of him, saying, "Long life to the King of the Jews". And they put shame on him, 30
and gave him blows on the head with the rod. And when 31
they had made sport of him, they took the robe off him, and put his clothing on him, and took him away to put him on the cross.

And while they were coming out, they saw a man of 32
Cyrene, Simon by name, and they made him go with them, so that he might take up his cross. And when they 33
came to the place named Golgotha, that is to say, Dead Man's Head, they gave him wine mixed with bitter 34
drink: and after tasting it, he took no more. And when 35
they had put him on the cross, they made division of his clothing among them by the decision of chance. And 36
they were seated there watching him. And they put up 37
over his head the statement of his crime in writing,
THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.
Then two thieves were put on crosses with him, one on 38
the right and one on the left. And those who went by 39
said bitter words to him, shaking their heads, and saying,
"You who would give the Temple to destruction, and 40
put it up again in three days, get yourself free: if you are the Son of God, come down from the cross". In the 41
same way, the chief priests, making sport of him, with the scribes and those in authority, said, "A saviour of 42
others, he has no salvation for himself. If he is the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will have faith in him. He put his faith in God; let 43
God be his saviour now, if he will have him; for he said, 'I am the Son of God'." And the thieves who were on 44
the crosses said evil words to him.

Now from the sixth hour it was dark over all the land 45
till the ninth hour. And about the ninth hour Jesus gave 46
a loud cry, saying, "*Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?*" that is, "My God, my God, why are you turned away from me?" And some of those who were near by, hearing it, 47

said, "This man is crying to Elijah". And straight 48
away one of them went quickly, and took a sponge, and
made it full of bitter wine, and put it on a rod and gave
him drink. And the rest said, "Let him be; let us see 49
if Elijah will come to his help". And Jesus gave another 50
loud cry, and his life went from him. And the curtain of 51
the Temple was parted in two from end to end, and
there was an earth-shock; and the rocks were broken;
and the resting-places of the dead came open; and the 52
bodies of a number of sleeping saints came to life; and 53
coming out of their resting-places, after he had come
again from the dead they went into the holy town and
were seen by a number of people. Now the captain, and 54
those who were with him watching Jesus, when they saw
the earth-shock, and the things which were done, were
in great fear and said, "Truly this was the Son of God".
And a number of women were there, watching from a 55
distance, who had come with Jesus from Galilee, waiting
on his needs. Among whom was Mary Magdalene, and 56
Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of
the sons of Zebedee.

THE BODY OF JESUS PUT TO REST

And in the evening, there came a man of wealth from 57
Arimathaea, Joseph by name, who was a disciple of
Jesus: this man went in to Pilate, and made a request 58
for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate gave orders for it to
be given to him. And Joseph took the body, folding it 59
in clean linen, and put it in the resting-place which had 60
been cut out of the rock for himself; and after rolling a
great stone to the door of it he went away. And Mary 61
Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, seated by
the place of the dead.

Now on the day after the getting ready of the Pass- 62
over, the chief priests and Pharisees came together to
Pilate, saying, "Sir, we have in mind how that false 63
man said, while he was still living, 'After three days

I will come again from the dead'. Give orders, then, 64
that the place where his body is may be made safe till
the third day, for fear that his disciples come and take
him away secretly, and say to the people, 'He has come
back from the dead': and the last error will be worse
than the first." Pilate said to them, "You have watch- 65
men; go and make it as safe as you are able". So they 66
went, and made safe the place where his body was,
putting a stamp on the stone, and the watchmen were
with them.

THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK

28 Now late on the Sabbath, when the dawn of the 1
first day of the week was near, Mary Magdalene
and the other Mary came to see the place where
his body was. And there was a great earth-shock; for 2
an angel of the Lord came down from heaven, and rolling
back the stone, took his seat on it. His form was shining 3
like the light, and his clothing was white as snow: and 4
for fear of him the watchmen were shaking, and became
as dead men. And the angel said to the women, "Have 5
no fear: for I see that you are searching for Jesus, who
was put to death on the cross. He is not here; for he 6
has come to life again, even as he said. Come, see the
Lord's resting-place. And go quickly and give his 7
disciples the news that he has come back from the dead,
and is going before you into Galilee; there you will see
him, as I have said to you." And they went away 8
quickly, with fear and great joy, to give his disciples the
news. And on the way, Jesus came to them, saying, 9
"Be glad". And they came and put their hands on his
feet, and gave him worship. Then said Jesus to them, 10
"Have no fear: go and give word to my brothers to go
into Galilee, and there they will see me".

Now, while they were going, some of the watchmen 11
came into the town and gave news to the chief priests
of all the things which had taken place. And when they 12

had come together with those in authority, and had made
their decision, they gave much money to the watchmen,
saying, "Say, 'His disciples came by night and took him 13
away secretly while we were sleeping'. And if this 14
comes to the ruler's ears, we will see that he does not
make you responsible." So they took the money, and 15
did as they had been ordered: and this account has been
current among the Jews till the present time.

But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the 16
mountain where Jesus had given them orders to go.
And when they saw him, they gave him worship: but 17
some were in doubt. And Jesus came to them and said, 18
"All authority has been given to me in heaven and on
earth. Go then, and make disciples of all the nations, 19
giving them baptism in the name of the Father and of
the Son and of the Holy Spirit: teaching them to keep 20
all the rules which I have given you: and see, I am ever
with you, even to the end of the world."

ST MARK

1 The first words of the good news of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

THE PREACHING OF JOHN

EVEN as it is said in the book of Isaiah the prophet,

2

See, I send my servant before your face,
Who will make ready your way;
The voice of one crying in the waste land,
'Make ready the way of the Lord,
Make his roads straight'.

3

John came, and gave baptism in the waste land, preaching baptism as a sign of forgiveness of sin for those whose hearts were changed. And there went out to him all the people of Judaea, and all those of Jerusalem, and they were given baptism by him in the river Jordan, saying that they were sinners. And John was clothed in *camel's* hair, with a leather band about him; and his food was locusts and honey. And he said to them all, "There is one coming after me who is greater than I, whose shoes I am not good enough to undo. I have given you baptism with water, but he will give you baptism with the Holy Spirit."

4 5 6 7 8

JESUS GIVEN BAPTISM

And it came about in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was given baptism by John in the Jordan. And straight away coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opening and the Spirit coming down on him as a dove: and a voice came out of heaven, "You are my dearly-loved Son, with whom I am well pleased".

9 10 11

And straight away the Spirit sent him out into the

12

waste land. And he was in the waste land for forty days, 13
being tested by Satan; and he was with the beasts; and
the angels took care of him.

Now after John had been put in prison, Jesus came 14
into Galilee, preaching the good news of God, and 15
saying, "The time has come, and the kingdom of God
is near: let your hearts be turned from sin and have faith
in the good news".

And going by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and 16
Andrew, the brother of Simon, putting a net into the sea:
for they were fishermen. And Jesus said to them, "Come 17
after me, and I will make you fishers of men". And they 18
went straight from their nets, and came after him. And 19
going on a little farther, he saw James, the son of
Zebedee, and John his brother, who were in their boat
stitching up their nets. And he said, "Come after me": 20
and they went away from their father Zebedee who was
in the boat with the servants and came after him.

TEACHING IN CAPERNAUM

And they came to Capernaum; and on the Sabbath he 21
went into the Synagogue and gave teaching. And they 22
were full of wonder at his teaching, because he gave it
as one having authority, and not like the scribes. And 23
there was in their Synagogue a man with an unclean
spirit; and he gave a cry, saying, "What have we to do 24
with you, Jesus of Nazareth? have you come to put an
end to us? I see well who you are, the Holy One of
God." And Jesus said to him sharply, "Be quiet, and 25
come out of him". And the unclean spirit, shaking him 26
violently, and crying with a loud voice, came out of him.
And they were all greatly surprised, so that they put 27
questions to one another, saying, "What is this? a new
teaching! with authority he gives orders even to the
unclean spirits, and they do what he says". And news 28
of him went out quickly everywhere into all parts of
Galilee round about.

And when they came out of the Synagogue, they went 29
into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and
John. Now Simon's wife's mother was ill, with a burning 30
heat; and they gave him word of her: and he came and 31
took her by the hand, lifting her up; and she became
well, and took care of their needs.

And in the evening, at sundown, they took to him all 32
who were diseased, and those who had evil spirits. And 33
all the town had come together at the door. And a 34
number, who were ill with different diseases, he made
well, and sent out evil spirits; but he did not let the
evil spirits say anything, because they had knowledge
of him.

And in the morning, a long time before daylight, he 35
got up, and went out to a quiet place, and there he gave
himself up to prayer. And Simon and those who were 36
with him came after him. And when they came up with 37
him, they said to him, "Everyone is looking for you".
And he said to them, "Let us go to other parts into the 38
nearest towns, so that I may give teaching there, because
for this purpose I came". And he went into their 39
Synagogues in every part of Galilee, preaching and
driving out evil spirits.

And a leper came to him, and going down on his knees 40
before him, made a request, saying, "If it is your pleasure,
you have the power to make me clean". And being 41
moved with pity, he put out his hand, and touching him
said to him, "It is my pleasure; be made clean". And 42
straight away the disease went from him, and he was
made clean. And he sent him away, saying to him very 43
seriously, "See that you say nothing to any man: but 44
go and let the priest see you, and make yourselves clean
by an offering of the things ordered by Moses, for a
witness to them". But he went out, and made it public, 45
giving an account of it everywhere, so that Jesus was
no longer able to go openly into a town, but was out-
side in the waste land; and they came to him from
every part.

2 AND when he came into Capernaum again after some 1
days, the news went about that he was in the
house. And a great number had come together, 2
so that there was no longer room for them, no, not even
about the door: and he gave them teaching. And four 3
men came to him with one on a bed who had no power
of moving. And when they were unable to get near him 4
because of all the people, they got the roof uncovered
where he was: and when it was broken up, they let
down the bed on which the man was. And Jesus, seeing 5
their faith, said to him, "Son, you have forgiveness for
your sins". But there were certain of the scribes seated 6
there, and reasoning in their hearts, "Why does this 7
man say such things? he has no respect for God: from
whom does forgiveness come but from God only?"
And Jesus, having knowledge in his spirit of their 8
thoughts, said to them, "Why are you reasoning about
these things in your hearts? Which is the simpler, to 9
say to a man who is ill, You have forgiveness for your
sins, or, Get up, take up your bed, and go? But so that 10
you may see that the Son of man has the power of
forgiveness on earth," (he said to the man) "I say to 11
you, Get up, take up your bed, and go to your house."
And he got up, and straight away took up the bed, and 12
went out before them all, so that they were all full of
wonder, and gave glory to God, saying, "We have never
seen anything like this".

And he went out again by the seaside; and all the 13
people came to him, and he gave them teaching. And 14
when he went by, he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus,
seated at the place where taxes were taken, and he said
to him, "Come with me". And he got up, and went
with him. And it came about that he was seated at meat 15
in his house, and a number of tax-farmers and sinners
were at table with Jesus and his disciples: for there were
a great number of them, and they came after him. And 16
the scribes of the Pharisees, when they saw that he was

taking food with the tax-farmers and sinners, said to his disciples, "Why does he take food and drink with such men?" And Jesus, hearing it, said to them, "Those who are well have no need of a medical man, but those who are ill: I have come not to get the upright but sinners". 17

And John's disciples and the Pharisees were taking no food: and they came and said to him, "Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees go without food, but your disciples do not?" And Jesus said to them, "Will the friends of a newly-married man go without food, while he is with them? as long as they have him with them, they will not go without food. But the days will come when the husband will be taken away from them, and then they will go without food. No man puts a bit of new cloth on an old coat: or the new, by pulling away from the old, makes a worse hole. And no man puts new wine into old wine-skins: or the skins will be burst by the wine, and the wine and the skins will be wasted: but new wine has to be put into new wine-skins." 18 19 20 21 22

And it came about, that on the Sabbath day he was going through the grain-fields; and while they were walking, his disciples took the heads of grain. And the Pharisees said to him, "Why are they doing what it is not right to do on the Sabbath?" And he said to them, "Have you no knowledge of what David did, when he had need and was without food, he, and those who were with him? How he went into the house of God when Abiathar was high priest, and took for food the holy bread, which only the priests may take, and gave it to those who were with him?" And he said to them, "The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath; so that the Son of man is lord even of the Sabbath". 23 24 25 26 27 28

IN THE SYNAGOGUE

AND he went again into the Synagogue; and there was a man there whose hand was dead. And they were watching him to see if he would make him well on the Sabbath day, so that they might have something against him. And he said to the man, "Get up and come forward". And he said to them, "Is it right to do good on the Sabbath or to do evil? to give life or to put to death?" But they said nothing. And looking round on them he was angry, being sad because of their hard hearts; and he said to the man, "Put out your hand". And he put it out, and his hand was made well. And the Pharisees went out, and straight away made designs with the Herodians about how they might put him to death.

And Jesus went away with his disciples to the sea, and a great number from Galilee came after him: and from Judaea, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumaea, and the other side of Jordan, and the country about Tyre and Sidon, a great number, hearing what great things he did, came to him. And he made a request to his disciples to have a little boat ready for him, so that he might not be crushed by the people; for he had made such a great number well that all those who were diseased were falling down before him for the purpose of touching him. And the unclean spirits, whenever they saw him, went down before him, crying out, and saying, "You are the Son of God". And he gave them special orders not to say who he was.

And he went up into the mountain, and sent for those whom it was his pleasure to have with him: and they went to him. And he took twelve to be with him, so that he might send them out as preachers, and give them the power of driving out evil spirits: to Simon he gave the second name of Peter; and to James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James, he gave the second name of Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder:

and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Mat- 18
thew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and
Thaddaeus, and Simon the Zealot; and Judas Iscariot, 19
who was false to him.

And he went into a house. And the people came 20
together again, so that they were not even able to take
bread. And when his friends had news of it, they went 21
out to get him, saying, "He is out of his mind". And 22
the scribes who came down from Jerusalem, said, "He
has Beelzebub," and, "By the ruler of evil spirits he sends
evil spirits out of men". And turning to them, he said 23
to them in the form of a story, "How is it possible for
Satan to put out Satan? If there is division in a kingdom, 24
that kingdom will come to destruction; and if there is 25
division in a house, that house will come to destruction;
and if Satan is at war with himself, and there is division 26
in him, he will not keep his place but will come to an end.
But no one is able to go into the house of the strong 27
man, and take his goods, without first putting cords
round the strong man, and then he will take his goods.
Truly I say to you, The sons of men will have forgiveness 28
for all their sins and for all the evil words they say:
but whoever says evil things against the Holy Spirit 29
will never have forgiveness, but the evil he has done
will be with him for ever:" because they said, "He has 30
an unclean spirit".

And his mother and brothers came and were outside, 31
and sent for him, requesting to see him. And a great 32
number were seated round him; and they said to him,
"See! your mother and your brothers are outside looking
for you". And he said in answer, "Who are my mother 33
and my brothers?" And looking round at those who 34
were seated about him, he said, "See, my mother and
my brothers! Whoever does God's pleasure, the same 35
is my brother, and sister, and mother."

BY THE SEASIDE

AND again he was teaching by the seaside. And a very great number of people had come to him, so that he got into a boat on the sea and took his seat; and all the people were on the land by the seaside. And he gave them teaching about a number of things in the form of stories, and said to them in his teaching, "Give ear: A man went out to put seed in the earth: and while he was doing it, some was dropped by the wayside, and the birds came and took it for food. And some went on the stones, where it had not much earth; and it came up straight away, because the earth was not deep: and when the sun was high, it was burned; and because it had no root, it became dry and dead. And some went among the thorns, and the thorns came up, and it had no room for growth and gave no fruit. And some, falling on good earth, gave fruit, coming up and increasing, and giving thirty, sixty, and a hundred times as much." And he said to them, "Whoever has ears, let him give ear".

And when he was by himself, those who were round him with the twelve, put questions to him about the purpose of the stories. And he said to them, "To you is given the secret of the kingdom of God, but to those who are outside, all things are given in the form of stories; so that seeing they may see, and it will not be clear to them; and hearing it, they will not get the sense; for fear that they may be turned again to me, and have forgiveness". And he said to them, "If you are not clear about this story how will you be clear about the others? The seed is the word. And these are they by the wayside, where the word is planted; and when they have given ear, the Evil One comes straight away, and takes away the word which has been planted in them. And in the same way, these are they who are planted on the stones, who, when the word has come to their ears, straight away take it with joy; and they have no root in

themselves, but go on for a time; then, when trouble comes or pain because of the word, they quickly become full of doubts. And others are those planted among the 18
thorns; these are they who have given ear to the word, and the cares of this life, and the deceits of wealth, and 19
the desire for other things coming in, put a stop to the growth of the word, and it gives no fruit. And these 20
are they who were planted on the good earth; such as give ear to the word, and take it into their hearts, and give fruit, thirty and sixty and a hundred times as much."

And he said to them, "When the light comes in, do 21
people put it under a vessel, or under the bed, and not on its table? There is nothing covered which will not 22
be seen openly, and nothing has been made secret which will not come to light. If any man has ears, let him give 23
ear." And he said to them, "Take care what you give 24
ear to: in the same measure as you give you will get, and more will be given to you. He who has, to him will 25
be given: and he who has not, from him will be taken even that which he has."

And he said, "Such is the kingdom of God, as if a man 26
put seed in the earth; and went to sleep and got up, 27
night and day, and the seed came to growth, though he had no knowledge how. The earth gives fruit by herself; 28
first the leaf, then the head, then the full grain. But 29
when the grain is ready, he quickly sends men to get it cut, because the time for cutting has come."

And he said, "What picture may we give of the king- 30
dom of God, or with what story may we make it clear? It is like a grain of *mustard*-seed, which, when it is put 31
in the earth, is smaller than all the seeds on the earth, but when it is planted, it comes up, and becomes taller 32
than all the plants, and puts out great branches, so that the birds of heaven are able to take rest in its shade."

And with a number of such stories he gave them his 33
teaching, as they were able to take it: and without a story 34
he said nothing to them: but privately to his disciples he made all things clear.

And on that day, when the evening had come, he said 35
to them, "Let us go over to the other side". And going 36
away from the people, they took him with them, as he
was, in the boat. And other boats were with him. And 37
a great storm of wind came up, and the waves came into
the boat, so that the boat was now becoming full. And 38
he himself was in the back of the boat, sleeping on the
cushion: and they went to him and, awaking him out of
his sleep, said, "Master, is it nothing to you that we
are in danger of destruction?" And he came out of his 39
sleep, and gave strong orders to the wind, and said to
the sea, "Peace, be at rest". And the wind went down,
and there was a great calm. And he said to them, "Why 40
are you full of fear? have you still no faith?" And their 41
fear was great, and they said one to another, "Who then
is this, that even the wind and the sea do his orders?"

IN THE COUNTRY OF THE GERASENES

AND they came to the other side of the sea, into the 1
country of the Gerasenes. And when he had got 2
out of the boat, straight away there came to him
from the place of the dead a man with an unclean spirit.
He was living in the place of the dead: and no man was 3
able to keep him down, no, not with a chain; because he 4
had frequently been prisoned in chains and iron bands,
and the chains had been parted and the bands broken by
him: and no man was strong enough to make him quiet.
And all the time, by day and night, in the place of the 5
dead, and in the mountains, he was crying out, and
cutting himself with stones. And when he saw Jesus 6
from far off, he went quickly to him and gave him
worship; and crying out with a loud voice, he said, 7
"What have I to do with you, Jesus, Son of the Most
High God? In God's name, do not be cruel to me."
For Jesus had said to him, "Come out of the man, you 8
unclean spirit". And Jesus said, "What is your name?" 9
And he made answer, "My name is Legion, because

there are a great number of us". And he made strong 10
prayers to him not to send them away out of the country.
Now on the mountain side there was a great herd of pigs 11
getting their food. And they said to him, "Send us into 12
the pigs, so that we may go into them". And he let 13
them do it. And the unclean spirits came out, and went
into the pigs; and the herd went rushing down a sharp
slope into the sea, about two thousand of them; and they
came to their death in the sea. And their keepers went 14
running, and gave an account of it in the town, and in
the country. And people came to see what had taken
place. And they came to Jesus, and saw the man in 15
whom had been the evil spirits seated, clothed and in
full use of his senses, and they were full of fear. And 16
those who had seen it gave them an account of what had
been done to him who had the evil spirits, and of the
fate of the pigs. And they made a request to him to go 17
out of their country. And when he was getting into the 18
boat, the man in whom had been the evil spirits had a
great desire to come with him. And he would not let 19
him, but said to him, "Go to your house, to your friends,
and give them news of the great things the Lord has
done for you, and how he had mercy on you". And he 20
went on his way, and made public in the country of
Decapolis what great things Jesus had done for him:
and all men were full of wonder.

THE DAUGHTER OF JAIRUS

And when Jesus had gone over again in the boat to 21
the other side, a great number of people came to him:
and he was by the sea. And one of the rulers of the 22
Synagogue, Jairus by name, came, and seeing him, went
down at his feet, and made strong prayers to him, saying, 23
"My little daughter is near to death: it is my prayer
that you will come and put your hands on her, so that
she may be made well, and have life". And he went with 24
him; and a great number of people went after him, and
came round him.

And a woman, who had had a flow of blood for twelve 25
years, and had undergone much at the hands of a number 26
of medical men, and had given all she had, and was no
better, but even worse, when she had news of the things 27
which Jesus did, went among the people coming after
him, and put her hand on his robe. For she said, "If I 28
may only put my hand on his robe, I will be made well".
And straight away the fountain of her blood was stopped, 29
and she had a feeling in her body that her disease had
gone and she was well. And straight away Jesus was 30
conscious that power had gone out of him; and turning
to the people, he said, "Who was touching my robe?"
And his disciples said to him, "You see the people 31
round you on every side, and you say, 'Who was
touching me?'" And on his looking round to see her 32
who had done this thing, the woman, shaking with fear, 33
conscious of what had been done to her, came, and
falling on her face before him, gave him a true account
of everything. And he said to her, "Daughter, your 34
faith has made you well; go in peace, and be free from
your disease".

And while he was still talking, they came from the 35
ruler of the Synagogue's house, saying, "Your daughter
is dead: why are you still troubling the Master?" But 36
Jesus, giving no attention to their words, said to the
ruler of the Synagogue, "Have no fear, only have faith".
And he did not let anyone come with him, but Peter and 37
James and John the brother of James. And they came 38
to the house of the ruler of the Synagogue; and he saw
people running this way and that, and weeping and
crying loudly. And when he had gone in, he said to 39
them, "Why are you making such a noise and weeping?
The child is not dead, but sleeping." And they made 40
sport of him. But he, having sent them all out, took the
father of the child and her mother and those who were
with him, and went in where the child was. And taking 41
her by the hand, he said to her, "*Talitha cumi*," which
is, "My child, I say to you, Get up". And the young 42

girl got up straight away, and was walking about; she being twelve years old. And they were overcome with wonder. And he gave them special orders that they 43
were not to say anything of this; and he said that some food was to be given to her.

6 AND he went away from there, and came into his 1
country; and his disciples went with him. And 2
when the Sabbath day had come, he was teaching in the Synagogue; and a number of people hearing him were surprised, saying, "From where did this man get these things?" and, "What is the wisdom given to this man, and what are these works of power done by his hands? Is not this the wood-worker, the son of Mary, 3
and brother of James and Joses and Judas and Simon? And are not his sisters here with us?" And they were bitter against him. And Jesus said to them, "A prophet 4
is nowhere without honour, but in his country, and among his relations, and in his family". And he was 5
unable to do any work of power there, but only to put his hands on one or two persons who were ill, and make them well. And he was greatly surprised because they 6
had no faith.

And he went about the country places teaching.

POWERS GIVEN TO THE TWELVE

And he gave orders to the twelve, and sent them out 7
two by two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits; and he said that they were to take nothing for 8
their journey, but a stick only; no bread, no bag, no money in their pockets; they were to go with common 9
shoes on their feet; and not to take two coats. And he 10
said to them, "Wherever you go into a house, make that your resting-place till you go away. And whatever place 11
will not take you in, and will not give ear to you, when you go away, put off the dust from your feet as a witness against them." And they went out, preaching the need 12

for a change of heart in men. And they sent out a 13
number of evil spirits, and put oil on a great number who
were ill, and made them well.

JOHN PUT TO DEATH

And king Herod had news of him, because his name 14
was on the lips of all; and he said, "John the Baptist has
come back from the dead, and for this reason these powers
are working in him". But others said, "It is Elijah". 15
And others said, "It is a prophet, even like one of the
prophets". But Herod, when he had news of it, said, 16
"John, whom I put to death, has come back from the
dead". For Herod himself had sent men out to take 17
John, and put him in prison because of Herodias, his
brother Philip's wife, whom he had taken for himself.
For John said to Herod, "It is wrong for you to have 18
your brother's wife". And Herodias was bitter against 19
him, desiring to put him to death; but she was not able;
for Herod was in fear of John, being conscious that he 20
was an upright man and a holy, and kept him safe. And
hearing him, he was much troubled; and he gave ear to
him gladly. And the chance came when Herod on his 21
birthday gave a feast to his lords, and the high captains,
and the chief men of Galilee; and when the daughter of 22
Herodias herself came in and did a dance, Herod and
those who were at table with him were pleased with her;
and the king said to the girl, "Make a request for any-
thing and I will give it you". And he took an oath, 23
saying to her, "Whatever is your desire I will give it
to you, even half of my kingdom". And she went out 24
and said to her mother, "What is my request to be?"
And she said, "The head of John the Baptist". And 25
she came in quickly to the king, and said, "My desire
is that you give me straight away on a plate the head
of John the Baptist". And the king was very sad; but 26
because of his oaths, and those who were with him at
table, he would not say "No" to her. And straight away 27

the king sent out one of his armed men, and gave him an order to come back with the head: and he went and took off John's head in prison, and came back with the 28
head on a plate, and gave it to the girl; and the girl gave it to her mother. And when his disciples had news of 29
it, they came and took up his body, and put it in its last resting-place.

THE FIVE CAKES OF BREAD

And the twelve came together to Jesus; and they gave 30
him an account of all the things they had done, and all they had been teaching. And he said to them, "Come 31
away by yourselves to a quiet place, and take a rest for a time". Because there were a great number coming and going, and they had no time even for food. And 32
they went away in the boat to a waste place by themselves. And the people saw them going, and a number 33
of them, having knowledge who they were, went running there together on foot from all the towns, and got there before them. And he got out, and saw a great 34
mass of people, and he had pity on them, because they were like sheep without a keeper: and he gave them teaching about a number of things. And at the end of 35
the day, his disciples came to him and said, "This place is waste land, and it is late: send them away, so that 36
they may go into the country and small towns round about, and get some food for themselves". But he said 37
to them in answer, "Give them food yourselves". And they said to him, "Are we to go and get bread for two hundred pence, and give it to them?" And he said to 38
them, "How much bread have you? go and see". And when they had seen, they said, "Five cakes of bread and two fishes". And he made them all be seated in groups 39
on the green grass. And they were placed in groups, 40
by hundreds, and by fifties. And he took the five cakes 41
of bread and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he said words of blessing over them; and when the cakes

were broken, he gave them to the disciples to put before the people; and he made division of the two fishes among them all. And they all took of the food and had enough. 42
And they took up twelve baskets full of the broken bits 43
and of the fishes. And they who took of the bread were 44
five thousand men.

WALKING ON THE SEA

And straight away he made his disciples get into the 45
boat, and go before him to the other side to Bethsaida, while he himself sent the people away. And after he 46
had sent them away, he went up into a mountain for prayer. And by evening, the boat was in the middle 47
of the sea, and he by himself on the land. And seeing 48
that they had trouble in getting their boat through the water, because the wind was against them, about the fourth watch of the night he came to them, walking on the sea; and he would have gone past them; but they, 49
when they saw him walking on the sea, took him for a spirit, and gave a loud cry: for they all saw him, and 50
were troubled. But straight away he said to them, "Take heart, it is I, have no fear". And he went to them into 51
the boat, and the wind went down, and they were full of wonder in themselves; for it was not clear to them 52
about the bread; but their hearts were hard.

And when they had gone across, they came to Genne- 53
saret, and got their boat to land. And when they had 54
got out of the boat, the people quickly had news of him, and went running through all the country round, and 55
took on their beds those who were ill, to where it was said that he was. And wherever he went, into small 56
towns, or great towns, or into the country, they took those who were ill into the market-places, requesting him that they might put their hands even on the edge of his robe: and all those who did so were made well.

CLEAN AND UNCLEAN

7 AND there came together to him the Pharisees and 1
certain of the scribes who had come from Jeru-
salem, and had seen that some of his disciples took 2
their bread with unclean, that is, unwashed hands. Now 3
the Pharisees, and all the Jews, do not take food without
washing their hands with care, keeping the old rule
which has been handed down to them: and when they 4
come from the market-place, they take no food till their
hands are washed; and a number of other orders there
are, which have been handed down to them to keep—
washings of cups, and pots, and brass vessels. And the 5
Pharisees and the scribes put the question to him, "Why
do your disciples not keep the rules of the fathers, but
take their bread with unwashed hands?" And he said, 6
"Well did Isaiah say of you, you false ones:

This people gives me honour with their lips,
But their heart is far from me.
But their worship is to no purpose, 7
While they give as their teaching the rules of men.

For, turning away from the law of God, you keep the 8
rules of men." And he said to them, "Truly you put 9
on one side the law of God, so that you may keep the
rules which have been handed down to you. For Moses 10
said, 'Give honour to your father and mother,' and, 'He
who says evil of father or mother, let him have the
punishment of death': but you say, If a man says to 11
his father or his mother, 'That by which you might have
had profit from me is *Corban*,' that is to say, 'Given to
God,' you no longer let him do anything for his father 12
or his mother; making the word of God of no effect by 13
your rule, which you have given: and a number of other
such things you do." And turning to the people again, 14
he said to them, "Give ear to me all of you, and let my
words be clear to you: there is nothing outside the man, 15
which, going into him, is able to make him unclean:

but the things which come out of the man are those
which make the man unclean". And when he had gone 17
into the house away from all the people, his disciples
put questions to him about the saying. And he said to 18
them, "Have even you so little wisdom? Do you not
see that whatever goes into a man from outside is not
able to make him unclean; because it goes not into the 19
heart but into the stomach, and goes out with the waste?"
He said this, making all food clean. And he said, "That 20
which comes out of the man, that makes the man unclean.
Because from inside, from the heart of men, come evil 21
thoughts and unclean pleasures, the taking of goods and 22
of life, broken faith between husband and wife, the desire
of wealth, wrongdoing, deceit, sins of the flesh, an evil
eye, angry words, pride, foolish acts: all these evil things 23
come from inside, and make the man unclean."

And he went away from there to the country of Tyre 24
and Sidon. And he went into a house, desiring that no
man might have knowledge of it: and he was not able
to keep it secret. But a woman, whose little daughter 25
had an unclean spirit, having had news of him, came
straight away and went down at his feet. Now the 26
woman was a Greek, a Syrophoenician by birth: and she
made a request to him that he would send the evil spirit
out of her daughter. And he said to her, "Let the 27
children first have their food: for it is not right to take
the children's bread and give it to the dogs". But she 28
said to him in answer, "Yes, Lord: even the dogs under
the table take the bits dropped by the children". And 29
he said to her, "For this saying go your way; the evil
spirit has gone out of your daughter". And she went 30
away to her house, and saw the child on the bed, and
the evil spirit gone out.

And again he went out from Tyre, and came through 31
Sidon to the sea of Galilee, through the country of
Decapolis. And they came to him with one who had no 32
power of hearing, and had trouble in talking; and they
made a request to him to put his hands on him. And he 33

took him on one side from the people privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he put water from his mouth on the man's tongue with his finger; and looking up to heaven, he took a deep breath, and said to him, "*Ephphatha*," that is, "Be open". And his ears became open, and the band of his tongue was made loose, and his words became clear. And he gave them orders not to give news of it to anyone; but the more he made this request, so much the more they made it public. And they were overcome with wonder, saying, "He has done all things well: he even gives back the power of hearing and the power of talking to those who have been without them".

THE SEVEN CAKES OF BREAD

8 In those days again, when there was a great mass of people and they had no food, he made his disciples come to him and said to them, "I have pity for these people because they have been with me now three days, and have no food; if I send them away to their houses with no food, they will be overcome by weariness on the way; and some of them have come from far". And his disciples said in answer, "How will it be possible to get enough bread for these men here in a waste place?" And he put the question, "How much bread have you?" And they said, "Seven cakes". And he made the people be seated on the earth: and he took the seven cakes, and having given praise he gave the broken bread to his disciples to put before them; and they put it before the people. And they had some small fishes; and blessing them he had them put before the people in the same way. And they took the food, and had enough; and they took up seven baskets full of the broken bits. And there were about four thousand people: and he sent them away. And he got into the boat with his disciples straight away, and came into the country of Dalmanutha.

And the Pharisees came out, and put questions to him, requesting from him a sign from heaven, testing him.

And he was very sad in spirit, and said, "Why is this 12
generation looking for a sign? truly I say to you, No
sign will be given to this generation". And he went 13
away from them, and again got into the boat and went
across to the other side.

And they had taken no thought to get bread; and they 14
had only one cake of bread with them in the boat. And 15
he said to them, "Take care to be on the watch against
the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod".
And they said to one another, "We have no bread". 16
And Jesus, hearing it, said to them, "Why are you 17
reasoning among yourselves because you have no bread?
do you still not see, and is it still not clear to you? are
your hearts so hard? Having eyes, do you not see? and 18
having ears, have you no hearing? and have you no
memory? When I made a division of the five cakes of 19
bread among the five thousand, what number of baskets
full of broken bits did you take up?" They said to him,
"Twelve". "And when the seven among the four 20
thousand, what number of baskets full of broken bits did
you take up?" And they said to him, "Seven". And he 21
said to them, "Is it still not clear to you?"

And they came to Bethsaida. And they took a blind 22
man to him, requesting him to put his hands on him.
And he took the blind man by the hand, and went with 23
him out of the town; and when he had put water from
his mouth on his eyes, and put his hands on him, he said,
"Do you see anything?" And looking up, he said, 24
"I see men; I see them like trees, walking". Then again 25
he put his hands on his eyes; and looking hard, he was
able to see, and saw all things clearly. And he sent him 26
away to his house, saying, "Do not even go into the
town".

And Jesus went out, with his disciples, into the little 27
towns round Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he put
a question to his disciples, saying, "Who do men say
that I am?" And they made answer, "John the Baptist; 28
and others, Elijah; but others, One of the prophets".

And he said to them, "But who do you say I am?" 29
Peter said in answer, "You are the Christ". And he 30
put them under orders not to say this of him to any-
one. And teaching them, he said that the Son of man 31
would have to undergo much, and be hated by those in
authority, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be
put to death, and after three days come back from the
dead. And he said this openly. And Peter took him, 32
and was protesting. But he, turning about, and seeing 33
his disciples, said sharply to Peter, "Get out of my way,
Satan: for your mind is not on the things of God, but on
the things of men". And turning to the mass of people 34
with his disciples, he said to them, "If any man has the
desire to come after me, let him give up all other desires,
and take up his cross, and come after me. Whoever has 35
a desire to keep his life, will have it taken from him;
and whoever gives up his life because of me and the
good news, will keep it. What profit has a man if he 36
gets all the world with the loss of his life? And what 37
would a man give in exchange for his life? Whoever 38
has a feeling of shame because of me and my words in
this false and evil generation, the Son of man will have
a feeling of shame because of him, when he comes in the
9 glory of his Father with the holy angels." And he said 1
to them, "Truly I say to you, There are some here who
will have no taste of death till they see the kingdom of
God come with power".

THE VOICE FROM THE CLOUD

AND after six days Jesus took with him Peter, and 2
James, and John, and made them go up with him
into a high mountain by themselves: and he was
changed in form before them: and his clothing became 3
shining, very white, as no cleaner on earth would make
it. And there came before them Elijah with Moses: and 4
they were talking with Jesus. And Peter said to Jesus, 5
"Master, it is good that we are here: and let us make

three tents; one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah". Because he was not certain what to say, for 6
they were in great fear. And a cloud came over them; 7
and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is
my dearly-loved Son, give ear to him". And suddenly 8
looking round about, they saw no one any longer, but
Jesus only with themselves.

And while they were coming down from the moun- 9
tain, he gave them orders not to give word to any man
of the things they had seen, till the Son of man had come
back from the dead. And they kept the saying, ques- 10
tioning among themselves what the coming back from
the dead might be. And they put a question to him, 11
saying, "Why do the scribes say that Elijah has to come
first?" And he said to them, "Truly Elijah does come 12
first, and puts all things in order; and how is it said in
the Writings that the Son of man will go through much
sorrow and be made as nothing? But I say to you that 13
Elijah has come, and they have done to him whatever
they were pleased to do, even as the Writings say about
him."

And when they came to the disciples, they saw a 14
great mass of people about them, and scribes questioning
them. And straight away all the people, when they saw 15
him, were full of wonder, and running to him, gave him
worship. And he said, "What are you questioning them 16
about?" And one of the number said to him in answer, 17
"Master, I came to you with my son, who has in him
a spirit which takes away his power of talking; and 18
wherever it takes him, it puts him down violently,
streaming at the lips and twisted with pain; and his
strength goes from him; and I made a request to your
disciples to send it out, and they were not able". And 19
he said to them in answer, "O generation without faith,
how long will I have to be with you? let him come to
me". And they took him to him: and when he saw him, 20
the spirit in him straight away became violent; and he
went down on the earth, rolling about and streaming at

the lips. And Jesus questioning the father said, "How long has he been like this?" And he said, "From a child. And frequently it has sent him into the fire and into the water, for his destruction; but if you are able to do anything, have pity on us, and give us help." And Jesus said to him, "If you are able! All things are possible to him who has faith." Straight away the father of the child gave a cry, saying, "I have faith; make my feeble faith stronger". And when Jesus saw that the people came running together, he gave orders to the unclean spirit, saying to him, "You, spirit, who are the cause of his loss of voice and hearing, I say to you, come out of him, and never again go into him". And after crying out and shaking him violently, it came out: and the child became like one dead; so that most of them said, "He is dead". But Jesus took him by the hand, lifting him up; and he got up. And when he had gone into the house, his disciples said to him privately, "Why were we unable to send it out?" And he said to them, "Nothing will make this sort come out but prayer".

And they went out from there, through Galilee; and it was his desire that no man might have knowledge of it; for he was giving his disciples teaching, and saying to them, "The Son of man is given up into the hands of men, and they will put him to death; and when he is dead, after three days he will come back from the dead". But the saying was not clear to them, and they were in fear of questioning him about it.

JESUS AND THE CHILDREN

And they came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he put the question to them, "What were you talking about on the way?" But they said nothing: because they had had an argument between themselves on the way, about who was the greatest. And seating himself, he made the twelve come to him; and he said to them, "If any man has the desire to be first, he will

be last of all, and servant of all". And he took a little 36
child, and put him in the middle of them; and taking
him in his arms, he said to them, "Whoever will give 37
honour to one such little child in my name, gives honour
to me: and whoever gives honour to me, gives honour
not to me, but to him who sent me".

John said to him, "Master, we saw one driving out 38
evil spirits in your name: and we said that he might not,
because he is not one of us". But Jesus said, "Say not 39
so: for there is no man who will do a great work in my
name, and be able at the same time to say evil of me. He 40
who is not against us is for us. Whoever gives you a 41
cup of water, because you are Christ's, truly I say to
you, he will in no way be without his reward. And 42
whoever is a cause of trouble to one of these little ones
who have faith in me, it would be better for him if a
great stone was put round his neck, and he was dropped
into the sea. And if your hand is a cause of trouble to 43
you, let it be cut off; it is better for you to go into life
with one hand than to have two hands and go into hell,
into the eternal fire. And if your foot is a cause of 45
trouble to you, let it be cut off: it is better for you to go
into life with one foot than to have two feet and go
into hell. And if your eye is a cause of trouble to 47
you, take it out: it is better for you to go into the king-
dom of God with one eye than, having two eyes, to
go into hell; where their worm is ever living and the 48
fire is not put out. Everyone will be salted with fire. 49
Salt is good; but if the taste goes from it, how will you 50
make it salt again? Have salt in yourselves, and be at
peace one with another."

TEACHING IN JUDAEA

10 AND he got up, and went into the country of Judaea 1
on the other side of Jordan: and great numbers of
people came together to him again; and, as was
his way, he gave them teaching. And Pharisees came 2

to him, testing him with the question, "Is it right for
a man to put away his wife?" And he said to them in 3
answer, "What did Moses say you were to do?" And 4
they said to him, "Moses let us give her a record of
putting away, and be free from her". But Jesus said to 5
them, "Because of your hard hearts he gave you this
law. But from the first, male and female made he them. 6
For this cause will a man go away from his father and 7
mother, and be joined to his wife; and the two will 8
become one flesh; so that they are no longer two, but
one flesh. Let not that which has been joined together 9
by God be parted by man." And in the house the 10
disciples put questions to him again about this thing.
And he said to them, "Whoever puts away his wife, and 11
takes another, is false to his wife; and if she herself puts 12
away her husband, and takes another, she is false to her
husband".

And they took to him little children, so that he might 13
put his hands on them: and the disciples said sharp words
to them. And when Jesus saw it, he was angry, and said 14
to them, "Let the little children come to me, and do not
keep them away; for of such is the kingdom of God.
Truly I say to you, Whoever does not put himself under 15
the kingdom of God like a little child, will not come into
it at all." And he took them in his arms, and gave them 16
a blessing, putting his hands on them.

And while he was going out into the way, a man came 17
running to him, and went down on his knees, saying,
"Good Master, what have I to do so that I may have
eternal life?" And Jesus said to him, "Why do you say 18
I am good? no one is good but one, and that is God.
You have knowledge of what is said in the law, 'Do not 19
put any one to death, Do not be untrue in married life,
Do not take what is not yours, Do not give false witness,
Do not get money by deceit, Give honour to your father
and mother'." And he said to him, "Master, all these 20
laws I have kept from the time when I was young".
And Jesus, looking on him, and loving him, said, "There 21

is one thing needed: go, get money for your goods, and give it to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven: and come with me". But his face became sad at the 22
saying, and he went away sorrowing: for he was one who had much property.

And Jesus, looking round about, said to his disciples, 23
"How hard it is for those who have wealth to come into the kingdom of God!" And the disciples were full of 24
wonder at his words. But Jesus said to them again, "Children, how hard it is for those who put faith in wealth to come into the kingdom of God! It is simpler 25
for a *camel* to go through a needle's eye, than for a man of wealth to come into the kingdom of God." And they 26
were greatly surprised, saying to him, "Who then may have salvation?" Jesus, looking on them, said, "With 27
men it is impossible, but not with God: for all things are possible with God". Peter said to him, "See, we have 28
given up everything, and come after you". Jesus said, 29
"Truly I say to you, There is no man who has given up house, or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, because of me and the good news, who will not get a hundred times as much now in this 30
time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land—though with great troubles; and, in the world to come, eternal life. But a great number who 31
are first will be last: and those who are last will be first."

And they were on the way, going up to Jerusalem; 32
and Jesus was going before them: and they were full of wonder; but those who came after him were in fear. And again he took the twelve, and gave them word of the things which were to come on him, saying, "See, 33
we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be given up to the chief priests and the scribes; and they will give an order for his death, and will give him up to the Gentiles: and they will make sport of him, and put shame 34
on him, and give him cruel blows, and will put him to death; and after three days he will come back from the dead".

And there came to him James and John, the sons of 35
Zebedee, saying to him, "Master, will you give us
whatever may be our request?" And he said to them, 36
"What would you have me do for you?" And they said 37
to him, "Let us be seated, one at your right hand and
one at your left, in your glory". But Jesus said to them, 38
"You have no knowledge of what you are saying. Are
you able to take of my cup? or to undergo the baptism
which I am to undergo?" And they said to him, "We 39
are able". And Jesus said to them, "You will take of
the cup from which I take; and the baptism which I am
about to undergo you will undergo: but to be seated at 40
my right hand or at my left is not for me to give: but
it is for those for whom it has been made ready". And 41
hearing this, the ten became very angry with James and
John. And Jesus made them come to him, and said to 42
them, "You see that those who are made rulers over
the Gentiles are lords over them; and their great ones
have authority over them. But it is not so among you: 43
but whoever has a desire to become great among you,
let him be your servant: and whoever has a desire to be 44
first among you, let him be servant of all. For truly the 45
Son of man did not come to have servants, but to be a
servant, and to give his life for the salvation of great
numbers of men."

And they came to Jericho: and when he was going 46
out of Jericho, with his disciples and a great number of
people, the son of Timaeus, Bartimaeus, a blind man,
was seated by the wayside, with his hand out for money.
And when it came to his ears that it was Jesus of 47
Nazareth, he gave a cry, and said, "Jesus, son of David,
have mercy on me". And some of them, turning in 48
protest, gave him an order to be quiet: but he went on
crying out all the more, "Son of David, have mercy on
me". And Jesus came to a stop, and said, "Let him 49
come". And crying out to the blind man, they said to
him, "Be comforted: come, he has sent for you". And 50
he, putting off his coat, got up quickly, and came to

Jesus. And Jesus said to him, "What would you have 51
me do to you?" And the blind man said, "Master, make
me able to see". And Jesus said to him, "Go on your 52
way; your faith has made you well". And straight away
he was able to see, and went after him in the way.

GLORY TO THE SON OF DAVID

11 AND when they came near to Jerusalem, to Bethphage 1
and Bethany, at the mountain of Olives, he sent
two of his disciples, and said to them, "Go into 2
the little town opposite: and when you come to it, you
will see a young ass with a cord round his neck, on
which no man has ever been seated; let him loose, and
come back with him. And if anyone says to you, 'Why 3
are you doing this?' say, 'The Lord has need of him and
will send him back straight away'." And they went 4
away, and saw a young ass by the door outside in the
open street; and they were getting him loose. And 5
some of those who were there said to them, "What are
you doing, taking the ass?" And they said to them the 6
words which Jesus had said; and they let them go. And 7
they took the young ass to Jesus, and put their clothing
on him, and he got on his back. And a great number put 8
down their clothing in the way; and others put down
branches which they had taken from the fields. And 9
those who went in front, and those who came after, were
crying, "Glory; A blessing on him who comes in the
name of the Lord: A blessing on the coming kingdom 10
of our father David: Glory in the highest".

TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE

And he went into Jerusalem into the Temple; and 11
after looking round about on all things, it being now
evening, he went out to Bethany with the twelve.

And on the day after, when they had come out from 12
Bethany, he was in need of food. And seeing a *fig*-tree 13
in the distance with leaves, he went to see if by chance

it had anything on it: and when he came to it, he saw nothing but leaves; for it was not the time for the fruit. And he said to it, "Let no man take fruit from you for ever". And it came to the ears of his disciples. 14

And they came to Jerusalem; and he went into the Temple, and sent out those who were trading there, overturning the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those who were offering doves for money; and he would not let any man take a vessel through the Temple. And he gave them teaching, and said to them, "Is it not in the Writings, 'My house is to be named a house of prayer for all the nations'? but you have made it a hole of thieves". And it came to the ears of the chief priests and scribes, and they took thought how they might put him to death; being in fear of him, because all the people were full of wonder at his teaching. 15 16 17 18

And every evening he went out of the town. 19

And when they were going by in the morning, they saw the fig-tree dead from the roots. And Peter, having a memory of it, said to him, "Master, see, the tree which was cursed by you is dead". And Jesus answering said to them, "Have faith in God. Truly I say to you, Whoever says to this mountain, 'Be taken up and be put into the sea'; and has no doubt in his heart, but has faith that what he says will come about; he will have his desire. For this reason I say to you, Whatever you make a request for in prayer, have faith that it has been given to you, and you will have it. And whenever you make a prayer, let there be forgiveness in your hearts, if you have anything against anyone; so that you may have forgiveness for your sins from your Father who is in heaven." 20 21 22 23 24 25

And they came again to Jerusalem: and while he was walking in the Temple, there came to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and those in authority: and they said to him, "By what authority do you do these things? or who gave you authority to do these things?" And Jesus said to them, "I will put to you one question; give me an answer, and I will say by what authority 27 28 29

I do these things. The baptism of John, was it from 30
heaven or from men? give me an answer." And they 31
gave thought to it among themselves, saying, "If we
say, 'From heaven'; he will say, 'Why then did you
not have faith in him?' But if we say, 'From men'"— 32
they were in fear of the people: because all took John
to be truly a prophet. And they said in answer to Jesus, 33
"We are not certain". And Jesus said to them, "And
I will not say by what authority I do these things".

TEACHING BY STORIES

12 AND he gave them teaching in the form of stories. 1
"A man had a vine-garden planted, and put a wall
about it, and made a place for crushing out the
wine, and put up a tower, and let it out to field workers,
and went into another country. And when the time came 2
he sent a servant to get from the workmen some of the
fruit of the garden. And they took him, and gave him 3
blows, and sent him away with nothing. And again he 4
sent to them another servant; and they gave him wounds
on the head, and were very cruel to him. And he sent 5
another; and they put him to death: and a number of
others, whipping some, and putting some to death. He 6
still had one, a dearly-loved son: he sent him last to
them, saying, 'They will have respect for my son'. But 7
those workmen said among themselves, 'This is he who
will one day be the owner of the property; come, let us
put him to death, and the heritage will be ours'. And 8
they took him, and put him to death, pushing his body
out of the garden. What then will the master of the 9
garden do? He will come and put the workmen to death,
and will give the garden into the hands of others. Have 10
you not seen this which is in the Writings:

The stone which the builders put on one side,
The same was made the chief stone of the building:
This was the Lord's doing, 11
And it is a wonder in our eyes?"

And they made attempts to take him; but they were in 12
fear of the people, because they saw that the story was
against them; and they went away from him.

Then they sent to him certain of the Pharisees and 13
the Herodians, so that they might make use of his words
to take him by a trick. And when they had come, they 14
said to him, "Master, we are certain that you are true,
and have no fear of anyone: you have no respect for a
man's position, but you are teaching the true way of
God: Is it right to give taxes to Caesar or not? Are 15
we to give, or not to give?" But he, conscious of their
false hearts, said to them, "Why do you put me to the
test? give me a penny, so that I may see it". And 16
they gave him one. And he said to them, "Whose is
this image and name on it?" And they said to him,
"Caesar's". And Jesus said to them, "Give to Caesar 17
the things which are Caesar's, and to God the things
which are God's". And they were full of wonder at
him.

And there came to him Sadducees, who say there is 18
no future life; and they put a question to him, saying,
"Master, in the law Moses says, 'If a man's brother 19
comes to his end, and has a wife still living, and no
child, it is right for his brother to take his wife, and get
a family for his brother'. There were seven brothers: 20
and the first took a wife, and at his death there were no
offspring; and the second took her, and at his death, 21
there were no offspring; and the third the same: and 22
all the seven had no seed. Last of all the woman herself
came to her death. In the future life, whose wife will 23
she be? for the seven had her for a wife." Jesus said to 24
them, "Is not this the reason of your error, that you
have no knowledge of the holy Writings or the power
of God? In the future life, they do not get married, but 25
are like the angels in heaven. But as to the dead coming 26
back to life; have you not seen in the book of Moses,
about the burning thorn tree, how God said to him,
'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and

the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but 27
of the living: you are greatly in error."

And one of the scribes came, and hearing them 28
questioning together, and seeing that he had given them
a good answer, put the question to him, "Which law
is the first of all?" Jesus said in answer, "The first is, 29
'Give ear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:
and you are to have love for the Lord your God with 30
all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your
mind, and with all your strength'. The second is this, 31
'Have love for your neighbour as for yourself'. There
is no other law greater than these." And the scribe said 32
to him, "Truly, Master, you have well said that he is
one; and there is no other but he: and to have love for 33
him with all the heart, and with all the mind, and with
all the strength, and to have the same love for his neigh-
bour as for himself, is much more than all forms of
offerings". And when Jesus saw that he gave a wise 34
answer, he said to him, "You are not far from the king-
dom of God". And every man after that was in fear of
questioning him any more.

And Jesus, when he was teaching in the Temple, said, 35
"How do the scribes say that the Christ is the son of
David? David himself said in the Holy Spirit, 36

The Lord said to my Lord,
Be seated at my right hand,
Till I put those who are against you under your feet.

David himself gives him the name of Lord; and how 37
then is he his son?" And the common people gave ear
to him gladly.

And in his teaching he said, "Be on your watch against 38
the scribes, whose pleasure it is to go about in long robes
and be respected in the market-places, and to have the 39
chief seats in the Synagogues, and the first places at
feasts; who take away the property of widows, and before 40
the eyes of men make long prayers; these will be judged
more hardly".

And he took a seat by the place where the money was 41
kept, and saw how the people put money into the boxes:
and a number who had wealth put in much. And there 42
came a poor widow, and she put in two little bits of
money, which make a farthing. And he made his 43
disciples come to him, and said to them, "Truly I say
to you, This poor widow has put in more than all those
who are putting money into the box: because they all 44
put in something out of what they had no need for; but
she out of her need put in all she had, even all her
living".

THE TEMPLE WILL BE OVERTURNED

13 AND when he was going out of the Temple, one of 1
his disciples said to him, "Master, see, what stones
and what buildings!" And Jesus said to him, "Do 2
you see these great buildings? there is not one stone
here resting on another which will not be overturned".

And while he was seated on the mountain of Olives 3
opposite the Temple, Peter and James and John and
Andrew said to him privately, "Say when these things 4
will be, and what will be the sign when these things are
all about to be done". And Jesus said to them, "Take 5
care that you are not tricked by anyone. People will 6
come in my name, saying, 'I am he'; and a number will
be turned from the true way. And when you have news 7
of wars and talk of wars, do not be troubled; these things
have to be, but it is still not the end. Nation will go to 8
war with nation, and kingdom with kingdom: there will
be earth-shocks in different places; there will be times
when there is no food; these things are the first of the
troubles.

"But take care: for they will give you up to the 9
Sanhedrins; and in Synagogues you will be whipped;
and you will be taken before rulers and kings because
of me, for a sign to them. And the good news has first 10
to be given to all the nations. And when you are taken 11

and given up to be judged, do not be troubled about what to say: but whatever is given to you in that hour, say: because it is not you who say it, but the Holy Spirit.
12 And brother will give up brother to death, and the father his child; and children will go against their fathers and
13 mothers, and put them to death. And you will be hated by all men, because of my name; but he who goes through to the end will have salvation.

14 "But when you see the unclean thing which makes destruction, in the place where it has no right to be" (let this be clear to the reader), "then let those who are
15 in Judaea go quickly to the mountains: and let him who is on the house-top not go down, or go in, to take any-
16 thing out of his house: and let him who is in the field
17 not go back to take his coat. And it will be hard for women who are with child and for her who has a baby
18 at the breast in those days. And say a prayer that it
19 may not be in the winter. For in those days there will be sorrow, such as there has not been from the time when God made the world till now, and will not ever
20 be again. And if the Lord had not made the time short, no flesh would have been kept from destruction; but
21 because of the saints he has made the time short. And then if any man says to you, 'See, here is Christ'; or,
22 'See, there'; have no faith in it: because there will be false Christs and false prophets, and they will give signs and wonders in the hope of turning even the saints from
23 the true way. But take care; see, I have made all things clear to you before the time.

24 "But in those days, after that time of trouble, the sun will be made dark and the moon will not give her light,
25 and the stars will be falling from heaven, and the powers
26 which are in the heavens will be moved. And then they will see the Son of man coming in clouds with great
27 power and glory. And then he will send out the angels, and will get together his saints, from the four winds, from the farthest part of the earth to the farthest part of heaven.

"Take an example from the *fig*-tree: when its branches 28
become soft and put out their leaves, you see that the
summer is near; even so, when you see these things 29
taking place, you may be certain that he is near, even
at the doors. Truly, I say to you, This generation will 30
not come to an end till all these things are complete.
Heaven and earth will come to an end; but my words 31
will not come to an end. But of that day or that hour 32
no one has knowledge, not even the angels in heaven,
or the Son, but the Father. Take care, keep watch with 33
prayer: for you are not certain when the time will be.
It is as when a man, who is in another country for a time, 34
having gone away from his house, and given authority
to his servants, and to everyone his work, gives the
porter an order to keep watch. So you are to keep watch: 35
because you are not certain when the master of the house
is coming, in the evening, or in the middle of the night,
or at the *cock's* cry, or in the morning; for fear that, 36
coming suddenly, he sees you sleeping. And what I say 37
to you, I say to all, Keep watch."

THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER

14 It was now two days before the feast of the Passover 1
and the unleavened bread: and the chief priests and
the scribes made designs how they might take him
by deceit, and put him to death: but they said, "Not 2
while the feast is going on, for fear there may be trouble
among the people".

And while he was in Bethany in the house of Simon 3
the leper, seated at table, there came a woman with a
bottle of perfumed oil of great price; and when the bottle
was broken she put the perfume on his head. But some 4
of them were angry among themselves, saying, "For
what purpose has this oil been wasted? We might have 5
got more than three hundred pence for it, and given the
money to the poor." And they said things against her
among themselves. But Jesus said, "Let her be; why 6

are you troubling her? she has done a kind act to me.
The poor you have ever with you, and whenever you 7
have the desire you may do them good: but me you have
not for ever. She has done what she was able: she has 8
put oil on my body to make it ready for its last resting-
place. And truly I say to you, Wherever the good news 9
goes out through all the earth, what this woman has done
will be talked of in memory of her."

And Judas Iscariot, who was one of the twelve, went 10
away to the chief priests, so that he might give him up
to them. And hearing what he said, they were glad, and 11
gave him their word to make him a payment of money.
And he took thought how he might best give him up to
them.

And on the first day of unleavened bread, when the 12
Passover lamb is put to death, his disciples said to him,
"Where are we to go and make ready for you to take
the Passover meal?" And he sent two of his disciples, 13
and said to them, "Go into the town, and there will
come to you a man with a vessel of water: go after him;
and wherever he goes in, say to the owner of the house, 14
'The Master says, Where is my guest-room, where I
may take the Passover with my disciples?' And he will 15
take you up himself to a great room with a table and
seats: there make ready for us." And the disciples went 16
out and came into the town, and saw that it was as he
had said: and they made ready the Passover.

And when it was evening he came with the twelve. 17
And while they were seated taking food, Jesus said, 18
"Truly, I say to you, One of you will be false to me, one
who is taking food with me". They were sad, and said 19
to him one by one, "Is it I?" And he said to them, 20
"It is one of the twelve, one who is putting his bread
with me into the same plate. The Son of man goes, even 21
as the Writings say of him: but cursed is that man
through whom the Son of man is given up! It would
have been well for that man if he had never been given
birth."

And while they were taking food, he took bread, and 22
after blessing it, he gave the broken bread to them, and
said, "Take it: this is my body". And he took a cup, 23
and when he had given praise, he gave it to them: and
they all had a drink from it. And he said to them, "This 24
is my blood of the testament, which is given for men.
Truly I say to you, I will take no more of the fruit of 25
the vine till the day when I take it new in the kingdom
of God."

And after a song of praise to God they went out to the 26
mountain of Olives.

And Jesus said to them, "You will all be turned away 27
from me: for it is in the Writings, 'I will put the keeper
of the sheep to death, and the sheep will be put to flight'.
But after I have come back from the dead, I will go before 28
you into Galilee." But Peter said to him, "Though the 29
others may be turned away from you, I will not". And 30
Jesus said to him, "Truly I say to you that you, today,
even this night, before the *cock's* second cry, will say
three times that you have no knowledge of me". But 31
he said with passion, "If I have to be put to death with
you, I will not be false to you". And they all said the
same.

GETHSEMANE

And they came to a place which was named Geth- 32
semane: and he said to his disciples, "Be seated here
while I say a prayer". And he took with him Peter and 33
James and John, and grief and great trouble came on
him. And he said to them, "My soul is very sad, even 34
to death: be here a little time, and keep watch". And 35
he went forward a little, and falling down on the earth,
made request that, if possible, the hour might go from
him. And he said, "*Abba*, Father, all things are possible 36
to you; take away this cup from me: but even so let not
my pleasure, but yours be done". And he came, and 37
saw them sleeping, and said to Peter, "Simon, are you
sleeping? were you not able to keep watch one hour?

Keep watch with prayer, so that you may not be put to 38
the test; the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is feeble."
And again he went away, and said a prayer, using the 39
same words. And again he came, and saw them sleeping, 40
because their eyes were very tired; and they had nothing
to say in answer. And he came the third time, and said 41
to them, "Go on sleeping now, and take your rest: it is
enough; the hour has come; see, the Son of man is given
up into the hands of evil men. Get up, let us be going; 42
see, he who gives me up is near."

JUDAS GIVES A SIGN

And straight away, while he was still talking, Judas, 43
one of the twelve, came, and with him a great band with
swords and sticks, from the chief priests and the scribes
and those in authority. Now he who had been false to 44
him had given them a sign, saying, "The one to whom
I give a kiss, that is he; take him, and get him away
safely". And when he had come, he went straight to 45
him and said, "Master"; and gave him a kiss. And they 46
put their hands on him, and took him. But a certain one 47
of those who were near took out his sword, and gave the
servant of the high priest a blow, cutting off his ear.
And Jesus said to them, "Have you come out as against 48
a thief, with swords and sticks to take me? I was with 49
you every day in the Temple teaching, and you did not
take me; but this is done so that the Writings may come
true." And they all went away from him in fear. 50

And a certain young man went after him, with only 51
a linen cloth about his body; and they put their hands
on him; but he got away unclothed, without the linen 52
cloth.

THE SANHEDRIN

And they took Jesus away to the high priest; and 53
there came together with him all the chief priests and
those in authority and the scribes. And Peter had come 54

after him at a distance, even into the house of the high priest; and he was seated with the captains, warming himself in the light of the fire. Now the chief priests and 55
all the Sanhedrin were looking for witness against Jesus so that they might put him to death; and they were unable to get any. For a number gave false witness 56
against him and their witness was not in agreement. Then some got up and gave false witness against him, 57
saying, "He said in our hearing, 'I will put an end to 58
this Temple which is made with hands, and in three days I will make another without hands'". And even 59
so their witness was not in agreement. And the high 60
priest got up in the middle of them, and said to Jesus, "Do you say nothing in answer? what is it which these say against you?" But he kept quiet, and said nothing. 61
Again the high priest questioning him said, "Are you the Christ, the son of the Holy One?" And Jesus said, 62
"I am: and you will see the Son of man seated at the right hand of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven". And the high priest, violently parting his 63
robes, said, "What more need have we of witnesses? His words against God have come to your ears: what 64
is your opinion?" And they all said it was right for him to be put to death. And some put shame on him and, 65
covering his face, gave him blows and said to him, "Now say what is to come": and the captains took him and gave him blows with their hands.

And while Peter was down in the open square of the 66
building, one of the servant-girls of the high priest came; and seeing Peter warming himself by the fire, she 67
gave him a look, and said, "You were with this Nazarene, even Jesus". But he said, "I have no knowledge 68
of him, or of what you are saying": and he went out into the doorway; and there came the cry of a cock. And the 69
girl saw him, and said again to those who were near, "This is one of them". But again he said it was not so. 70
And after a little time again those who were near said to Peter, "Truly you are one of them; for you are a

Galilaean". But, with curses and oaths, he said, "I have no knowledge of the man about whom you are talking". And in the same minute, the cock gave a second cry. And it came to Peter's mind how Jesus had said to him, "Before the second cry of the cock, you will say three times that you have no knowledge of me". And at this thought he was overcome with weeping.

71 72

CHRIST BEFORE PILATE

15 AND the first thing in the morning the chief priests with those in authority and the scribes, and all the Sanhedrin, had a meeting, and put cords round Jesus, and took him away, and gave him up to Pilate. And Pilate put a question to him, "Are you the King of the Jews?" And he, answering, said to him, "You say so". And the chief priests said a number of things against him. And Pilate again put a question, "Do you say nothing in answer? see how much evil they say you have done". But Jesus gave no more answers, so that Pilate was full of wonder.

1 2 3 4 5

BARABBAS OR JESUS?

Now at the feast every year he let one prisoner go free at their request. And there was one named Barabbas, in prison with those who had gone against the government and in the fight had taken life. And the people went up, requesting him to do as he had done for them in other years. And Pilate said in answer to them, "Is it your desire that I let the King of the Jews go free?" For he saw that the chief priests had given him up through envy. But the people were moved by the chief priests to make him let Barabbas go free. And Pilate again said in answer to them, "What then am I to do to him to whom you give the name of the King of the Jews?" And they said again loudly, "To the cross with him!" And Pilate said to them, "Why, what evil has

6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14

he done?" But their cry was the louder, "To the cross!"
And Pilate, desiring to do what was pleasing to the 15
people, let Barabbas go free, and gave up Jesus, when
he had been whipped, to be put to death on the cross.

And the men of the army took him away into the 16
square in front of the building, which is the Praetorium,
and they got together all the band. And they put a 17
purple robe on him, and twisting a crown of thorns, they
put it on him; and, as if honouring him, they said, "Long 18
life to the King of the Jews!" And they gave him blows 19
on the head with a stick and put shame on him, and going
down on their knees, gave him worship. And when they 20
had made sport of him, they took the purple robe off
him and put his clothing on him. And they took him
out to put him to death on the cross.

JESUS PUT TO DEATH ON THE CROSS

And they made one, Simon of Cyrene, the father of 21
Alexander and Rufus, who was going by, coming from
the country, go with them, so that he might take his
cross. And they took him to the place named Golgotha, 22
which is, Dead Man's Head. And they gave him wine 23
mixed with *myrrh;* but he did not take it. And he was 24
nailed to the cross; and they made a division of his
clothing among them, putting to the decision of chance
what everyone was to take. And it was the third hour 25
when they put him on the cross. And the statement of 26
his crime was put in writing on the cross, THE KING
OF THE JEWS. And they put two thieves on crosses 27
with him, one on his right side, and one on his left. And 29
those who went by made sport of him, shaking their
heads, and saying, "Ha! you who give the Temple to
destruction, and put it up again in three days, keep 30
yourself from death, and come down from the cross".
In the same way the chief priests, laughing at him among 31
themselves with the scribes, said, "A saviour of others,
he has no salvation for himself. Let the Christ, the King 32

of Israel, come down now from the cross, so that we may see and have belief." And those who were put on crosses with him said evil things against him.

And when the sixth hour had come, it was dark over 33
all the land till the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour, 34
Jesus said in a loud voice, "*Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?*"
which is, "My God, my God, why are you turned away
from me?" And some of those who were near, hearing 35
it, said, "See, he is crying to Elijah". And one of them 36
went quickly, and getting a sponge full of bitter wine,
put it on a rod, and gave it to him for drink, saying,
"Let be; let us see if Elijah will come to take him down".
And Jesus gave a loud cry, and gave up his spirit. 37
And the curtain of the Temple was parted from end to 38
end. And when the captain, who was near, saw how he 39
gave up his spirit, he said, "Truly this man was the Son
of God". And there were women watching from a 40
distance: among them was Mary Magdalene, and Mary
the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome;
who went with him when he was in Galilee, and took 41
care of him; and a number of other women who came
up with him to Jerusalem.

THE BODY OF JESUS PUT TO REST

And when it was evening, because it was the time of 42
getting ready, that is, the day before the Sabbath, there 43
came Joseph of Arimathaea, a responsible man in high
honour, who was himself waiting for the kingdom of
God; and he went in to Pilate without fear, and made
a request for the body of Jesus. And Pilate was surprised 44
that he was dead; and sending for the captain, he put a
question to see if he had been dead for long. And when 45
he had news of it from the captain, he let Joseph have
the body. And he got a linen cloth, and taking him 46
down, put the linen cloth round him, and put him in a
place for the dead which had been cut out of a rock;
and a stone was rolled against the door. And Mary 47

Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses saw where he was put.

THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK

16 AND when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, 1
and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, got
spices, so that they might come and put them on
him. And very early after dawn on the first day of the 2
week, they came at the time of the coming up of the sun
to the place where the body had been. And they were 3
saying among themselves, "Who will get the stone
rolled away from the door for us?" And looking up, 4
they saw that the stone was rolled back; and it was of
great size. And when they went in, they saw a young 5
man seated on the right side, dressed in a white robe;
and they were full of wonder. And he said to them, "Do 6
not be troubled: you are looking for Jesus, the Nazarene,
who has been put to death on the cross; he has come back
from the dead; he is not here: see, the place where they
put him! But go, say to his disciples and to Peter, 'He 7
goes before you into Galilee: there you will see him,
as he said to you'." And they went out quickly from 8
the place; because fear and great wonder had come on
them: and they said nothing to anyone, because they
were full of fear that....[1]

Now when he came back from the dead early on the 9
first day of the week, he went first to Mary Magdalene,
from whom he had sent out seven evil spirits. She went, 10
and gave news of it to those who had been with him,
while they were sorrowing and weeping. And they, 11
when it came to their ears that he was living, and had
been seen by her, had no belief in it.

And after these things he was seen in another form 12
by two of them, while they were walking on their way
into the country. And they went away, and gave news 13
of it to the rest; and they had no belief in what was said.

[1] This is the end of Mark. The later verses are by another writer.

And later he was seen by the eleven themselves while 14
they were taking food; and he said sharp words to them
because they had no faith and their hearts were hard,
and they had no belief in those who had seen him after
he had come back from the dead. And he said to them, 15
"Go into all the world, and give the good news to
everyone. He who has faith and is given baptism will 16
get salvation; but he who has not faith will be judged.
And these signs will be with those who have faith: in 17
my name they will send out evil spirits; and they will
make use of new languages; they will take up snakes, 18
and if there is poison in their drink, it will do them no
evil; they will put their hands on those who are ill, and
they will get well."

So then the Lord Jesus, after he had said these words 19
to them, was taken up into heaven, and took his seat at
the right hand of God. And they went out, preaching 20
everywhere, the Lord working with them, and giving
witness to the word by the signs which came after. So
be it.

ST LUKE

1 As a number of attempts have been made to put to- 1
gether in order an account of those events which took
place among us, as they were handed down to us by 2
those who saw them from the first and were preachers
of the word, it seemed good to me, having made observa- 3
tion, with great care, of the direction of events in their
order, to put the facts in writing for you, most noble
Theophilus; so that you might have certain knowledge 4
of those things about which you were given teaching.

THE BIRTH OF JESUS CHRIST AND OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

In the days of Herod, king of Judaea, there was a 5
certain priest, by name Zacharias, of the order of
Abijah; and he had a wife of the family of Aaron,
and her name was Elisabeth. They were upright in the 6
eyes of God, keeping all the rules and orders of God,
and doing no wrong. And they were without children, 7
because Elisabeth had never given birth, and they were
at that time very old.

Now it came about that, in his turn, he was acting as 8
priest before God, and as was the way of the priests, 9
he had to go into the Temple to see to the burning of
perfumes. And all the people were offering prayers out- 10
side, at the time of the burning of perfumes. And he 11
saw an angel of the Lord in his place on the right side
of the altar. And Zacharias was troubled when he saw 12
him and fear came on him. But the angel said, "Have 13
no fear, Zacharias, for your prayer has come to the ears
of God, and your wife Elisabeth will have a son, and
his name will be John. And you will be glad and have 14
great delight; and numbers of people will have joy at
his birth. For he will be great in the eyes of the Lord; 15

he will not take wine or strong drink; and he will be full of the Spirit of God from his birth. And through 16
him great numbers of the children of Israel will be turned to the Lord their God. And he will go before 17
his face in the spirit and power of Elijah, turning the hearts of fathers to their children, and wrongdoers to the way of righteousness; to make ready a people whose hearts have been turned to the Lord." And Zacharias 18
said to the angel, "How may I be certain of this? For I am an old man, and my wife is far on in years." And 19
the angel answering said, "I am Gabriel whose place is before God; I have been sent to say these words to you and to give you this good news. Now, see, you 20
will be without voice or language till the day when these things come about, because you had not faith in my words, which will have effect at the right time." And the people were waiting for Zacharias and were 21
surprised because he was in the Temple for such a long time. And when he came out he was not able to say 22
anything, and they saw that he had seen a vision in the Temple; and he was making signs to them without words. And when the days of his work in the Temple 23
were ended, he went back to his house.

After that time, Elisabeth, being certain that she was 24
to become a mother, kept herself from men's eyes for five months, saying, "The Lord has done this to me, 25
for his eyes were on me, to take away my shame in the eyes of men".

Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent 26
from God to a town in Galilee, named Nazareth, to 27
a young woman who was to be married to a man named Joseph, of the family of David; and the name of the young woman was Mary. And the angel came in to 28
her and said, "Peace be with you, to whom special grace has been given; the Lord is with you". But she was 29
greatly troubled at his words, and said to herself, "What may be the purpose of these words?" And the angel 30
said to her, "Have no fear, Mary, for you have God's

approval. And see, you will give birth to a son and 31
his name will be Jesus. He will be great, and will be 32
named the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God
will give him the kingdom of David, his father: he will 33
have rule over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his
kingdom there will be no end." And Mary said to the 34
angel, "How may this be, because I have had no know-
ledge of a man?" And the angel in answer said to her, 35
"The Holy Spirit will come on you, and the power of
the Most High will come to rest on you, so that the holy
child to whom you give birth will be named the Son of
God. Even now Elisabeth, who is of your family, is to 36
be a mother, though she is old: and this is the sixth
month with her who was without children. For there 37
is nothing which God is not able to do." And Mary 38
said: "I am the servant of the Lord; may it be to me
as you say". And the angel went away.

THE SONG OF MARY

Then Mary got up and went quickly into the high 39
lands, to a town of Judah; and went into the house of 40
Zacharias and took Elisabeth in her arms. And when 41
the voice of Mary came to the ears of Elisabeth, the
baby made a sudden move inside her; then Elisabeth
was full of the Holy Spirit, and she said with a loud 42
voice: "May blessing be on you among women, and
a blessing on the child of your body. How is it that the 43
mother of my Lord comes to me? For, truly, when the 44
sound of your voice came to my ears, the baby, in my
body, made a sudden move for joy. Happy will she be 45
who had faith that the things which the Lord has said
to her will be done." And Mary said: 46

My soul gives glory to God;
My spirit is glad in God my saviour. 47
For he has had pity on his servant, though she is poor 48
and lowly placed:

And from this hour will all generations give witness
to the blessing which has come to me.
For he who is strong has done great things for me; 49
And holy is his name.
His mercy is for all generations 50
In whom is the fear of him.
With his arm he has done acts of power; 51
He has put to flight those who have pride in their hearts.
He has put down kings from their seats, 52
Lifting up on high the men of low degree.
Those who had no food he made full of good things; 53
The men of wealth he sent away with nothing in their
hands;
His help he has given to Israel, his servant, 54
So that he might keep in mind his mercy
To Abraham and his seed for ever, 55
As he gave his word to our fathers.

And Mary was with her for about three months and 56
then went back to her house.

THE BIRTH OF JOHN

Now it was time for Elisabeth to give birth, and she 57
had a son. And it came to the ears of her neighbours 58
and relations that the Lord had been very good to her,
and they took part in her joy. And on the eighth day 59
they came to see to the circumcision of the child, and
they would have given him the name of Zacharias, his
father's name; but his mother made answer and said, 60
"No, his name is John". And they said, "Not one of 61
your relations has that name". And they made signs 62
to his father, to say what name was to be given to him.
And he sent for writing materials and put down: "His 63
name is John;" and they were all surprised. And straight 64
away his mouth was open, and his tongue was free and
he gave praise to God. And fear came on all those who 65
were living round about them: and there was much talk
about all these things in all the hill country of Judaea.

And all who had word of them kept them in their minds 66
and said, "What will this child be?" For the hand of
the Lord was with him.

THE SONG OF ZACHARIAS

And his father, Zacharias, was full of the Holy Spirit, 67
and with the voice of a prophet, said these words:

Praise be to the Lord, the God of Israel, 68
For he has come to his people and made them free,
Lifting up a horn of salvation for us 69
In the house of his servant David
(As he said, by the mouth of his holy prophets, from 70
the earliest times),
Salvation from those who are against us, and from the 71
hands of those who have hate for us;
To do acts of mercy to our fathers 72
And to keep in mind his holy word,
The oath which he made to Abraham, our father, 73
That we, being made free from the fear of those who 74
are against us,
Might give him worship,
In righteousness and holy living before him all our days. 75
And you, child, will be named the prophet of the 76
Most High:
You will go before the face of the Lord, to make ready
his ways;
To give knowledge of salvation to his people, 77
Through the forgiveness of sins,
Because of the loving mercy of our God, 78
By whom the dawn from heaven has come to us,
To give light to those in dark places, and in the shade 79
of death,
So that our feet may be guided into the way of peace.

And the child became tall, and strong in spirit; and 80
he was living in the waste land till the day when he
came before the eyes of Israel.

THE BIRTH OF JESUS

2 Now it came about in those days that an order 1
went out from Caesar Augustus that there was
to be a numbering of all the Roman world. This 2
was the first numbering which was made when Quirinius
was ruler of Syria. And all men went to be numbered, 3
everyone to his town. And Joseph went up from Galilee, 4
out of the town of Nazareth, into Judaea, to Bethlehem,
the town of David, because he was of the house and
family of David, to be put on the list with Mary, his 5
future wife, who was about to become a mother. And 6
while they were there, the time came for her to give
birth. And she had her first son; and folding him in 7
linen, she put him to rest in the place where the cattle
had their food, because there was no room for them in
the house.

And in the same country, there were keepers of sheep 8
in the fields, watching over their flock by night. And 9
an angel of the Lord came to them, and the glory of
the Lord was shining round about them: and fear came
on them. And the angel said, "Have no fear; for truly, 10
I give you good news of great joy which will be for
all the people: for on this day, in the town of David, a 11
Saviour has come to birth, who is Christ, the Lord. And 12
this is the sign to you; you will see a young child folded
in linen, in the place where the cattle have their food."
And suddenly there was with the angel a great band 13
of spirits from heaven, giving praise to God and saying,

Glory to God in the highest, 14
And on the earth peace
Among men in whom he is well pleased.

And when the angels had gone away from them into 15
heaven, the keepers of the sheep said to one another,
"Let us go now to Bethlehem, and see this thing which
has come about, which the Lord has made clear to us".
And they came quickly, and saw Mary and Joseph, and 16

the child in the place where the cattle were. And when 17
they saw it, they gave them an account of the things
which had been said to them about the child. And all 18
those to whose ears it came were full of wonder at the
things said by the keepers of the sheep. But Mary kept 19
all these words in her heart, and gave much thought
to them. Then the keepers of the sheep went back, giving 20
glory and praise to God for all the things which had
come to their ears and eyes.

And when the time came for his circumcision after 21
eight days, he was named Jesus, the name which the
angel had given to him before his birth.

THE SONG OF SIMEON

And when the necessary days for making them clean 22
by the law of Moses had come to an end, they took him
to Jerusalem to give him to the Lord, (as it says in the 23
law of the Lord, "Every mother's first male child is
to be holy to the Lord".) And to make an offering, 24
as it is ordered in the law of the Lord, of two doves or
other young birds. And there was then in Jerusalem 25
a man whose name was Simeon; and he was an upright
man, fearing God and waiting for the comfort of Israel:
and the Holy Spirit was on him. And he had knowledge, 26
through the Holy Spirit, that he would not see death
till he had seen the Lord's Christ. And full of the Spirit 27
he came into the Temple: and when the father and
mother came in with the child Jesus, to do with him
what was ordered by the law, then he took him in his 28
arms and gave praise to God and said,

Now you are letting your servant go 29
In peace, O Lord, as you have said;
For my eyes have seen your salvation, 30
Which you have made ready before the face of all 31
nations;
A light of revelation to the Gentiles, 32
And the glory of your people Israel.

And his father and mother were full of wonder at the 33
things which were said about him. And Simeon gave 34
them his blessing and said to Mary, his mother, "See,
this child will be the cause of the downfall and the
lifting up of great numbers of people in Israel, and he
will be a sign against which hard words will be said;
(and a sword will go through your heart) so that the 35
secret thoughts of men may come to light". And there 36
was one, Anna, a woman prophet, the daughter of
Phanuel, of the family of Asher (she was very old, and
after seven years of married life she had been a widow 37
for eighty-four years); she was in the Temple at all
times, worshipping with prayers and going without food,
night and day. And coming up at that time, she gave 38
praise to God, talking of him to all those who were
waiting for the freeing of Jerusalem. And when they 39
had done all the things which were ordered by the law
of the Lord, they went back to Galilee, to Nazareth,
the town where they were living.

And the child became tall and strong, and full of 40
wisdom, and the grace of God was on him.

THE BOY JESUS IN THE TEMPLE

And every year his father and mother went to Jeru- 41
salem at the feast of the Passover. And when he was 42
twelve years old, they went up, as their way was, to
the feast; and when the days of the feast came to an 43
end and they were going back, the boy Jesus was still
in Jerusalem, but they had no knowledge of it: and in 44
the belief that he was with some of their number, they
went a day's journey; and after looking for him among
their relations and friends, and seeing that he was not 45
there, they went back to Jerusalem, to make search for
him. And after three days they came across him in the 46
Temple, seated among the wise men, giving ear to their
words and putting questions to them. And all to whose 47
ears it came were full of wonder at his knowledge and

the answers which he gave. And when they saw him 48
they were surprised, and his mother said to him, "Son,
why have you done this to us? see, your father and
I have been looking for you with sorrow". And he said 49
to them, "Why were you looking for me? was it not
clear to you that my right place was in my Father's
house?" And his words seemed strange to them. 50
And he went down with them and came to Nazareth; 51
and did as he was ordered: and his mother kept all these
words in her heart.

And Jesus was increasing in wisdom and in years, 52
and in grace before God and men.

THE PREACHING OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

3 Now in the fifteenth year of the rule of Tiberius 1
Caesar, Pontius Pilate being ruler of Judaea, and
Herod being king of Galilee, his brother Philip
of the country of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias
of Abilene, when Annas and Caiaphas were high priests, 2
the word of the Lord came to John, the son of Zacharias,
in the waste land. And he came into all the country 3
round about Jordan, preaching baptism as a sign of
forgiveness of sin for those whose hearts were changed.
As it says in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, 4

The voice of one crying in the waste land,
'Make ready the way of the Lord,
Make his ways straight.
Every valley will be lifted up, 5
And all the mountains and hills made low,
And the twisted will be made straight,
And the rough ways smooth;
And all flesh will see the salvation of God.' 6

So he said to the people who went out to him for 7
baptism: "You offspring of snakes, at whose word are
you taking flight from the wrath to come? Make clear 8
by your acts that your hearts have been changed; and

do not say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham for our father': for I say to you that God is able to make children of Abraham from these stones. And even now 9
the axe is put to the root of the trees; and every tree which does not have good fruit will be cut down and put into the fire." And the people put questions to him, 10
saying, "What have we to do?" And he made answer 11
and said to them, "He who has two coats, let him give to him who has not even one; and he who has food, let him do the same". Then tax-farmers came to him for 12
baptism and said to him, "Master, what have we to do?" And he said to them, "Do not make an attempt to get 13
more money than the right amount". And men of the 14
army put questions to him, saying, "And what have we to do?" And he said to them, "Do no violent acts to any man, and do not take anything without right, and let your payment be enough for you".

And while the people were waiting, and all men were 15
questioning in their hearts about John, if he was the Christ or not, John made answer, saying to them all, 16
"Truly, I give you baptism with water, but one is coming, who is greater than I, whose shoes I am not good enough to undo: he will give you baptism with the Holy Spirit, and with fire: in whose hand is the 17
instrument with which he will make clean his grain; he will put the good grain in his store, but the waste will be burned in the fire which will never be put out".

And so comforting them with these and other words, 18
he gave the good news to the people; but Herod, the 19
king, because John had made a protest on account of Herodias, his brother's wife, and other evil things which Herod had done, did this most evil thing of all, and had 20
John shut up in prison.

THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

Now it came about that when all the people had been 21
given baptism, Jesus, having had baptism with them,

was in prayer, when, the heaven being open, the Holy 22
Spirit came down in the form of a dove, and a voice
came from heaven, saying, "You are my dearly-loved
Son, with whom I am well pleased".

And Jesus, at this time, was about thirty years old, 23
being the son (as it seemed) of Joseph, the son of Heli,
the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, 24
the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, the son of Mattathias, 25
the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the
son of Naggai, the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, 26
the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, the 27
son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel,
the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, the son of Melchi, 28
the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam,
the son of Er, the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the 29
son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son 30
of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of
Jonam, the son of Eliakim, the son of Melea, the son 31
of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the
son of David, the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son 32
of Boaz, the son of Salmon, the son of Nahshon, the 33
son of Amminadab, the son of Arni, the son of Hezron,
the son of Perez, the son of Judah, the son of Jacob, the 34
son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah,
the son of Nahor, the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the 35
son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah, the son 36
of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the
son of Noah, the son of Lamech, the son of Methuselah, 37
the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel,
the son of Cainan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the 38
son of Adam, the son of God.

JESUS TESTED BY THE EVIL ONE

4 And Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, came back from 1
the Jordan, and was guided by the Spirit in the
waste land for forty days, being tested by the Evil 2
One. And he had no food in those days; and when they

came to an end, he was in need of food. And the Evil 3
One said to him, "If you are the Son of God, let this
stone be turned into bread". And Jesus made answer 4
to him, "It has been said in the Writings, 'Bread is not
man's only need'". And he took him up and let him 5
see all the kingdoms of the earth in a minute of time.
And the Evil One said, "I will give you authority over 6
all these, and the glory of them, for it has been given
to me, and I give it to anyone at my pleasure. If then 7
you will give worship to me, it will all be yours." And 8
Jesus in answer said to him, 'It has been said in the
Writings, 'Give worship to God, and be his servant
only'". And he took him to Jerusalem and put him on 9
the highest point of the Temple and said to him, "If
you are the Son of God, let yourself go down from here,
for it is said in the Writings,

He will give his angels orders to take care of you: 10

and, 11

In their hands they will keep you up,
So that your foot may not be crushed against a stone".

And Jesus made answer and said to him, "It is said in 12
the Writings, 'You may not put the Lord your God to
the test'".

And when all these tests were ended the Evil One 13
went away from him for a time.

And Jesus came back to Galilee in the power of the 14
Spirit, and the news of him went through all the country
round about. And he was teaching in their Synagogues 15
and all men gave him praise.

IN THE SYNAGOGUE AT NAZARETH

And he came to Nazareth, where he had been as 16
a child, and he went, as his way was, into the Synagogue
on the Sabbath, and got up to give a reading. And the 17

book of the prophet Isaiah was given to him, and opening the book, he came on the place where it is said,

The Spirit of the Lord is on me, 18
Because I am marked out by him to give good news to the poor;
He has sent me to make well those who are broken-hearted;
To say that the prisoners will be let go, and the blind will see,
And to make the wounded free from their chains,
To give knowledge that the year of the Lord's good 19
pleasure is come.

And shutting the book he gave it back to the servant 20
and took his seat: and the eyes of all in the Synagogue were fixed on him. Then he said to them, "Today this 21
word has come true in your hearing". And they were 22
all giving witness, with wonder, to the words of grace which came from his mouth: and they said, "Is not this the son of Joseph?" And he said to them, "Without 23
doubt you will say to me, 'Let the medical man make himself well: the things which to our knowledge were done at Capernaum, do them here in your country'". And he said to them, "Truly I say to you, No prophet 24
is honoured in his country. Truly I say to you, There 25
were a number of widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up for three years and six months and there was no food in the land; but Elijah 26
was not sent to one of them, but only to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, to a woman who was a widow. And 27
there were a number of lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha, the prophet, and not one of them was made clean, but only Naaman the Syrian." And all who were 28
in the Synagogue were very angry when these things were said to them. And they got up and took him out 29
of the town to the edge of the mountain on which their town was, so that they might send him down to his death. But he came through them and went on his way. 30

TEACHING IN CAPERNAUM

And he came down to Capernaum, a town of Galilee; 31
and he was giving them teaching on the Sabbath. And 32
they were surprised at his teaching, for his word was
with authority. And there was a man in the Synagogue 33
who had an unclean spirit; and he gave a loud cry and
said, "Let us be! what have we to do with you, Jesus 34
of Nazareth? have you come to put an end to us? I have
knowledge who you are, the Holy One of God." And 35
Jesus said to him, "Be quiet, and come out of him".
And when the evil spirit had put him down on the earth
in the middle of them, he came out of him, having done
him no damage. And wonder came on them all and 36
they said to one another, "What are these words? for
with authority and power he gives orders to the evil
spirits and they come out". And there was much talk 37
about him in all the places round about.

And he got up and went out of the Synagogue and went 38
into the house of Simon. And Simon's wife's mother
was very ill with a burning heat; and in answer to their
prayers for her he went near her, and with a sharp word 39
he gave orders to the disease and it went away from her;
and straight away she got up and took care of their needs.

And at sun-down all those who had anyone ill with 40
any sort of disease, took them to him, and he put his
hands on every one of them and made them well. And 41
evil spirits came out of a number of them, crying out
and saying, "You are the Son of God". But he gave
them sharp orders not to say a word, because they had
knowledge that he was the Christ.

And when it was day, he came out and went to a waste 42
place; and great numbers of people came looking for
him, and they came to him, and would have kept him
from going away. But he said to them, "I have to give 43
the good news of the kingdom of God in other towns,
because that is why I was sent".

And he was teaching in the Synagogues of Galilee. 44

A FISHER OF MEN

5 Now it came about that while the people came 1
pushing to be near him, and to have knowledge
of the word of God, he was by a wide stretch
of water named Gennesaret; and he saw two boats by 2
the edge of the water, but the fishermen had gone out
of them and were washing their nets. And he got into 3
one of the boats, the property of Simon, and made a
request to him to go a little way out from the land. And
being seated he gave the people teaching from the boat.
And when his talk was ended, he said to Simon, "Go 4
out into deep water, and let down your nets for fish".
And Simon, answering, said, "Master, we were working 5
all night and we took nothing: but at your word I will
let down the nets". And when they had done this, they 6
got such a great number of fish that it seemed as if their
nets would be broken; and they made signs to their 7
friends in the other boat to come to their help. And
they came, and the two boats were so full that they were
going down. But Simon, when he saw it, went down 8
at the knees of Jesus, and said, "Go away from me,
O Lord, for I am a sinner". For he was full of wonder 9
and so were all those who were with him, at the number
of fish which they had taken; and so were James and 10
John the sons of Zebedee, who were working with Simon.
And Jesus said to Simon, "Have no fear; from this time
forward you will be a fisher of men". And when they 11
had got their boats to the land, they gave up everything
and went after him.

And it came about that while he was in one of the 12
towns, there was a leper there: and when he saw Jesus
he went down on his face in prayer to him, saying,
"Lord, if it is your pleasure, you have power to make
me clean". And he put out his hand to him and said, 13
"It is my pleasure; be clean". And straight away his
disease went from him. And he gave him orders to say 14
nothing to any man: "but let the priest see you and give

an offering so that you may be made clean, as the law of Moses says, and for a witness to them". But news of him went out all the more, in every direction, and great numbers of people came together to give hearing to his words and to be made well from their diseases. But he went away by himself to a waste place for prayer.

And it came about that on one of these days, he was teaching; and some Pharisees and teachers of the law were seated there, who had come from every town of Galilee and Judaea and from Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him, to make those who were ill free from their diseases. And some men had with them, on a bed, a man who was ill, without power of moving; and they made attempts to get him in and put him before Jesus. And because of the mass of people, there was no way to get him in; so they went up on the top of the house and let him down through the roof, on his bed, into the middle in front of Jesus. And seeing their faith, he said, "Man, you have forgiveness for your sins". And the scribes and Pharisees were having an argument, saying, "Who is this, who has no respect for God? Who is able to give forgiveness for sins, but God only?" But Jesus, who had knowledge of their thoughts, said to them, "Why are you reasoning in your hearts? Which is the simpler; to say, 'You have forgiveness for your sins'; or to say, 'Get up and go'? But so that you may see that on earth the Son of man has power of forgiveness of sins," (he said to the man who was ill) "I say to you, Get up, and take up your bed, and go into your house." And straight away he got up before them, and took up his bed and went away to his house giving praise to God. And wonder overcame them all, and they gave glory to God; and they were full of fear, saying, "We have seen strange things today".

And after these things, he went out, and saw Levi, a tax-farmer, seated at the place where taxes were taken, and said to him, "Come after me". And giving up his business, he got up and went after him. And Levi made

a great feast for him in his house: and a great number
of tax-farmers and others were seated at table with
them. And the Pharisees and their scribes made protests 30
against his disciples, saying, "Why do you take food
and drink with tax-farmers and sinners?" And Jesus, 31
answering, said to them, "Those who are well have no
need of a medical man, but those who are ill. I have 32
come, not to get the upright, but sinners, so that they
may be turned from their sins." And they said to him, 33
"The disciples of John frequently go without food, and
make prayers, and so do the disciples of the Pharisees;
but your disciples take food and drink". And Jesus said, 34
"Are you able to make the friends of the newly-married
man go without food when he is with them? But the 35
days will come when he will be taken away from them,
and then they will go without food." And he said to 36
them, in a story, "No man takes a bit of cloth from
a new coat and puts it on to an old coat, for so the new
coat would be damaged and the bit from the new would
not go well with the old. And no man puts new wine 37
into old wine-skins, for fear that the skins will be burst
by the new wine, and the wine be let out, and the skins
come to destruction. But new wine has to be put into 38
new wine-skins. And no man, having had old wine, has 39
any desire for new, for he says, 'The old is better'."

THE LAW OF THE SABBATH

6 Now it came about that on the Sabbath he was 1
going through the fields of grain, and his dis-
ciples took the heads of the grain for food, crushing
them in their hands. But some of the Pharisees said, 2
"Why do you do what it is not right to do on the
Sabbath?" And Jesus said, "Have you not seen in the 3
Writings what David did when he was in need of food,
he, and those who were with him; how he went into 4
the house of God and took for food the holy bread,
which only the priests may take, and gave it to those

who were with him?" And he said, "The Son of man 5
is lord even of the Sabbath".

And it came about, on another Sabbath, that he went 6
into the Synagogue and was teaching there. And a man
was there whose right hand was dead. And the scribes 7
and Pharisees were watching him to see if he would make
him well on the Sabbath, so that they might be able to
say something against him. But he had knowledge of 8
their thoughts; and he said to the man whose hand was
dead, "Get up and come into the middle". And he got
up and came forward. And Jesus said, "I put the question 9
to you, Is it right to do good on the Sabbath or to do
evil? to give life or to take it away?" And looking 10
round on all of them, he said to him, "Put out your
hand". And he did so: and his hand was made well.
But they were full of wrath, and were talking together 11
about what they might do to Jesus.

THE TWELVE APOSTLES

And it came about in those days that he went out to 12
the mountain for prayer; and he was all night in prayer
to God. And the day came and, turning to his disciples, 13
he made a selection from among them of twelve, to
whom he gave the name of Apostles. Simon, to whom 14
he gave the name of Peter, and Andrew his brother,
and James and John and Philip and Bartholomew, and 15
Matthew and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus
and Simon, who was named the Zealot, and Judas the 16
son of James, and Judas Iscariot, he who was false to
him. And he came down with them to a level place, and 17
a great band of his disciples, and a very great number
of people from all Judaea and Jerusalem and from the
parts of Tyre and Sidon by the sea, came to give hearing
to him, and to be made well from their diseases; and 18
those who were troubled with unclean spirits were made
well. And all the people were desiring to be touched 19
by him, for power came from him and made them all well.

TEACHING ON THE MOUNTAIN

And turning his eyes to his disciples he said, "Happy 20
are you who are poor: for the kingdom of God is yours.
Happy are you who are in need of food now: for you will 21
be made full. Happy are you who are weeping now:
for you will be glad. Happy are you, when men have 22
hate for you, and put you away from among them and
say angry words to you, turning away in disgust at
your name, because of the Son of man. Be glad in that 23
day, and be lifted up for joy, for your reward in heaven
will be great: for their fathers did these same things
to the prophets. But unhappy are you who have wealth! 24
for you have been comforted now. Unhappy are you 25
who are full of food now! for you will be in need.
Unhappy are you who are laughing now! for you will
be crying in sorrow. Unhappy are you when all men 26
give you their approval! for so their fathers did to the
false prophets.

"But I say to you who give ear to me, Have love for 27
those who are against you, do good to those who have
hate for you, give blessing to those who give you curses, 28
say prayers for those who are cruel to you. If a man 29
gives you a blow on one side of your face, then let the
other side be turned to him; from him who takes away
your coat, do not keep back your robe. Give to everyone 30
who comes with a request, and if a man takes away your
property, make no attempt to get it back again. Do to 31
others as you would have them do to you. If you have 32
love for those who have love for you, what credit is
it to you? for even sinners have love for those who have
love for them. And if you do good to those who do 33
good to you, what credit is it to you? for even sinners
do the same. And if you let those have the use of your 34
money, from whom you are hoping to get it back, what
credit is it to you? even sinners do so to sinners, hoping
to get back as much as they gave. But be loving to 35
those who are against you and do them good, and give

them your money, not giving up hope, and your reward will be great and you will be the sons of the Most High: for he is kind to evil men, and to those who have hard hearts. Be full of pity, even as your Father is full of 36
pity. Be not judges of others, and you will not be 37
judged: do not give punishment to others, and you will not get punishment yourselves: make others free, and you will be made free: give, and it will be given to you; 38
good measure, crushed down, full and running over, they will give to you. For in the same measure as you give, it will be given to you again."

And he gave them teaching in the form of a story, 39
saying, "Is it possible for one blind man to be guide to another? will they not go falling together into a hole? The disciple is not greater than his master, but everyone 40
whose learning is complete will be like his master. And 41
why do you take note of the grain of dust in your brother's eye, but take no note of the bit of wood which is in your eye? How will you say to your brother, 42
'Brother, let me take the grain of dust out of your eye,' when you yourself do not see the bit of wood in your eye? O false one! first take the wood out of your eye and then you will see clearly to take the dust out of your brother's eye. For no good tree gives bad fruit, 43
and no bad tree gives good fruit. For every tree is 44
judged by its fruit. Men do not get *figs* from thorns, or grapes from blackberry plants. The good man, out 45
of the good store of his heart, gives good things; and the evil man, out of his evil store, gives evil: for out of the full store of the heart come the words of the mouth.

"Why do you say to me, 'Lord, Lord,' and do not 46
the things which I say? Everyone who comes to me 47
and gives ear to my words and does them, I will make 48
clear to you what he is like: he is like a man building a house, who went deep and put the base of it on a rock; and when the water came up and the river was driving against that house, it was not moved, because the building was good. But he who gives hearing, without doing, is 49

like a man building a house on the earth without a base for it; and when the force of the river came against it, straight away it came down; and the destruction of that house was great."

GREAT WORKS AT CAPERNAUM

7 AFTER he had come to the end of all his words in the hearing of the people, he went into Capernaum. 1
And a certain captain had a servant who was very dear to him; this servant was ill and near to death. 2
And when news of Jesus came to his ears, he sent to him rulers of the Jews, requesting that he would come and make his servant well. 3
And they, when they came to Jesus, made their request warmly, saying, "It is right for you to do this for him, because he is a friend to our nation, and himself has put up a Synagogue for us". 4 5
And Jesus went with them. And when he was not far from the house, the man sent friends to him, saying, "Lord, do not give yourself trouble: for I am not important enough for you to come into my house: 6
and I had the feeling that I was not even good enough to come to you: but say the word only, and my servant will be well. 7
For I, myself, am a man under authority, having men under me; and I say to this one, 'Go,' and he goes; and to another, 'Come,' and he comes; and to my servant, 'Do this,' and he does it." 8
And when these things were said to Jesus, he was surprised, and, turning to the mass of people coming after him, said, "I have not seen such great faith, no, not in Israel". 9
And when those who were sent came back to the house they saw that the servant was well. 10

And it came about, after a little time, that he went to a town named Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great number of people. 11
Now when he came near the door of the town, a dead man was being taken out, the only son of his mother, who was a widow: and a great number of people from the town were with her. 12
And 13

when the Lord saw her, he had pity on her and said to her, "Be not sad". And he came near, and put his hand on the stretcher where the dead man was: and those who were moving it came to a stop. And he said, "Young man, I say to you, Get up". And the dead man got up, and words came from his lips. And he gave him to his mother. And fear came on all, and they gave praise to God, saying, "A great prophet is among us": and, "God has given thought to his people". And this story about him went through all Judaea and the places round about.

And the disciples of John gave him an account of all these things. Then John sent two of his disciples to the Lord, saying, "Are you he who is to come, or are we waiting for another?" And when the men came to him they said, "John the Baptist has sent us to you saying, 'Are you he who is to come, or are we waiting for another?'" At that time, he made a number of people free from their diseases and their pains, and from evil spirits; and to others who were blind he gave back the use of their eyes. And answering them he said, "Go back and give news to John of what you have seen, and the things which have come to your ears; the blind now see, those who had no power in their legs are walking, lepers are made clean, those who had no hearing now have their ears open, dead men come to life again, and the poor have the good news given to them. And a blessing will be on him who has no doubts about me."

And when the men who were sent by John had gone away, he said to the people, about John, "What did you go out into the waste land to see? grasses, moving in the wind? But what did you go out to see? a man in soft clothing? See now, those who have beautiful clothing and delicate food are in kings' houses. But what did you go out to see? a prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet. This is he of whom it has been said,

See, I send my servant before your face,
Who will make ready your way before you.

I say to you, Among all the sons of women, not one is 28
greater than John: but he who is least in the kingdom
of God is greater than he." And all the people, and 29
the tax-farmers, to whom John had given baptism, when
they had knowledge of these things, gave glory to God.
But the Pharisees and the teachers of the law were 30
against the purpose of God for themselves, not having
had his baptism. "What comparison am I to make of 31
the men of this generation? what are they like? They 32
are like children who are seated in the market-place,
crying out to one another, and saying, 'We made music
for you, but you did not take part in the dance; we gave
cries of sorrow, but you were not sad'. For John the 33
Baptist came, taking no food or drink, and you say, 'He
has an evil spirit'. The Son of man came feasting, and 34
you say, 'Here is a lover of food and wine, a friend of
tax-farmers and sinners'. But wisdom is judged to be 35
right by all her children."

And one of the Pharisees made a request that he 36
would take a meal with him. And he went into the
Pharisee's house and took his seat at the table. And 37
there was a woman in the town who was a sinner; and
when she had news that he was a guest in the Pharisee's
house, she took a bottle of perfume, and went in and 38
took her place at the back of him, near his feet, weeping,
so that his feet were washed with the drops from her
eyes, and with her hair she made them dry, and kissing
his feet she put the perfume on them. Now when the 39
Pharisee in whose house he was, saw it, he said to
himself, "This man, if he was a prophet, would be
conscious what sort of woman this is who has put her
hands on him, that she is a sinner". And Jesus, answering, 40
said, "Simon, I have something to say to you". And
he said, "Master, say on". And he said, "Two men 41
were in debt to a certain man of business: one had a debt
of five hundred pence, and the other of fifty. When they 42
were unable to make payment, he made the two of them
free of their debts. Which of them, now, will have the

greater love for him?" Simon, in answer, said, "It 43
seems he whose debt was greater". And he said, "Your
decision is right". And turning to the woman he said 44
to Simon, "You see this woman? I came into your
house; you did not give me water for my feet: but she
has been washing my feet with the drops from her eyes,
and drying them with her hair. You did not give me 45
a kiss: but she, from the time when I came in, has gone
on kissing my feet. You put no oil on my head: but she 46
has put perfume on my feet. And so I say to you, She 47
will have forgiveness for her sins which are great in
number, because of her great love: but he, who has
small need of forgiveness, gives little love." And he 48
said to her, "You have forgiveness for your sins". And 49
those who were seated at table with him, said to them-
selves, "Who is this who even gives forgiveness of
sins?" And he said to the woman, "By your faith you 50
have salvation; go in peace".

THROUGH GALILEE WITH THE TWELVE

8 AND it came about, after a short time, that he went 1
through town and country giving the good news
of the kingdom of God, and with him were the
twelve, and certain women who had been made free from 2
evil spirits and diseases, Mary named Magdalene, from
whom seven evil spirits had gone out, and Joanna, the 3
wife of Chuza, Herod's chief house-servant, and Susanna
and a number of others, who gave him of their wealth
for his needs.

And when a great number of people came together, 4
and men from every town went out to him, he gave
them teaching in the form of a story: "A man went out 5
to put in seed, and while he was doing it, some was
dropped by the wayside and it was crushed under foot,
and was taken by the birds of heaven. And some went 6
on the rock, and when it came up it became dry and
dead because it had no water. And some went among 7

thorns, and the thorns came up with it and it had no room for growth. And some falling on good earth, came 8
up and gave fruit a hundred times as much." And with these words he said in a loud voice, "He who has ears, let him give ear".

And his disciples put questions to him about the point 9
of the story. And he said, "To you is given knowledge 10
of the secrets of the kingdom of God; but to the others, they are given in stories, so that seeing, they may not see, and though they give hearing, the sense will not be clear to them. Now this is the point of the story: 11
The seed is the word of God. Those by the side of the 12
road are those who have given hearing; then the Evil One comes and takes away the word from their hearts, so that they may not have faith and get salvation. And 13
those on the rock are those who with joy give hearing to the word; but having no root, they have faith for a time, and when the test comes they give up. And 14
those which went among thorns are those who have given hearing, and go on their way, but they are overcome by cares and wealth and the pleasures of life, and they give no fruit. And those in the good earth are 15
those who, having given ear to the word, keep it with a good and true heart, and in quiet strength give fruit.

"No man, when the light is lighted, puts a cover over 16
it, or puts it under a bed, but he puts it on its table, so that those who come in may see the light. For nothing 17
is put out of view which will not be made clear, and nothing is secret of which the knowledge will not come to light. So take care how you give hearing, for to him 18
who has will be given, and from him who has not will be taken even what he seems to have."

And his mother and his brothers came to him, and 19
they were not able to get near him because of the great number of people. And someone said to him, "Your 20
mother and your brothers are outside desiring to see you". But he said to them in answer, "My mother and 21

my brothers are those who have knowledge of the word of God and do it".

Now it came about on one of those days that he got 22
into a boat with his disciples; and he said to them, "Let
us go over to the other side of the water": and they
put out the boat. But while they were sailing he went to 23
sleep: and a storm of wind came down on the sea, and
the boat became full of water and they were in danger.
Then they came to him, and awaking him out of his 24
sleep, said, "Master, master, destruction is near". And
he, when he was awake, gave orders to the wind and
the rolling waves, and the storm came to an end, and
all was calm. And he said to them, "Where is your 25
faith?" And fear and wonder overcame them, and they
said to one another, "Who then is this, who gives orders
even to the winds and the water and they do what he
says?"

IN THE COUNTRY OF THE GERASENES

And they came to the country of the Gerasenes, which 26
is opposite Galilee. And when he had come to the land, 27
there came to him a certain man from the town who
had evil spirits; and for a long time he had had no
clothing on, and was not living in a house but in the
place of the dead. And when he saw Jesus, he gave 28
a loud cry and went down on the earth before him and
in a loud voice said, "What have I to do with you, Jesus,
Son of the Most High God? Do not be cruel to me."
For he gave an order to the evil spirit to come out of 29
the man. For frequently it would take a grip of him:
and he was kept under control, and prisoned with chains;
but parting the chains in two, he would be sent by the
driving of the evil spirit into waste places. And Jesus 30
said to him, "What is your name?" And he said,
"Legion"; for a number of spirits had gone into him.
And they made a request to him that he would not give 31
them an order to go away into the deep. Now there 32

was a great herd of pigs in that place, getting food on the mountain: and the evil spirits made a request to him that he would let them go into the pigs; and he let them. And the evil spirits came out of the man and 33
went into the pigs: and the herd went rushing down a sharp slope into the water and came to destruction. And when the men who took care of them saw what had 34
come about, they took flight and gave news of it in the town and the country. And they went out to see what 35
had taken place, and they came to Jesus and saw the man out of whom the evil spirits had gone, seated, clothed and in full use of his senses, at the feet of Jesus; and fear came on them. And those who had seen it gave 36
them an account of how the man who had the evil spirits was made well. And all the people of the country of the 37
Gerasenes made a request to him to go away from them; for they were in great fear: and he got into a boat and went back. But the man from whom the evil spirits 38
had gone out had a great desire to be with him, but he sent him away, saying, "Go back to your house and let 39
them have news of all the great things which God has done for you". And he went away, giving word through all the town of the great things which Jesus had done for him.

And when Jesus went back, the people were glad to 40
see him, for they were all waiting for him. Then there 41
came a man named Jairus, who was a ruler in the Synagogue: and he went down at the feet of Jesus, desiring him to come to his house; for he had an only daughter, 42
about twelve years old, and she was near to death. But while he was on his way, the people were pushing to be near him.

And a woman, who had had a flow of blood for twelve 43
years, and had given all her money to medical men, and not one of them was able to make her well, came after 44
him and put her hand on the edge of his robe, and straight away the flowing of her blood was stopped. And Jesus 45
said, "Who was touching me?" And when they all said,

"It is not I," Peter and those who were with him said, "Master, the people are pushing round you on every side". But Jesus said, "Someone was touching me, for I had the feeling that power had gone out from me". And when the woman saw that she was not able to keep it secret, she came, shaking with fear, and falling down before him she made clear before all the people the reason for her touching him, and how she was made well straight away. And he said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well; go in peace".

While he was still talking, someone came from the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, saying, "Your daughter is dead; do not go on troubling the Master". But Jesus at these words said to him, "Have no fear, only have faith, and she will be made well". And when he came to the house he did not let any man go in with him, but only Peter and John and James, and the father of the girl and her mother. And all the people were weeping and crying for her; but he said, "Do not be sad, for she is not dead, but sleeping". And they were laughing at him, being certain that she was dead. But he, taking her hand, said to her, "My child, get up". And her spirit came back to her and she got up straight away: and he gave orders that food was to be given to her. And her father and mother were full of wonder, but he gave orders to them to say nothing about it to anyone.

POWERS GIVEN TO THE TWELVE

9 And getting the twelve together, he gave them power and authority over all evil spirits and over diseases, to make them well. And he sent them out to be preachers of the kingdom of God, and to make well those who were ill. And he said to them, "Take nothing for your journey, no stick or bag or bread or money, and do not take two coats. And if you go into a house, let that house be your resting-place till you go away. And if any people will not take you in, when you go away

from that town, put off its dust from your feet for a witness against them." And they went away, journeying through all the towns, preaching the good news and making people free from diseases in all places.

Now Herod the king had news of all these things: and he was in doubt, because it was said by some people that John had come back from the dead; and by some, that Elijah had come; and by others, that one of the old prophets had come back to life. And Herod said, "I put John to death: but who is this, of whom such stories are given to me?" And he had a desire to see him.

THE FIVE CAKES OF BREAD

And the twelve, when they came back, gave him an account of what they had done. And he took them with him and went away from the people to a town named Bethsaida. But the people, getting news of it, went after him: and he was pleased to see them, and gave them teaching about the kingdom of God, and made those well who were in need of it. And the day went on; and the twelve came to him and said, "Send these people away so that they may go into the towns and the country round about and get resting-places and food for themselves, for we are in a waste place". But he said, "Give them food yourselves". And they said, "We have only five cakes of bread, and two fishes, if we do not go and get food for all these people". For there were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, "Make them be seated in groups, about fifty to a group". And they did so, and made them all take their seats. And he took the five cakes of bread and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he said words of blessing over them, and when they had been broken, he gave them to the disciples to give to the people. And they all took the food and had enough; and they took up of the broken bits which were over, twelve baskets full.

And it came about that when he was in prayer, by

himself, and the disciples were with him, he put a question to them, saying, "Who do the people say I am?"
And they, answering, said, "John the Baptist; but others 19
say, Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets has
come back". And he said, "But who do you say that 20
I am?" And Peter, answering, said, "The Christ of
God". But he gave them special orders, not to say this 21
to any man; saying, "The Son of man will undergo 22
much and be put on one side by the rulers and the chief
priests and the teachers of the law, and be put to death,
and on the third day he will come back to life". And he 23
said to them all, "If any man has a desire to come after
me, let him give up all, and take up his cross every day,
and come after me. For whoever has a desire to keep his 24
life will have it taken from him, but whoever gives up
his life because of me, will keep it. For what profit will 25
a man have if he gets all the world, but undergoes loss
or destruction himself? For if any man is shamed because 26
of me or of my words, the Son of man will be shamed
because of him when he comes in his glory and the glory
of the Father and of the holy angels. But truly I say to 27
you, Some of those who are here now will have no taste
of death till they see the kingdom of God."

THE VOICE FROM THE CLOUD

And about eight days after he had said these things, 28
he took Peter and John and James with him and went
up into the mountain for prayer. And while he was at 29
prayer, his face was changed and his clothing became
white and shining. And two men, Moses and Elijah, 30
were talking with him; who were seen in glory and were 31
talking about his death which was about to take place in
Jerusalem. Now Peter and those who were with him 32
were overcome with sleep: but when they were fully
awake, they saw his glory and the two men who were
with him. And when they were about to go away from 33
him, Peter said to Jesus, "Master, it is good that we

are here; let us make three tents, one for you and one
for Moses and one for Elijah": having no knowledge of
what he was saying. And while he said these things, 34
the shade of a cloud came over them, and they were full
of fear when they went into the cloud. And there was 35
a voice from the cloud saying, "This is my Son, the man
of my selection; give ear to him". And after the voice 36
was gone they saw that Jesus was by himself. And they
kept quiet, and said nothing at that time to anyone of
the things which they had seen.

And on the day after, when they came down from the 37
mountain, a great band of people came to him. And 38
a man from among them, crying out, said, "Master,
I make a request to you, give a thought to my son, for
he is my only child: and see, a spirit takes him, and 39
suddenly he gives a cry, twisted in pain and streaming
at the lips, and when it goes away from him at last, he
is marked as from blows. And I made a request to your 40
disciples to send it out of him, but they were not able
to do it." And Jesus said, "O generation without faith 41
and false in heart, how long will I have to be with you,
and put up with you? let your son come here". And 42
while he was coming, he was pushed violently down and
twisted by the evil spirit. But Jesus gave sharp orders
to the unclean spirit, and made the boy well, and gave
him back to his father. And they were full of wonder 43
at the great power of God.

But while they were all wondering at all the things
which he did, he said to his disciples, "Let these words 44
go deep into your ears, for the Son of man will be given
up into the hands of men". But this saying was not 45
clear to them and its sense was kept secret from them
so that they were not able to see it: and they had fear of
questioning him about it.

Now there was a discussion among them about which 46
of them would be the greatest. But when Jesus saw the 47
reasoning of their hearts, he took a small child and put
him by his side, and said to them, "Whoever gives 48

honour to this child in my name, gives honour to me: and whoever gives honour to me, gives honour to him who sent me: for whoever is least among you all, that man is great".

And John, answering, said, "Master, we saw a man 49
driving out evil spirits in your name, and we did not let him do it, because he was not one of us". But Jesus 50
said to him, "Let him do it, for he who is not against you is for you".

ON THE ROAD TO JERUSALEM

And it came about that when the days were near for 51
him to be taken up, his face was turned to go to Jerusalem, and he sent men before: and they came to a small 52
town of Samaria to make ready for him. But they would 53
not have him there, because he was clearly going to Jerusalem. And when his disciples, James and John, saw 54
this, they said, "Lord, may we send fire from heaven and put an end to them?" But turning round he said 55
sharp words to them. And they went to another small 56
town.

And when they were on the way, a certain man said 57
to him, "I will come after you wherever you go". And 58
Jesus said to him, "Foxes have holes and the birds of the air have resting-places, but the Son of man has nowhere to put his head". And he said to another, 59
"Come after me". But he said, "Lord, let me first go and give the last honours to my father". But he said to 60
him, "Let the dead take care of their dead; it is for you to go and give news of the kingdom of God". And 61
another man said, "I will come with you, Lord, but first let me say a last good-day to those who are at my house". But Jesus said, "No man who, having put his 62
hand to the plough, gives a look back, is good enough for the kingdom of God".

ORDERS TO THE SEVENTY

10 Now after these things, the Lord made selection 1
of seventy others and sent them before him, two
together, into every town and place where he
himself was about to come. And he said to them, "There 2
is much grain ready to be cut, but not enough workers:
so make prayer to the Lord of the grain-fields that he
will send workers to get in the grain. Go on your way: 3
see, I send you out like lambs among wolves. Take no 4
bag for money, or for food, and no shoes; say no word
to any man on the way. And whenever you go into 5
a house, first say, 'Peace be to this house'. And if a son 6
of peace is there, your peace will be with him: but if not,
it will come back to you again. And keep in that same 7
house, taking what food and drink they give you: for the
worker has a right to his reward. Do not go from house
to house. And into whatever town you go, if they take 8
you in, take whatever food is given to you: and make 9
well those in it who are ill and say to them, 'The kingdom
of God is near to you'. But if you go into a town where 10
they will not have you, go out into the streets of it and
say, 'Even the dust of your town, which is on our feet, 11
we put off as a witness against you; but be certain of
this, that the kingdom of God is near'. I say to you, It 12
will be better in that day for Sodom than for that town.
A curse is on you, Chorazin! A curse is on you, Beth- 13
saida! For if such works of power had been done in
Tyre and Sidon as have been done in you, they would
have been turned from their sins, in days gone by, seated
in the dust. But it will be better for Tyre and Sidon, in 14
the day of judging, than for you. And you, Capernaum, 15
will you be lifted up to heaven? you will go down to hell.
Whoever gives ear to you, gives ear to me; and whoever 16
is against you, is against me; and whoever is against me,
is against him who sent me."

THE SEVENTY COME BACK WITH JOY

And the seventy came back with joy, saying, "Lord, 17
even the evil spirits are under our power in your name".
And he said, "I saw Satan, falling from heaven like 18
a star. See, I have given you power to put your feet 19
on snakes and evil beasts, and over all the strength of
him who is against you: and nothing will do you damage.
Do not be glad, however, because you have power over 20
spirits, but because your names are recorded in heaven."

In that same hour he was full of joy in the Holy Spirit 21
and said, "I give praise to you, O Father, Lord of heaven
and earth, because you have kept these things secret
from the wise and the men of learning, and have made
them clear to little children: for so, O Father, it was
pleasing in your eyes. All things have been given to 22
me by my Father: and no one has knowledge of the Son,
but only the Father: and of the Father, but only the
Son, and he, to whom the Son will make it clear." And 23
turning to the disciples he said privately, "Happy are
the eyes which see the things you see: for I say to you 24
that numbers of prophets and kings have had a desire
to see the things which you see, and have not seen them,
and to have knowledge of the things which have come
to your ears, and they had it not".

THE PRIEST AND THE LEVITE

And a certain teacher of the law got up and put him 25
to the test, saying, "Master, what have I to do so that
I may have eternal life?" And he said to him, "What 26
does the law say, in your reading of it?" And he, 27
answering, said, "Have love for the Lord your God
with all your heart and with all your soul and with all
your strength and with all your mind; and for your
neighbour as for yourself". And he said, "You have 28
given the right answer: do this and you will have life".
But he, desiring to put himself in the right, said to Jesus, 29

"And who is my neighbour?" And Jesus, answering 30
him, said, "A certain man was going down from Jeru-
salem to Jericho, and he got into the hands of thieves,
who took his clothing and gave him cruel blows, and
when they went away, he was half dead. And by chance 31
a certain priest was going down that way: and when he
saw him, he went by on the other side. And in the 32
same way, a Levite, when he came to the place and saw
him, went by on the other side. But a certain man of 33
Samaria, journeying that way, came where he was, and
when he saw him, he was moved with pity for him, and 34
came to him and put clean linen round his wounds, with
oil and wine; and he put him on his beast and took him
to a house and took care of him. And the day after he 35
took two pennies and gave them to the owner of the
house and said, 'Take care of him; and if this money is
not enough, when I come again I will give you whatever
more is needed'. Which of these three men, in your 36
opinion, was neighbour to the man who came into the
hands of thieves?" And he said, "The one who had 37
mercy on him". And Jesus said, "Go and do the same".

MARTHA AND MARY

Now, while they were on their way, he came to a 38
certain town; and a woman named Martha took him into
her house. And she had a sister, by name Mary, who 39
took her seat at the Lord's feet and gave attention to
his words. But Martha had her hands full of the work 40
of the house, and she came to him and said, "Lord, is it
nothing to you that my sister has let me do all the work?
Say to her that she is to give me some help." But the 41
Lord, answering, said to her, "Martha, Martha, you
are full of care and troubled about such a number of
things: but only one thing is necessary: for Mary has 42
taken that good part, which will not be taken away
from her".

TEACHING ABOUT PRAYER

11 AND it came about that he was in prayer in a certain 1
place, and when he came to an end, one of his
disciples said to him, "Lord, will you give us
teaching about prayer, as John did to his disciples?"
And he said to them, "When you say your prayers, 2
say, 'Father, may your name be kept holy and your
kingdom come. Give us every day bread for our needs. 3
May we have forgiveness for our sins, as we make free 4
all those who are in debt to us. And let us not be put
to the test.'"

And he said to them, "Which of you, having a friend, 5
would go to him in the middle of the night and say to
him, 'Friend, let me have three cakes of bread; because 6
a friend of mine has come to me, on a journey, and I have
nothing to put before him;' and he, from inside the 7
house, would say, in answer, 'Do not be a trouble to
me; the door is now shut, and my children are with
me in bed; it is not possible for me to get up and give
to you'? I say to you, Though he will not get up and 8
give to him, because he is his friend, still, if he keeps
on making his request, he will get up and give him as
much as he has need of. And I say to you, Make requests, 9
and they will be answered; what you are searching for,
you will get; when you give the sign, the door will be
open to you. For to everyone who makes a request, 10
it will be given; and he who is searching will get his
desire; and to him who gives the sign, the door will be
open. And which of you, being a father, will give a stone 11
to his son, who makes request for bread? or for a fish,
will give him a snake? Or for an egg, will give him 12
a *scorpion?* If, then, you who are evil are able to give 13
good things to your children, how much more will your
Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who make
request to him?"

UNCLEAN SPIRITS

And he was sending an evil spirit out of a man who 14
was without the power of talking. And it came about
that when the spirit had gone the man had the power of
talking; and the people were full of wonder. But some 15
of them said, "He sends out evil spirits by Beelzebub,
the ruler of evil spirits". And others, testing him, were 16
looking for a sign from heaven from him. But he, having 17
knowledge of their thoughts, said to them, "Every king-
dom in which there is division is made waste; and a house
in which there is division comes to destruction. If, then, 18
Satan is at war with himself, how will he keep his
kingdom? because you say that I send evil spirits out of
men by the help of Beelzebub. And if I, by Beelzebub, 19
send out evil spirits, by whose help do your sons send
them out? so let them be your judges. But if I, by the 20
finger of God, send out evil spirits, then the kingdom
of God has come on you. When the strong man armed 21
keeps watch over his house, then his goods are safe: but 22
when one who is stronger makes an attack on him and
overcomes him, he takes away his instruments of war,
in which he had put his faith, and makes division of his
goods. He who is not with me is against me, and he 23
who will not give me help in getting people together is
driving them away. The unclean spirit, when he has 24
gone out of a man, goes through dry places, looking
for rest; and when he does not get it, he says, 'I will go
back to my house from which I came'. And when he 25
comes, he sees that it has been made fair and clean. Then 26
he goes and gets seven other spirits more evil than
himself, and they go in, and take their places there:
and the last condition of that man is worse than the
first."

And it came about that when he said these things, 27
a certain woman among the people said in a loud voice,
"Happy is the body which gave you birth, and the
breasts from which you took milk". But he said, "More 28

happy are they who give hearing to the word of God and keep it".

THE SIGN OF JONAH

And when a great number of people came together 29
to him, he said, "This generation is an evil generation:
it is looking for a sign and no sign will be given to it
but the sign of Jonah. For even as Jonah became a sign 30
to the Ninevites, so will the Son of man be to this
generation. The queen of the South will come up on the 31
day of judging and give her decision against the men
of this generation: for she came from the ends of the
earth to give ear to the wisdom of Solomon; and now
one greater than Solomon is here. The men of Nineveh 32
will come up in the day of judging and give their decision
against this generation: for they were turned away from
their sins at the preaching of Jonah; but now one greater
than Jonah is here.

"No man, when the light has been lighted, puts it 33
in a secret place, or under a vessel, but on its table, so
that those who come in may see the light. The light of 34
the body is the eye: when your eye is true, all your body
is full of light; but when it is evil, your body is dark.
So take care that the light which is in you is not dark. 35
If, then, all your body is light, with no part of it 36
dark, it will be completely full of light, as when a flame
with its bright shining gives you light."

THE CURSE ON THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES

Now, while he was talking, a Pharisee made a request 37
that he would come to a meal with him; and he went in
and took his seat at the meal. And when the Pharisee 38
saw it, he was surprised because he came to the meal
without first washing himself. And the Lord said to 39
him, "You Pharisees make the outside of the cup and
the plate clean; but inside you are thieves and full of
evil. O you foolish ones! did not he who made the 40

outside in the same way make the inside? But if you 41
give to the poor such things as you are able, then all
things are clean to you.

"But a curse is on you, Pharisees! for you make men 42
give a tenth of every sort of plant, and give no thought
to right and the love of God; but it is your business to
do these as much as the other things. A curse is on you, 43
Pharisees! for your desires are for the most important
seats in the Synagogues and for words of respect said to
you in the market-place. A curse is on you! for you are 44
like the resting-places of dead men, which are not seen,
and men go walking over them without knowledge of it."

And one of the teachers of the law, answering, said to 45
him, "Master, in saying this, you give a bad name to us
as to them". And he said, "A curse is on you, teachers 46
of the law! for while other men are crushed under the
weight of the rules you make for them, you yourselves
do not put so much as one finger to them. A curse is 47
on you! for you make resting-places for the bodies of
the prophets, but your fathers put them to death. So 48
you are witnesses and give approval to the work of your
fathers; for they put them to death and you make their
last resting-places. For this reason the wisdom of God 49
has said, 'I will send them prophets and teachers, and
to some of them they will give death and cruel pains';
so that punishment may come on this generation for the 50
blood of all the prophets which was given from the
earliest days; from the blood of Abel to the blood of 51
Zachariah, who was put to death between the altar and
the Temple. Yes, I say to you, It will come on this
generation. A curse is on you, teachers of the law! for 52
you have taken away the key of knowledge: you did not
go in yourselves, and you got in the way of those who
were going in."

And when he had come out of that place, the scribes 53
and the Pharisees came round him angrily, questioning
him about more things; and watching him, for a chance 54
to get something out of his mouth.

THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES

12 At that time, when thousands of the people had come 1
together, in such numbers that they were crushing
one another, he said first to his disciples, "Have
nothing to do with the leaven of the Pharisees, which is
deceit. But nothing is covered up, which will not come 2
to light, or secret, which will not be made clear. So, 3
whatever you have said in the dark, will come to men's
hearing in the light, and what you have said secretly
inside the house, will be made public from the house-tops.
And I say to you, my friends, Have no fear of those who 4
may put the body to death, and are able to do no more
than that. But I will make clear to you of whom you 5
are to be in fear: of him who after death has power to
send you to hell; yes, truly I say, Have fear of him. Are 6
not five *sparrows* given in exchange for two farthings?
and God has every one of them in mind. But even the 7
hairs of your head are numbered. Have no fear: you
are of more value than a flock of sparrows. And I say 8
to you that to everyone who gives witness to me before
men, the Son of man will give witness before the angels
of God. But if anyone says before men that he has no 9
knowledge of me, I will say that I have no knowledge
of him before the angels of God. And if anyone says 10
a word against the Son of man, he will have forgiveness:
but for him who says evil words against the Holy Spirit,
there will be no forgiveness. And when they take you 11
before the Synagogues and the authorities and the rulers,
take no thought about what answers you will give, or
what you will say: for the Holy Spirit will make clear 12
to you in that very hour what to say."

THOUGHT FOR TODAY AND TOMORROW

And one of the people said to him, "Master, give an 13
order to my brother to make division of the heritage
with me". But he said, "Man, who made me a judge 14

or a maker of decisions for you?" And he said to them, 15
"Take care to keep yourselves free from the desire for property; for a man's life is not made up of the number of things which he has". And he said to them, in a story, 16
"The land of a certain man of great wealth was very fertile: and he said to himself, 'What is to be done, for 17
I have no place in which to put all my fruit?' And he 18
said, 'This I will do: I will take down my storehouses and make greater ones, and there I will put all my grain and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, you 19
have a great amount of goods in store, enough for a number of years; be at rest, take food and wine and be happy.' But God said to him, 'You foolish one, tonight 20
I will take your soul from you, and who then will be the owner of all the things which you have got together?' So that is what comes to the man who gets wealth for 21
himself, and has not wealth in the eyes of God."

And he said to his disciples, "For this reason I say 22
to you, Take no thought for your life, about what food you will take, or for your body, how it may be clothed. Is not life more than food, and the body than its clothing? 23
Give thought to the ravens; they do not put seeds into 24
the earth, or get together grain; they have no storehouses or buildings; and God gives them their food: of how much greater value are you than the birds! And 25
which of you by taking thought is able to make himself any taller? If, then, you are not able to do even that 26
which is least, why are you troubled about the rest? Give thought to the flowers: they do no work, they 27
make no thread; and still I say to you, Even Solomon, in all his glory, was not clothed like one of these. But 28
if God gives such clothing to the grass in the fields which today is living, and tomorrow will be burned in the oven, how much more will he give clothing to you, O men of little faith? And do not give overmuch thought to your 29
food and drink, and let not your mind be full of doubts. For the nations of the world go in search of all these 30
things: but your Father has knowledge that you have

need of them. But let your chief care be for his kingdom, 31
and these other things will be given to you in addition.
Have no fear, little flock, for it is your Father's good 32
pleasure to give you the kingdom. Give what property 33
you have in exchange for money, and give the money
to the poor; make for yourselves money-bags which will
not get old, wealth stored up in heaven which will be
yours for ever, where thieves will not come nor worms
put it to destruction. For where your wealth is, there 34
will your heart be.

THE COMING OF THE SON OF MAN

"Be ready, dressed as for a journey, with your lights 35
burning. And be like men who are looking for their lord, 36
when he comes back from the bride-feast; so that when
he comes to the door, it will be open to him quickly.
Happy are those servants who are watching when the 37
lord comes; Truly, I say to you, He will make himself
their servant and, placing them at the table, he will come
out and give them food. And if he comes in the second 38
division of the night or in the third, and they are watching
for him, happy are those servants. But be certain of 39
this, that if the master of the house had had knowledge
of the time when the thief was coming, he would have
been watching and not have let his house be broken into.
So be ready: for the Son of man is coming at a time when 40
you are not looking for him."

And Peter said to him, "Lord, are these words said 41
to us only, or to all men?" And the Lord said, "Who 42
then is the wise and responsible servant whom his lord
will put in control of his family, to give them their food
at the right time? Happy is that servant who when his 43
lord comes, is doing so. Truly, I say to you, He will 44
put him in control of all his goods. But if that servant 45
says to himself, 'My lord is a long time coming'; and
goes about giving blows to the men-servants and the
women-servants, feasting and taking overmuch wine;

the lord of that servant will come at a time when he is 46
not looking for him, and at an hour when he is not ready
for him, and he will have him cut in two and give him
his part in the fate of those who have no faith; and the 47
servant who had knowledge of his lord's desires and
was not ready for him and did not do as he was ordered,
will be given a great number of blows; but he who, 48
without knowledge, did things for which punishment is
given, will get only a small number of blows. The man
to whom much is given, will have to give much; if much
is given into his care, of him more will be requested.

"I came to send a fire on the earth; and it may even 49
now have been lighted. But there is a baptism which 50
I have to undergo; and how am I kept back till it is
complete! Is it your opinion that I have come to give 51
peace on earth? I say to you, No, but division: for from 52
this time, a family of five in one house will be on opposite
sides, three against two and two against three. They will 53
be at war, the father against his son, and the son against
his father; mother against daughter, and daughter against
mother; mother-in-law against daughter-in-law, and
daughter-in-law against mother-in-law."

Then he said to the people, "When you see a cloud 54
coming up in the west, straight away you say, 'There
will be rain'; and so it is. And when you see a south 55
wind blowing, you say, 'There will be heat'; and so it is.
O false ones! the face of the earth and the heaven is 56
clear to you; how is it that the signs of these times are
not as clear to you? And why are you, in your hearts, 57
unable to be judges of what is right? For if anyone has 58
a cause at law against you, and you are going with him
before the ruler, make an attempt, on the way, to come
to an agreement with him, for if you do not, he may take
you before the judge and the judge will give you up to
the police, and they will put you in prison. I say to you, 59
You will not come out of it till you have made payment
to the very last farthing."

13 Now some people who were there at that time, 1
gave him an account of how the blood of some
Galilaeans had been mixed by Pilate with their
offerings. And he, in answer, said to them, "Are you 2
of the opinion that these Galilaeans were worse than
all other Galilaeans, because these things were done to
them? I say to you, It is not so: but if your hearts are 3
not changed, you will all come to the same end. Or 4
those eighteen men who were crushed by the fall of the
tower of Siloam, were they worse than all the other men
living in Jerusalem? I say to you, It is not so: but if 5
your hearts are not changed, you will all come to an end
in the same way."

And he made up this story for them: "A certain man 6
had a *fig*-tree in his garden, and he came to get fruit
from it, and there was no fruit. And he said to the 7
gardener, 'See, for three years I have been looking for
fruit from this tree, and I have not had any: let it be cut
down; why is it taking up space?' And he said, 'Lord, 8
let it be for this year, and I will have the earth turned
up round it, and put animal waste on it, to make it
fertile: and if, after that, it has fruit, it is well; if not, 9
let it be cut down'."

And he was teaching in one of the Synagogues on the 10
Sabbath. And there was a woman who had had a disease 11
for eighteen years; she was bent, and was not able to
make herself straight. And when Jesus saw her, he said 12
to her, "Woman, you are made free from your disease".
And he put his hands on her, and she was made straight, 13
and gave praise to God. And the ruler of the Synagogue 14
was angry because Jesus had made her well on the
Sabbath, and he said to the people, "There are six days
in which men may do work: so come on those days to
be made well, and not on the Sabbath". But the Lord 15
gave him an answer and said, "O you false men! do
you not, every one of you, on the Sabbath, let loose his

ox and his ass and take it to the water? And is it not 16
right for this daughter of Abraham, who has been in the
power of Satan for eighteen years, to be made free on
the Sabbath?" And when he said these things, those 17
who were against him were shamed, and all the people
were full of joy because of the great things which were
done by him.

THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Then he said, "What is the kingdom of God like? 18
what comparison may I make of it? It is like a grain of 19
mustard-seed which a man took and put in his garden,
and it became a tree, and the birds of heaven made their
resting-places in its branches." And again he said, 20
"What is the kingdom of God like? It is like leaven, 21
which a woman put into three measures of meal, and it
was all leavened."

And he went on his way, through towns and country 22
places, teaching and journeying to Jerusalem. And some- 23
one said to him, "Lord, will only a small number have
salvation?" And he said to them, "Do your best to go 24
in by the narrow door, for I say to you, A number will
make the attempt to go in, but will not be able to do so.
When the master of the house has got up, and the door 25
has been shut, and you, still outside, give blows on the
door, saying, 'Lord, let us in'; he will make answer and
say, 'I have no knowledge of where you come from'.
Then you will say, 'We have taken food and drink with 26
you, and you were teaching in our streets'. But he will 27
say, 'Truly, I have no knowledge of you or where you
come from; go away from me, you workers of evil'.
There will be weeping and sounds of sorrow when you 28
see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in
the kingdom of God, but you yourselves are shut outside.
And they will come from the east and from the west, 29
from the north and from the south, and take their places
in the kingdom of God. And the last will be first, and 30
the first will be last."

At that time, certain Pharisees came to him and said, 31
"Go away from this place, because Herod's purpose is
to put you to death". And he said, "Go and say to that 32
fox, I send out evil spirits and do works of mercy today
and tomorrow, and on the third day my work will be
complete. But I have to go on my way today and to- 33
morrow and the third day, for it is not right for a prophet
to come to his death outside Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, 34
Jerusalem, putting to death the prophets, and stoning
those who were sent to her! again and again would I have
taken your children to myself, as a bird takes her young
ones under her wings, but you would not! Now see, 35
your house is waste, and I say to you, You will not see
me again till you say, 'A blessing on him who comes in
the name of the Lord'."

IN THE HOUSE OF THE PHARISEE

14 AND it came about that when he went into the house 1
of one of the chief Pharisees on the Sabbath, to
have a meal, they were watching him. And a 2
certain man was there who had a disease. And Jesus, 3
answering, said to the scribes and Pharisees. "Is it right
to make people well on the Sabbath or not?" But they 4
said nothing. And he made him well and sent him away.
And he said to them, "Which of you, whose ox or ass 5
has got into a water-hole, will not straight away get
him out on the Sabbath?" And they had no answer to 6
that question.

And he gave teaching in the form of a story to the 7
guests who came to the feast, when he saw how they
took the best seats; saying to them, "When you get 8
a request to come to a feast, do not take the best seat,
for a more important man than you may be coming, and 9
then the giver of the feast will come to you and say,
'Give your place to this man'; and you, with shame,
will have to take the lowest seat. But when you come, 10
go and take the lowest seat, so that when the giver of

the feast comes, he may say to you, 'Friend, go up higher'; and then you will have honour in the eyes of all the others who are there. For every man who gives himself a high place will be put down, but he who takes a low place, will be lifted up." 11

And he said to the master of the house, "When you give a feast, do not send for your friends and your brothers and your family or your neighbours who have wealth, for they may give a feast for you, and so you will get a reward. But when you give a feast, send for the poor, and the blind, and those who are broken in body: and you will have a blessing, because they will not be able to give you any payment, and you will get your reward when the upright come back from the dead." 12 13 14

And, hearing these words, one of those who were at table with him said to him, "Happy is the man who will be a guest in the kingdom of God". And he said to them, "A certain man gave a great feast, and sent word of it to a number of people. And when the time had come, he sent his servants to say to them, 'Come, for all things are now ready'. And they all gave reasons why they were not able to come. The first said to him, 'I have got a new field, and it is necessary for me to go and see it: I am full of regret that I am unable to come'. And another said, 'I have got some cattle, and I am going to make a test of them: I am full of regret that I am unable to come'. And another said, 'I have been married, and so I am not able to come'. And the servant came back, and gave his master an account of these things. Then the master of the house was angry and said to the servant, 'Go out quickly into the streets of the town and get the poor, the blind, and those who are broken in body'. And the servant said, 'Lord, your orders have been done, and still there is room'. And the lord said to the servant, 'Go out into the roads and the fields, and make them come in, so that my house may be full. For I say to you that not one of those who were requested to come will have a taste of my feast.'" 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24

Now a great number of people went with him. 25
And turning round, he said to them, "If any man comes 26
to me, and has not hate for his father and mother and
wife and children and brothers and sisters, and even for
his life, he may not be my disciple. Whoever does not 27
take up his cross and come after me may not be my
disciple. For which of you, desiring to put up a tower, 28
does not first give much thought to the price, if he will
have enough to make it complete? For fear that if he 29
makes a start and is not able to go on with it to the end,
all who see it will be laughing at him, and saying, 'This 30
man made a start at building and is not able to make it
complete'. Or what king, going to war with another 31
king, will not first take thought whether he will be
strong enough, with ten thousand men, to keep off him
who comes against him with twenty thousand? Or while 32
the other is still a great distance away, he sends repre-
sentatives requesting conditions of peace. And so who- 33
ever is not ready to give up all he has may not be my
disciple. For salt is good, but if the taste goes from it, 34
of what use is it? It is no good for the land or for the 35
place of waste; no one has a use for it. He who has ears,
let him give ear."

15 Now all the tax-farmers and sinners came near to 1
give ear to him. And the Pharisees and scribes 2
were angry, saying, "This man gives approval
to sinners, and takes food with them".

And he made a story for them, saying, "What man 3, 4
of you, having a hundred sheep, if one of them gets loose
and goes away, will not let the ninety-nine be in the
waste land by themselves, and go after the wandering
one, till he sees where it is? And when he has got it 5
again, he takes it in his arms with joy. And when he 6
gets back to his house, he sends for his neighbours and
friends, saying to them, 'Be glad with me, for I have
got back my sheep which had gone away'. I say to you 7
that even so there will be more joy in heaven when one

sinner is turned away from his wrongdoing, than for ninety-nine good men, who have no need of a change of heart.

"Or what woman, having ten bits of silver, if one 8
bit has gone from her hands, will not get a light, and go through her house, searching with care till she sees it? And when she has it again, she gets her friends and neigh- 9
bours together, saying, 'Be glad with me, for I have got back the bit of silver which had gone from me'. Even so, 10
I say to you, There is joy among the angels of God, when one sinner is turned away from his wrongdoing."

And he said, "A certain man had two sons: and the 11 12
younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me that part of your property which will be mine'. And he made division of his goods between them. And not long after, 13
the younger son got together everything which was his and took a journey into a far-away country, and there all his money went in foolish living. And when every- 14
thing was gone, there was no food to be had in that country, and he was in need. And he went and put 15
himself into the hands of one of the people of that country, and he sent him into his fields to give the pigs their food. And so great was his need that he would 16
have been glad to take the pigs' food, and no one gave him anything. But when he came to his senses, he said, 17
'What numbers of my father's servants have bread enough, and more, while I am near to death here through need of food! I will get up and go to my father, and 18
will say to him, Father, I have done wrong, against heaven and in your eyes: I am no longer good enough 19
to be named your son: make me like one of your servants.' And he got up and went to his father. But while he was 20
still far away, his father saw him and was moved with pity for him and went quickly and took him in his arms and gave him a kiss. And his son said to him, 'Father, 21
I have done wrong against heaven and in your eyes: I am not good enough to be named your son'. But the 22
father said to his servants, 'Get out the best robe quickly,

and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes
on his feet: and get the fat young ox and put it to death, 23
and let us have a feast, and be glad. For this, my son, 24
who was dead, is living again; he had gone away from
me, and has come back.' And they were full of joy.
Now the older son was in the field: and when he came 25
near the house, the sounds of music and dancing came to
his ears. And he sent for one of the servants, questioning 26
him about what it might be. And he said to him, 'Your 27
brother has come; and your father has had the young ox
put to death because he has come back safely'. But he 28
was angry and would not go in; and his father came out
and made a request to him to come in. But he made 29
answer, and said to his father, 'See, all these years I have
been your servant, doing your orders in everything: and
you never gave me even a young goat so that I might
have a feast with my friends: but when this your son 30
came, who has been wasting your property with bad
women, you put to death the fat young ox for him'.
And he said to him, 'Son, you are with me at all times, 31
and all I have is yours. But it was right to be glad and 32
to have a feast; for this your brother, who was dead,
is living again; he had gone away and has come back.'"

SERVANTS AND MASTERS

16 AND another time he said to the disciples, "There 1
was a certain man of great wealth who had a
servant; and it was said to him that this servant
was wasting his goods. And he sent for him and said, 2
'What is this which is said about you? give me an
account of all you have done, for you will no longer be
the manager of my property'. And the servant said to 3
himself, 'What am I to do now that my lord takes away
my position? I have not enough strength for working
in the fields, and I would be shamed if I made requests
for money from people in the streets. I have come to 4
a decision what to do, so that when I am put out of my

position they will take me into their houses.' And sending 5
for every one of his lord's debtors he said to the first,
'What is the amount of your debt to my lord?' And he 6
said, 'A hundred measures of oil'. And he said, 'Take
your account straight away and put down fifty'. Then 7
he said to another, 'What is the amount of your debt?'
And he said, 'A hundred measures of grain'. And he
said to him, 'Take your account and put down eighty'.
And his lord was pleased with the false servant, because 8
he had been wise; for the sons of this world are wiser
in their generation than the sons of light. And I say 9
to you, Make friends for yourselves through the wealth
of this life, so that when it comes to an end, you may
be taken into the eternal resting-places. He who is true 10
in a little, is true in much; he who is false in small things,
is false in great. If, then, you have not been true in 11
your use of the wealth of this life, who will give into
your care the true wealth? And if you have not been 12
true in your care of the property of other people, who
will give you that which is yours? No man may be 13
a servant to two masters: for he will have hate for the
one and love for the other; or he will keep to the one
and have no respect for the other. You may not be
servants of God and of wealth."

And the Pharisees, who had a great love of money, 14
hearing these things, were making sport of him. And 15
he said, "You take care to seem right in the eyes of
men, but God sees your hearts: and those things which
are important in the opinion of men, are evil in the eyes
of God. The law and the prophets were till John: but 16
then came the preaching of the kingdom of God, and,
everyone makes his way into it by force. But heaven 17
and earth will come to an end before the smallest letter
of the law may be dropped out. Everyone who puts 18
away his wife and takes another, is untrue in married
life: and he who is married to a woman whose husband
has put her away, is untrue in married life.

. "Now there was a certain man of great wealth, who 19

was dressed in fair clothing of purple and delicate linen,
and was shining and glad every day. And a certain poor 20
man, named Lazarus, was stretched out at his door, full
of wounds, desiring the broken bits of food which came 21
from the table of the man of wealth; and even the dogs
came and put their tongues on his wounds. And in time 22
the poor man came to his end, and angels took him to
Abraham's breast. And the man of wealth came to his
end, and was put in the earth. And in hell, being in 23
great pain, lifting up his eyes he saw Abraham, far away,
and Lazarus on his breast. And he gave a cry and said, 24
'Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus,
so that he may put the end of his finger in water and
put it on my tongue, for I am cruelly burning in this
flame'. But Abraham said, 'Keep in mind, my son, that 25
when you were living, you had your good things, while
Lazarus had evil things: but now, he is comforted and
you are in pain. And in addition, there is a deep division 26
fixed between us and you, so that those who might go
from here to you are not able to do so, and no one may
come from you to us.' And he said, 'Father, it is my 27
request that you will send him to my father's house;
for I have five brothers; and let him give them an account 28
of these things, so that they may not come to this place
of pain'. But Abraham said, 'They have Moses and the 29
prophets; let them give ear to what they say'. And he 30
said, 'No, father Abraham, but if someone went to them
from the dead, their hearts would be changed'. And he 31
said to him, 'If they will not give attention to Moses and
the prophets, they will not be moved even if someone
comes back from the dead'."

FORGIVENESS

AND he said to his disciples, "It is necessary for causes 1
of trouble to come about, but unhappy is he by
whom they come. It would be well for him if 2
a great stone was put round his neck and he was dropped

into the sea, before he made trouble for any of these
little ones. Give attention to yourselves: if your brother 3
does wrong, say a sharp word to him; and if he has
sorrow for his sin, let him have forgiveness. And if he 4
does you wrong seven times in a day, and seven times
comes to you and says, 'I have regret for what I have
done'; let him have forgiveness."

And the twelve said to the Lord, "Make our faith 5
greater". And the Lord said, "If your faith was only 6
as great as a grain of *mustard*-seed, you might say to
this tree, 'Be rooted up and planted in the sea'; and
it would be done. But which of you, having a servant 7
who is ploughing or keeping sheep, will say to him,
when he comes in from the field, 'Come now and be
seated and have a meal'; will he not say, 'Get a meal 8
for me, and make yourself ready and see to my needs
till I have had my food and drink; and after that you
may have yours'? Does he give praise to the servant 9
because he did what was ordered? In the same way, 10
when you have done all the things which are given you
to do, say, 'There is no profit in us, for we have only
done what we were ordered to do'."

"WHERE ARE THE NINE?"

And it came about that when they were on the way 11
to Jerusalem he went through Samaria and Galilee. And 12
when he went into a certain small town he came across
ten men who were lepers, and they, keeping themselves
at a distance, said, in loud voices, "Jesus, Master, have 13
mercy on us". And when he saw them he said, "Go, 14
and let the priests see you". And while they were going,
they were made clean. And one of them, when he saw 15
that he was clean, turning back, gave praise to God in
a loud voice; and falling down on his face at the feet 16
of Jesus, he gave the credit to him; and he was a man of
Samaria. And Jesus said, "Were there not ten men who 17
were made clean; where are the nine? Have not any of 18

them come back to give glory to God, but only this
one from a strange land?" And he said to him, "Get up, 19
and go on your way; your faith has made you well".

THE KINGDOM OF GOD

And when the Pharisees put questions to him about 20
when the kingdom of God would come, he gave them
an answer and said, "The kingdom of God will not
come through observation: and men will not say, 'See, 21
it is here!' or, 'There!' for the kingdom of God is in
your hearts".

And he said to his disciples, "The time will come 22
when you will have a great desire to see one of the days
of the Son of man, but you will not see it. And if they 23
say to you, 'See, it is there!' or, 'It is here!' do not go
away, or go after them. For as, in a thunderstorm, the 24
bright light is seen from one end of the sky to the other,
so will the Son of man be when his time comes. But 25
first, he will have to undergo much and be put on one
side by this generation. And as it was in the days of 26
Noah, so will it be in the day of the Son of man. They 27
were feasting and taking wives and getting married, till
the day of the overflowing of the waters, when Noah
went into the ark, and they all came to destruction. In 28
the same way, in the days of Lot; they were feasting
and trading, they were planting and building; but on 29
the day when Lot went out of Sodom, fire came down
from heaven and destruction came on them all. So will 30
it be in the day of the revelation of the Son of man. On 31
that day, if anyone is on the roof of the house, and his
goods are in the house, let him not go down to take
them away; and let him who is in the field not go back
to his house. Keep in mind Lot's wife. If anyone makes 32 33
an attempt to keep his life, it will be taken from him,
but if anyone gives up his life, he will keep it. I say 34
to you, In that night there will be two men sleeping in
one bed, and one will be taken away and the other let

go. Two women will be crushing grain together; one 35
will be taken away and the other let go." And they, 37
answering him, said, "Where, Lord?" And he said to
them, "Where the body is, there will the eagles come
together".

THE PHARISEE AND THE TAX-FARMER

18 AND he made a story for them, the point of which was 1
that men were to go on making prayer and not
get tired; saying, "There was a judge in a certain 2
town, who had no fear of God or respect for man: and 3
there was a widow in that town, and she kept on coming
to him and saying, 'Give me my right against the man
who has done me wrong'. And for a time he would not: 4
but later, he said to himself, 'Though I have no fear of
God or respect for man, because this widow is a trouble 5
to me, I will give her her right; for if not, I will be
completely tired out by her frequent coming'." And 6
the Lord said, "Give ear to the words of the evil judge.
And will not God do right in the cause of his saints, 7
whose cries come day and night to his ears, though he
is long in doing it? I say to you that he will quickly 8
do right in their cause. But when the Son of man comes,
will there be any faith on earth?"

And he made this story for some people who were 9
certain that they were good, and had a low opinion of
others: "Two men went up to the Temple for prayer; 10
one a Pharisee, and the other a tax-farmer. The Pharisee, 11
taking up his position, said to himself these words: 'God,
I give you praise because I am not like other men, who
take more than their right, who are evil-doers, who are
untrue to their wives, or even like this tax-farmer. Twice 12
in the week I go without food; I give a tenth of all
I have.' The tax-farmer, on the other hand, keeping far 13
away, and not lifting up even his eyes to heaven, made
signs of grief and said, 'God have mercy on me, a sinner'.
I say to you, This man went back to his house with God's 14
approval, and not the other: for everyone who makes

himself high will be made low and whoever makes himself low will be made high."

And they took their children to him, so that he might 15
put his hands on them: but when the disciples saw it,
they said sharp words to them. But Jesus sent for them, 16
saying, "Let the children come to me, and do not keep
them away, for of such is the kingdom of heaven. Truly, 17
I say to you, Whoever does not put himself under the
kingdom of God like a little child, will not come into
it at all."

And a certain ruler put a question to him, saying, 18
"Good Master, what have I to do so that I may come
into eternal life?" And Jesus said to him, "Why do 19
you say that I am good? No one is good, but only God.
You have knowledge of what the law says: 'Do not be 20
untrue to your wife, Do not put anyone to death, Do not
take what is not yours, Do not give false witness, Give
honour to your father and mother'." And he said, "All 21
these things I have done from the time when I was
a boy". And Jesus, hearing it, said to him, "One thing 22
you still have need of; get money for your goods, and
give it away to the poor, and you will have wealth in
heaven; and come after me". But at these words, he 23
became very sad, for he had great wealth. And Jesus, 24
looking at him, said, "How hard it is for those who have
wealth to get into the kingdom of God! It is simpler 25
for a *camel* to go through the eye of a needle, than for
a man who has much money to come into the kingdom
of God." And those who were present said, "Then who 26
may have salvation?" But he said, "Things which are 27
not possible with man are possible with God". And 28
Peter said, "See, we have given up what is ours to come
after you". And he said to them, "Truly, I say to you, 29
There is no man who has given up house or wife or
brothers or father or mother or children, because of the
kingdom of God, who will not get much more in this 30
time, and in the world to come, eternal life".

And he took with him the twelve and said to them, 31

"Now we are going up to Jerusalem, and all the things which were said by the prophets will be done to the Son of man. For he will be given up to the Gentiles, 32
and will be made sport of and put to shame: and he will 33
be given cruel blows and put to death, and on the third day he will come back to life." But they did not take 34
in the sense of any of these words, and what he said was not clear to them, and their minds were not able to see it.

And it came about that when he got near Jericho, 35
a certain blind man was seated by the side of the road, making requests for money from those who went by. And hearing the sound of a great number of people 36
going by, he said, "What is this?" And they said to 37
him, "Jesus of Nazareth is going by". And he said in 38
a loud voice, "Jesus, son of David, have mercy on me". And those who were in front made protests and said to 39
him, "Be quiet": but he said all the more, "O son of David, have mercy on me". And Jesus, stopping, gave 40
orders that he was to come to him, and when he came near, he said to him, "What would you have me do for 41
you?" And he said, "Lord, that I may be able to see again". And Jesus said, "See again: your faith has made 42
you well". And straight away he was able to see, and 43
he went after him, giving glory to God; and all the people when they saw it gave praise to God.

FROM JERICHO TO JERUSALEM

19 AND he went into Jericho, and when he was going 1
through it, a man named Zacchaeus, who was the 2
chief tax-farmer and a man of wealth, made an 3
attempt to get a view of Jesus and was not able to do so because of the people, for he was a small man. And 4
he went quickly in front of them and got up into a tree to see him, for he was going that way. And when Jesus 5
came to the place, looking up, he said to him, "Zacchaeus, be quick and come down, for I am coming to your house

today". And he came down quickly, and took him into 6
his house with joy. And when they saw it, they were 7
all angry, saying, "He has gone into the house of a
sinner". And Zacchaeus, waiting before him, said to the 8
Lord, "See, Lord, half of my goods I give to the poor,
and if I have taken anything from anyone wrongly, I give
him back four times as much". And Jesus said to him, 9
"Today salvation has come to this house, for even he
is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man came to make 10
search for those who are wandering from the way, and
to be their Saviour."

And while they were giving ear to these words, he 11
made another story for them, because he was near
Jerusalem, and because they were of the opinion that
the kingdom of God was coming straight away. So he 12
said, "A certain man of high birth went into a far-away
country to get a kingdom for himself, and to come back.
And he sent for ten of his servants and gave them ten 13
pounds and said to them, 'Do business with this till
I come'. But his people had no love for him, and sent 14
representatives after him, saying, 'We will not have
this man for our ruler'. And when he came back again, 15
having got his kingdom, he gave orders for those ser-
vants to whom he had given the money, to come to him,
so that he might have an account of what business they
had done. And the first came before him, saying, 'Lord, 16
your pound has made ten more'. And he said to him, 17
'You have done well, O good servant: because you have
done well in a small thing you will have authority over
ten towns'. And another came, saying, 'Your pound 18
has made five pounds'. And he said, 'You will be ruler 19
over five towns'. And another came, saying, 'Lord, 20
here is your pound, which I put away in a cloth; because 21
I was in fear of you, for you are a hard man: you take
up what you have not put down, and get in grain where
you have not put seed'. He said to him, 'By the words 22
of your mouth will you be judged, you bad servant. You
had knowledge that I am a hard man, taking up what

I have not put down and getting in grain where I have
not put seed; why then did you not put my money in 23
a bank, so that when I came I would get it back with
interest?' And he said to the others who were near, 24
'Take the pound away from him, and give it to the man
who has ten'. And they say to him, 'Lord, he has ten 25
pounds'. 'And I say to you that to everyone who has, 26
more will be given, but from him who has not, even
what he has will be taken away. And as for those who 27
were against me, who would not have me for their ruler,
let them come here, and be put to death before me.'"

And when he had said this, he went on in front of 28
them, going up to Jerusalem.

And it came about that when he got near Bethphage 29
and Bethany by the mountain which is named the Mount
of Olives, he sent two of the disciples, saying, "Go into 30
the little town in front of you, and on going in you will
see a young ass fixed with a cord, on which no man has
ever been seated; let him loose and take him. And if 31
anyone says to you, 'Why are you taking him?' say,
'The Lord has need of him'." And those whom he sent 32
went away, and it was as he said. And when they were 33
getting the young ass, the owners of it said to them,
"Why are you taking the young ass?" And they said, 34
"The Lord has need of him". And they took him to 35
Jesus, and they put their clothing on the ass, and Jesus
got on to him. And while he went on his way they put 36
their clothing down on the road in front of him. And 37
when he came near the foot of the mountain of Olives,
all the disciples with loud voices gave praise to God
with joy, because of all the great works which they had
seen; saying, "A blessing on the King who comes in 38
the name of the Lord; peace in heaven and glory in the
highest". And some of the Pharisees among the people 39
said to him, "Master, make your disciples be quiet".
And he said, in answer, "I say to you, If these men keep 40
quiet, the very stones will be crying out".

And when he got near and saw the town, he was 41

overcome with weeping for it, saying, "If you, even you, 42
had knowledge today, of the things which give peace!
but you are not able to see them. For the time will 43
come when your attackers will put a wall round you,
and come all round you and keep you in on every side,
and will make you level with the earth, and your children 44
with you; and there will not be one stone resting on
another in you, because you did not see that it was your
day of mercy."

And he went into the Temple and put out those who 45
were trading there, saying to them, "It has been said, 46
'My house is to be a house of prayer,' but you have made
it a hole of thieves".

And every day he was teaching in the Temple. But 47
the chief priests and the scribes and the rulers of the
people were attempting to put him to death; but they 48
were not able to do anything, because the people all
kept near him, being greatly interested in his words.

TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE

20 And it came about on one of those days, when he 1
was teaching the people in the Temple and preach-
ing the good news, that the chief priests and the 2
scribes and the rulers of the people came to him and
said, "Make clear to us by what authority you do these
things and who gave you this authority". And in answer 3
he said to them, "I will put a question to you, and do
you give me an answer: The baptism of John, was it 4
from heaven or of men?" And they said among them- 5
selves, "If we say, 'From heaven'; he will say, 'Why
did you not have faith in him?' But if we say, 'Of men'; 6
we will be stoned by the people, for they are certain
that John was a prophet." And they made answer that 7
they had no idea where it came from. And Jesus said, 8
"And I will not make clear to you by what authority
I do these things".

And he gave the people this story: "A man made 9

a vine-garden and gave the use of it to some field workers
and went into another country for a long time. And at 10
the right time he sent a servant to the workers to get
part of the fruit from the vines; but the workmen gave
him blows and sent him away with nothing. And he 11
sent another servant, and they gave blows to him in the
same way, and put shame on him, and sent him away
with nothing. And he sent a third, and they gave him 12
wounds and put him out. And the lord of the garden 13
said, 'What am I to do? I will send my dearly-loved
son; they may give respect to him.' But when the work- 14
men saw him, they said to one another, 'This is he who
will one day be the owner of the property: let us put
him to death and the heritage will be ours'. And driving 15
him out of the garden they put him to death. Now what
will the lord do to these workmen? He will come and 16
put them to destruction and give the garden to others."
And when he said this, they said, "May it not be so".
But he, looking on them, said, "Is it not in the Writings, 17

The stone which the builders put on one side,
Was made the chief stone of the building?

Everyone falling on that stone will be broken, but the man 18
on whom the stone comes down will be crushed to dust."

And the chief priests and the scribes made attempts 19
to get their hands on him in that very hour; and they
were in fear of the people, for they saw that he had made
up this story against them. And they kept watch on 20
him, and sent out secret representatives, who were acting
the part of good men, in order that they might get
something from his words, on account of which they
might give him up to the government and into the power
of the ruler. And they put a question to him, saying, 21
"Master, we are certain that your teaching and your
words are right, and that you have no respect for a man's
position, but you are teaching the true way of God:
Is it right for us to make payment of taxes to Caesar 22
or not?" But he saw through their trick and said to 23

them, "Let me see a penny. Whose image and name are 24
on it?" And they said, "Caesar's". And he said, "Then 25
give to Caesar the things which are Caesar's, and to God
the things which are God's". And they were not able 26
to get anything from these words before the people: but
they were full of wonder at his answer, and said nothing.

And some of the Sadducees came to him, who say 27
that there is no future life; and they said to him, "Master, 28
Moses said that if a man's brother comes to his end,
having a wife, but no children, his brother is to take
the wife, and get a family for his brother. Now there 29
were seven brothers, and the first had a wife and
came to his end, having no children; and the second; 30
and the third took her; and in the same way, all the 31
seven, without having any children, came to their
end. And last of all, the woman came to her end. 32
Now in the future life whose wife will she be? for all 33
the seven had her." And Jesus said to them, "The sons 34
of this world are married and have wives; but those to 35
whom is given the reward of the world to come, and
to come back from the dead, have no wives, and are not
married; and death has no more power over them, for 36
they are equal to the angels, and are the sons of God,
being of those who will come back from the dead. But 37
even Moses made it clear that the dead come back to
life, saying, in the story of the burning thorn tree, 'The
Lord, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob'. Now he 38
is not the God of the dead but of the living: for all men
are living to him." And some of the scribes, in answer 39
to this, said, "Master, you have said well". And they 40
had fear of putting any more questions to him.

And he said to them, "Why do they say that the 41
Christ is the son of David? For David himself says in 42
the book of Psalms,

The Lord said to my Lord,
Take your seat at my right hand,
Till I put under your feet all those who are against you. 43

David then gives him the name of Lord, so how is it possible for him to be his son?" 44

And in the hearing of all the people he said to his disciples, "Keep away from the scribes, whose pleasure it is to go about in long robes, and to have words of respect said to them in the market-places, and to take the chief seats in the Synagogues, and the first places at feasts; who take the property of widows and before the eyes of men make long prayers; they will get a greater punishment". 45 46 47

21 AND looking up, he saw the men of wealth putting their offerings in the money-box. And he saw a certain poor widow putting in a farthing. And he said, "Truly, I say to you, This poor widow has given more than all of them: for they gave out of their wealth, having more than enough for themselves: but she, even out of her need, has put in all her living". 1 2 3 4

And some were talking about the Temple, how it was made fair with beautiful stones, and with offerings, but he said, "As for these things which you see, the days will come when not one stone will be resting on another, but all will be broken down". And they said to him, "Master, when will these things be? and what sign will there be when these events are to take place?" And he said, "Take care that you are not tricked: for a number of people will come in my name, saying, 'I am he'; and, 'The time is near': do not go after them. And when news of wars and troubled times comes to your ears, have no fear; for these things have to be, but the end will not be now." 5 6 7 8 9

Then he said to them, "Nation will be moved against nation and kingdom against kingdom: there will be great earth-shocks and outbursts of disease in a number of places, and men will be without food; and there will be wonders and great signs from heaven. But before all this, they will take you, and be very cruel to you, giving you up to the Synagogues, and to prisons, taking you 10 11 12

before kings and rulers, because of my name. And it 13
will be turned to a witness for you. So take care not to 14
be troubled before the time comes, about what answers
you will give: for I will give you words and wisdom, 15
so that not one of those who are against you will be
able to get the better of you, or to put you in the wrong.
But you will be given up even by your fathers and 16
mothers, your brothers and relations and friends; and
some of you will be put to death. And you will be hated 17
by all men, because of me. But not a hair of your head 18
will come to destruction. By going through all these 19
things, you will keep your lives.

"But when you see armies all round about Jerusalem, 20
then be certain that her destruction is near. Then let 21
those who are in Judaea take flight to the mountains;
and those who are in the middle of the town go out;
and let not those who are in the country come in. For 22
these are the days of punishment, in which all the things
in the Writings will be put into effect. It will be hard 23
for women who are with child, and for her with a baby
at the breast, in those days. For great trouble will come
on the land, and wrath on this people. And they will 24
be put to death with the sword, and will be taken as
prisoners into all the nations; and Jerusalem will be
crushed under the feet of the Gentiles, till the times of
the Gentiles are complete. And there will be signs in 25
the sun and moon and stars; and on the earth, fear
among the nations and doubt because of the loud noise
of the sea and the waves; men's strength will go from 26
them in fear and in waiting for the things which are
coming on the earth; for the powers of the heavens will
be moved. And then they will see the Son of man coming 27
in a cloud, with power and great glory. But when these 28
things come about, let your heads be lifted up, because
your salvation is near."

And he made a story for them: "See the *fig*-tree, and 29
all the trees; when they put out their young leaves, you 30
take note of it, and it is clear to you that summer is

coming. In the same way, when you see these things 31
taking place you may be certain that the kingdom of
God is near. Truly, I say to you, This generation will 32
not come to an end till all things are complete. Heaven 33
and earth will come to an end, but my words will not
come to an end.

"But give attention to yourselves, for fear that your 34
hearts become over-full of the pleasures of food and
wine, and the cares of this life, and that day may come
on you suddenly, and take you as in a net: for so it will 35
come on all those who are living on the face of all the
earth. But keep watch at all times with prayer, that 36
you may be strong enough to come through all these
things, and take your place before the Son of man."

And every day he was teaching in the Temple and 37
every night he went out to the mountain of Olives to
take his rest. And all the people came early in the 38
morning to give ear to his words in the Temple.

THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER

22 Now the feast of unleavened bread was near, which 1
is called the Passover. And the chief priests and 2
the scribes were looking for a chance to put him
to death, but they went in fear of the people.

And Satan came into Judas Iscariot, who was one of 3
the twelve. And he went away and had a discussion 4
with the chief priests and the rulers, about how he might
give him up to them. And they were glad, and under- 5
took to give him money. And he made an agreement 6
with them to give him up to them, if he got a chance,
when the people were not present.

And the day of unleavened bread came, when the 7
Passover lamb is put to death. And Jesus sent Peter 8
and John, saying, "Go and make the Passover ready
for us, so that we may take it". And they said to him, 9
"Where are we to get it ready?" And he said to them, 10
"When you go into the town you will see a man coming

to you with a vessel of water; go after him into the house
into which he goes. And say to the master of the house, 11
'The Master says, Where is the guest-room, where I
may take the Passover with my disciples?' And he will 12
take you up to a great room with a table and seats: there
make ready." And they went, and it was as he had said: 13
and they made the Passover ready.

And when the time had come, he took his seat, and 14
the Apostles with him. And he said, "I have had a great 15
desire to keep this Passover with you before I come to
my death; for I say to you, I will not take it till it is 16
made complete in the kingdom of God". And he took 17
a cup, and having given praise, he said, "Make division
of this among yourselves; for I say to you, I will not 18
take of the fruit of the vine till the kingdom of God has
come". And he took bread and, having given praise, 19
he gave it to them when it had been broken, saying,
"This is my body, which is given for you: do this in
memory of me". And in the same way, after the meal, 20
he took the cup, saying, "This cup is the new testament,
made with my blood which is given for you. But the 21
hand of him who is false to me is with me at the table.
For it will be done to the Son of man after the purpose 22
of God, but unhappy is that man by whom he is given
up." And they were wondering among themselves which 23
of them it was who would do this thing.

And there was an argument among them about which 24
of them was the greatest. And he said, "The kings of 25
the Gentiles are lords over them and those who have
authority are given names of honour. But let it not be 26
so with you; but he who is greater, let him become like
the younger; and he who is chief, like a servant. For 27
which is greater, the guest who is seated at a meal or
the servant who is waiting on him? is it not the guest?
but I am among you as a servant. But you are those 28
who have kept with me through my troubles; and I will 29
give you a kingdom as my Father has given one to me,
so that you may take food and drink at my table in my 30

kingdom, and be seated like kings, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon, Simon, Satan has made a request 31
to have you, so that he may put you to the test as grain is tested: but I have made prayer for you, that your 32
faith may not go from you: and when you are turned again, make your brothers strong." And he said to him, 33
"Lord, I am ready to go with you to prison and to death". And he said, "I say to you, Peter, before the 34
cock's second cry today, you will say three times that you have no knowledge of me".

And he said to them, "When I sent you out without 35
money or bag or shoes, were you in need of anything?" And they said, "Nothing". And he said to them, "But 36
now, he who has a money-bag, or a bag for food, let him take it: and he who has not, let him give his coat for money, and get a sword. For I say to you that these 37
words will be put into effect in me, 'And he was numbered among the evil-doers': for what has been said in the Writings about me has an end." And they said, 38
"Lord, here are two swords". And he said, "It is enough".

GETHSEMANE

And he came out, and went, as his way was, to the 39
mountain of Olives, and the disciples went with him. And when he came to the place, he said to them, "Make 40
a prayer that you may not be put to the test". And 41
he went a little distance away from them and, falling on his knees in prayer, he said, "Father, if it is your 42
pleasure, take this cup from me: but still, let your pleasure, not mine, be done". And an angel from heaven 43
came to him, to give him strength. And being in great 44
trouble of soul, the force of his prayer became stronger, and great drops, like blood, came from him, falling to the earth. And getting up from prayer he came to the 45
disciples, and saw that they were sleeping for sorrow. And 46
he said, "Why are you sleeping? Get up, and give yourselves to prayer, so that you may not be put to the test."

And while he was saying these words, there came 47
a band of people, and Judas, one of the twelve, was in
front of them, and he came near to Jesus to give him
a kiss. But Jesus said to him, "Judas, will you be false 48
to the Son of man with a kiss?" And when those who 49
were with him saw what was coming, they said, "Lord,
may we not make use of our swords?" And one of them 50
gave a blow to the servant of the high priest, cutting
off his right ear. But Jesus, answering, said, "Put up 51
with this, at least". And touching his ear, he made it
well. And Jesus said to the chief priests and the captains 52
of the Temple, and the rulers who had come against him,
"Have you come out as against a thief, with swords
and sticks? When I was in the Temple with you every 53
day, your hands were not stretched out against me: but
this is your hour, and the power of evil."

And they made him a prisoner and took him away 54
to the house of the high priest. But Peter went after
them at a distance. And a fire was lighted in the middle 55
of the open square, and they were seated together, and
Peter was among them. And a certain woman-servant, 56
seeing him in the light of the fire, and looking at him
with attention, said, "This man was with him". But 57
he said, "Woman, it is not true; I have no knowledge
of him". And after a little time, another saw him and 58
said, "You are one of them"; and he said, "Man, I am
not". And after about an hour, another man said, with 59
decision, "Certainly this man was with him, for he is
a Galilaean". And Peter said, "Man, I have no know- 60
ledge of these things of which you are talking". And
straight away, while he was saying these words, there
came the cry of a cock. And the Lord, turning, gave 61
Peter a look. And the words of the Lord came to Peter's
mind, how he had said, "This night, before the hour of
the cock's cry, you will be false to me three times". And 62
he went out, weeping bitterly.

And the men in whose hands Jesus was, made sport 63
of him, and gave him blows. And covering his eyes, they 64
said to him, "Are you prophet enough to say who gave
you that blow?" And they said a number of other evil 65
things against him.

And when it was day, the rulers of the people came 66
together, with the chief priests and the scribes, and they
took him before their Sanhedrin, saying, "If you are the 67
Christ, say so". But he said, "If I say so, you will not
have belief; and if I put a question to you, you will not 68
give an answer. But in the future the Son of man will 69
be seated at the right hand of the power of God." And 70
they all said, "Are you then the Son of God?" and he
said, "You say that I am". And they said, "What more 71
need have we of witness? we have the very words of his
mouth".

CHRIST BEFORE PILATE

23 AND they all went, and took him before Pilate. 1
And they made statements against him, saying, 2
"This man has to our knowledge been teaching
our nation to do wrong, and not to make payment of
taxes to Caesar, even saying that he himself is Christ,
a king". And Pilate said to him, "Are you the King 3
of the Jews?" And he said, in answer, "You say so".
And Pilate said to the chief priests and the people, "In 4
my opinion this man has done no wrong". But they 5
became more violent than before, saying, "He has made
trouble among the people, teaching through all Judaea
from Galilee to this place". But at these words Pilate 6
said, "Is the man a Galilaean?" And when he saw that 7
he was under the authority of Herod, he sent him to
Herod, who was in Jerusalem himself at that time.

Now when Herod saw Jesus he was very glad, having 8
for a long time had a desire to see him, for he had had
accounts of him, and was hoping to see some wonders
done by him. And he put a great number of questions 9
to him, but he said nothing. And the chief priests and 10

the scribes were there, making statements against him violently. And Herod, with the men of his army, put shame on him and made sport of him, and dressing him in shining robes, he sent him back to Pilate. And that day Herod and Pilate became friends with one another, for before they had been against one another.

BARABBAS OR JESUS?

And Pilate sent for the chief priests and the rulers and the people and said to them, "You say that this man has been teaching the people evil things: now I, after going into the question before you, see nothing wrong in this man in connection with the things which you have said against him: and Herod is of the same opinion, for he has sent him back to us; for, you see, he has done nothing for which I might put him to death. And so, I will give him punishment and let him go." But with loud voices, they said, all together, "Put this man to death, and make Barabbas free". Now this man was in prison because of an attack against the government in the town, in which there had been loss of life. And Pilate again said to them that it was his desire to let Jesus go free. But crying out, they said, "To the cross with him!" And he said to them a third time, "Why, what evil has he done? I see no reason for putting him to death: I will give him punishment and let him go." But they went on crying out loudly, "Let him be put to death on the cross". And they had their way. And Pilate gave his decision for their desire to be put into effect. And in answer to their request, he let that man go free, who had been in prison for acting against the government and causing death, and Jesus he gave up to their pleasure.

JESUS PUT TO DEATH ON THE CROSS

And while they were taking him away, they put their hands on Simon of Cyrene, who was coming from the country, and made him take the cross after Jesus.

And a great band of people and of women went after 27
him, making signs of grief and weeping for him. But 28
Jesus, turning to them, said, "Daughters of Jerusalem,
let not your weeping be for me, but for yourselves and
for your children. For the days are coming in which 29
they will say, 'Happy are those who have had no children,
whose bodies have never given birth, whose breasts have
never given milk'. And they will say to the mountains, 30
'Come down on us,' and to the hills, 'Be a covering
for us'. For if they do these things when the tree is 31
green, what will they do when it is dry?"

And two others, evil-doers, were taken with him to 32
be put to death.

And when they came to the place which is named 33
Golgotha, they put him on the cross, and the evil-doers,
one on the right side, and the other on the left. And 34
Jesus said, "Father, let them have forgiveness, for they
have no knowledge of what they are doing". And they
made division of his clothing among them by the decision
of chance. And the people were looking on. And the 35
rulers made sport of him, saying, "He was a saviour
of others; let him do something for himself, if he is the
Christ, the man of God's selection". And the men of 36
the army made sport of him, coming to him and giving
him bitter wine, and saying, "If you are the King of the 37
Jews, get yourself free". And these words were put in 38
writing over him, THIS IS THE KING OF THE
JEWS.

And one of the evil-doers on the cross, with bitter 39
feeling, said to him, "Are you not the Christ? Get
yourself and us out of this." But the other, protesting, 40
said, "Have you no fear of God? for you have a part
in the same punishment, and with reason; for we have 41
the right reward of our acts, but this man has done
nothing wrong". And he said, "Jesus, keep me in mind 42
when you come in your kingdom". And he said to him, 43
"Truly, I say to you, Today you will be with me in
Paradise".

And it was now about the sixth hour; and all the land 44
was dark till the ninth hour; the light of the sun went 45
out, and the curtain in the Temple was parted in two.
And Jesus gave a loud cry and said, "Father, into your 46
hands I give my spirit": and when he had said this, his
life went from him. And when the captain saw what 47
lone, he gave praise to God, saying, "Without
doubt this was an upright man". And all the people 48
who had come together to see it, when they saw the
things which were done, went back again making signs
of grief. And all his friends and the women who came 49
with him from Galilee, were waiting at a distance,
watching these things.

THE BODY OF JESUS PUT TO REST

Now there was a man named Joseph, a man of 50
authority and a good and upright man (he had not given 51
his approval to their decision or their acts), of Ari-
mathaea, a town of the Jews, who was waiting for the
kingdom of God: this man went to Pilate and made 52
a request for the body of Jesus. And he took it down, 53
and folding it in a linen cloth, he put it in a place cut in
the rock for a dead body; and no one had ever been put
in it. Now it was the day of making ready and the 54
Sabbath was coming on. And the women who had come 55
with him from Galilee went after him and saw the place
and how his body had been put to rest; and they went 56
back and got ready spices and perfumes; and on the
Sabbath they took their rest, in agreement with the law.

THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK

24 BUT on the first day of the week, at dawn, they came 1
to the place where his body had been put, taking
the spices which they had got ready. And they saw 2
that the stone had been rolled away. And they went in, 3
but the body of the Lord Jesus was not there. And while 4

they were in doubt about it, they saw two men in shining clothing by them: and while their faces were bent down 5
to the earth in fear, they said to them, "Why are you looking for the living among the dead? He is not here, 6
he has come back to life: have in mind what he said to you when he was still in Galilee, saying, 'The Son of 7
man will be given up into the hands of evil-doers, and be put to death on the cross, and on the third day he will come back to life'." And his words came back into their 8
minds, and they went away from that place and gave an 9
account of all these things to the eleven disciples and all the others. Now they were Mary Magdalene and Joanna 10
and Mary, the mother of James: and the other women with them said these things to the Apostles. But these 11
words seemed foolish to them, and they had no belief in them. But Peter got up and went to the place where the 12
body had been put, and looking in he saw nothing but the linen bands, and he went to his house full of wonder at what had taken place.

ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS

And then, two of them, on that very day, were going 13
to a little town named Emmaus, which was about seven miles from Jerusalem. And they were talking together 14
about all those things which had taken place. And while 15
they were talking and questioning together, Jesus himself came near and went with them. But their eyes were not 16
open that they might have knowledge of him. And he 17
said to them, "What are you talking about together while you go?" Then stopping, and looking sadly at 18
him, one of them, named Cleopas, said to him, "Are you the only man living in Jerusalem who has not had news of the things which have taken place there at this time?" And he said to them, "What things?" And they said, 19
"The things to do with Jesus of Nazareth, who was a prophet, great in his acts and his words, before God and all the people: and how the chief priests and our rulers 20

gave him up to be put to death on the cross. But we 21
were hoping that he would be the Saviour of Israel. In
addition to all this, it is now the third day after these
events; and certain women among us gave us cause for 22
wonder, for they went early to the place where his body
had been put, and it was not there; then they came, 23
saying that they had seen a vision of angels, who said
that he was living. And some of those who were with 24
us went to the place, and saw that it was as the women
had said, but him they did not see." And he said, "O 25
foolish men! how slow you are to give belief to what the
prophets have said. Was it not necessary for the Christ 26
to go through these things, and to come into his glory?"
And he made clear to them all the things in the holy 27
Writings from Moses and from all the prophets, which
had to do with himself. And they came near the town 28
to which they were going, and he seemed as if he was
going on; but they kept him back, saying, "Do not go, 29
for evening is near, the day is almost gone". And he
went in with them. And when he was seated with them 30
at table, he took the bread, and said words of blessing,
and making division of it, he gave it to them. And then 31
their eyes were open, and they had knowledge of him;
but he went from their view. And they said to one 32
another, "Were not our hearts burning in us while he
was talking to us on the way, making clear to us the
holy Writings?" And that very hour they got up and 33
went back to Jerusalem, where the eleven and the others
had come together. And they said to them, "The Lord 34
has truly come back to life again, and Simon has seen
him". And they gave an account of the things which had 35
taken place on the way, and how, when he gave them
bread, they had knowledge of him.

JESUS WITH HIS DISCIPLES AGAIN

And while they were saying these things, he himself 36
was among them, and said to them, "Peace be with you!"
But they were full of fear, being of the opinion that they 37
were seeing a spirit. And he said to them, "Why are 38
you troubled, and why are your hearts full of doubt?
See, my hands and my feet: it is I myself; put your hands 39
on me and make certain; for a spirit has not flesh and
bones as you see that I have." And when he had said 40
this, he let them see his hands and his feet. And because, 41
for joy and wonder, they were still in doubt, he said to
them, "Have you any food here?" And they gave him 42
a bit of cooked fish. And before their eyes he took 43
a meal.

And he said to them, "These are the words which 44
I said to you when I was still with you, how it was
necessary for all the things which are in the writings
of Moses and the prophets and in the Psalms about me,
to be put into effect". Then he made the holy Writings 45
clear to their minds. And he said to them, "So it is 46
in the Writings that the Christ would undergo death,
and come back to life again on the third day; and 47
that teaching about a change of heart and forgiveness
of sins is to be given to Jerusalem first and to all
nations in his name. You are witnesses of these things. 48
And now I will send to you what my Father has under- 49
taken to give you; but do not go from the town, till the
power from heaven comes to you."

And he took them out till they were near Bethany, 50
and lifting up his hands, he gave them a blessing. And 51
while he was doing so, he went from them and was
taken up into heaven. And they gave him worship and 52
went back to Jerusalem with great joy. And they were 53
in the Temple at all times, giving praise to God.

ST JOHN

THE WORD MADE FLESH

1 FROM the first the Word was in being, and the 1
Word was with God, and the Word was God. He 2
was with God from the first. All things came into 3
being through him; and nothing which has existence
came into being without him. In him was life, and that 4
life was the light of men. And the light goes on shining 5
in the dark; it is not overcome by the dark. There was 6
a man sent from God, whose name was John. He came 7
for witness, to give witness about the light, so that all
men might have faith through him. He himself was not 8
the light: he was sent to give witness about the light.
The true light, which gives light to every man, was then 9
coming into the world. He was in the world, the world 10
which came into being through him, but the world had
no knowledge of him. He came to the things which 11
were his and his people did not take him to their hearts.
To all those who did so take him, however, he gave 12
the right of becoming children of God—that is, to those
who had faith in his name: whose birth was from God 13
and not from blood, or from an impulse of the flesh and
man's desire. And so the Word became flesh and took 14
a place among us for a time; and we saw his glory—
such glory as is given to an only son by his father—saw
it to be true and full of grace. John gave witness about 15
him, crying, "This is he of whom I said, He who is
coming after me is put over me because he was in
existence before me". From his full measure we have 16
all been given grace on grace. For the law was given 17
through Moses; grace and the true way of life are ours
through Jesus Christ. No man has seen God at any 18
time; the only Son, who is on the breast of the Father,
he has made clear what God is.

And this is the witness of John when the Jews sent 19
priests and Levites from Jerusalem to him with the
question, "Who are you?" He said quite openly and 20
straightforwardly, "I am not the Christ". And they 21
said to him, "What then? Are you Elijah?" And he
said, "I am not". "Are you the prophet?" And his
answer was, "I am not". So they said to him, "Who 22
are you then? We have to give some answer to those
who sent us. What have you to say about yourself?"
He said, "I am the voice of one crying in the waste land, 23
'Make straight the way of the Lord,' as said Isaiah the
prophet". Those who had been sent came from the 24
Pharisees. And they put this question to him, saying, 25
"Why then are you giving baptism if you are not the
Christ, or Elijah, or the prophet?" John's answer was: 26
"I give baptism with water; but there is one among you
of whom you have no knowledge; it is he who is coming 27
after me; I am not good enough to undo his shoes"
These things took place at Bethany on the other side of 28
the Jordan, where John was giving baptism.

The day after, John sees Jesus coming to him and says, 29
"See, here is the Lamb of God who takes away the sin
of the world! This is he of whom I said, One is coming 30
after me who is put over me because he was in existence
before me. I myself had no knowledge of him, but I came 31
giving baptism with water so that he might be seen
openly by Israel." And John gave this witness, saying, 32
"I saw the Spirit coming down from heaven like a dove
and resting on him. I had no knowledge who he was, 33
but he who sent me to give baptism with water said to
me, 'The one on whom you see the Spirit coming down
and resting, it is he who gives baptism with the Holy
Spirit'. This I saw myself and my witness is that he is 34
the Son of God."

The day after, John was there again with two of his 35
disciples; and looking at Jesus while he was walking he 36

said, "See, there is the Lamb of God!" Hearing what 37
he said, the two disciples went after Jesus. And Jesus, 38
turning round, saw them coming after him and said to
them, "What are you looking for?" They said to him,
"*Rabbi*" (which is to say, Master), "where are you
living?" He said to them, "Come and see". They went 39
with him then and saw where he was living; and they
were with him all that day: it was then about the tenth
hour of the day. Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, was 40
one of the two men who, hearing what John said, went
after Jesus. Early in the morning he came across his 41
brother and said to him, "We have made a discovery!
It is the *Messiah!*" (which is to say, the Christ). And 42
he took him to Jesus. Looking at him fixedly Jesus said,
"You are Simon, the son of John; your name will be
Cephas" (which is to say, Peter).

The day after this, Jesus had a desire to go into 43
Galilee. He came across Philip and said to him, "Come
and be my disciple". Now Philip's town was Bethsaida 44
where Andrew and Peter came from. Philip came across 45
Nathanael and said to him, "We have made a discovery!
It is he of whom Moses, in the law, and the prophets
were writing, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph."
"Nazareth!" said Nathanael, "Is it possible for any 46
good to come out of Nazareth?" Philip said to him,
"Come and see". Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him 47
and said of him, "See, here is a true son of Israel in
whom there is nothing false". Nathanael said to him, 48
"Where did you get knowledge of me?" In answer
Jesus said, "Before Philip was talking with you, while
you were still under the *fig*-tree, I saw you". Nathanael 49
said to him, "Rabbi, you are the Son of God, you are
King of Israel!" In answer Jesus said to him, "You 50
have faith because I said to you, I saw you under the
fig-tree. You will see greater things than these." And 51
he said to him, "Truly I say to you all, You will see
heaven opening and God's angels going up and coming
down on the Son of man".

THE FIRST SIGN

2 On the third day two people were going to be married at Cana in Galilee. The mother of Jesus was there: and Jesus with his disciples came as guests. When they had not enough wine, the mother of Jesus said to him, "They have no wine". Jesus said to her, "Mother, this is not your business; my time is still to come". His mother said to the servants, "Whatever he says to you, do it". Now six pots of stone, every one taking eighteen or twenty gallons of water, were placed there for the purpose of washing, as is the way of the Jews. Jesus said to the servants, "Make the pots full of water". And they made them full to the top. Then he said to them, "Now take some, and give it to the master of the feast". So they took it to him. After tasting the water which had now become wine, the master of the feast (having no idea where it came from, though it was clear to the servants who took the water out) sent for the newly-married man, and said to him, "Every man first puts out his best wine and when all have had enough he puts out what is not so good; but you have kept the good wine till now". This, the first of his signs, Jesus did at Cana in Galilee and let his glory be seen openly; and his disciples put their faith in him.

After this he went down to Capernaum, with his mother, his brothers, and his disciples, and they were there not more than two or three days.

The time of the Passover of the Jews was near and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And there in the Temple he saw men trading in oxen and sheep and doves, and he saw the changers of money in their seats: and he made a whip of small cords and put them all out of the Temple, with the sheep and the oxen, sending in all directions the small money of the changers and overturning their tables; and to those who were trading in doves he said, "Take these things away; do not make my Father's

house a market". And it came to the minds of the disciples that the Writings say, "I am on fire with passion for your house". Then the Jews put this question to him: "What sign of authority have you to give us, seeing that you do these things?" And Jesus said to them, "Make destruction of this Temple and I will put it up again in three days". The Jews said, "The building of this Temple took forty and six years; and you will put it up in three days!" But his words were about that holy building which was his body. So when he had come back again from the dead, the memory of these words came back to the disciples, and they had faith in the holy Writings and in the word which Jesus had said.

Now while he was in Jerusalem at the feast of the Passover, a great number of people came to have faith in his name, after seeing the signs which he did. But Jesus did not have faith in them, because he had knowledge of them all. He had no need for any witness about man; for he himself had knowledge of what was in man.

THE SECOND BIRTH

3 Now there was among the Pharisees a man named Nicodemus, who was one of the rulers of the Jews. He came to Jesus by night and said to him, "*Rabbi*, we are conscious that you have come from God as a teacher, because no man would be able to do these signs which you do if God was not with him". Jesus said to him, "Truly, I say to you, Without a new birth no man is able to see the kingdom of God". Nicodemus said to him, "How is it possible for a man to be given birth when he is old? Is he able to go into his mother's body a second time and come to birth again?" Jesus said in answer, "Truly, I say to you, If a man's birth is not from water and from the Spirit it is not possible for him to go into the kingdom of God. That which has birth from the flesh is flesh, and that which has birth from the Spirit is spirit. Do not be surprised that I say to you, It is

necessary for you to have a second birth. The wind goes 8
where its pleasure takes it, and the sound of it comes
to your ears, but you are unable to say where it comes
from and where it goes: so it is with everyone whose
birth is from the Spirit." And Nicodemus said to him, 9
"How is it possible for these things to be?" And Jesus, 10
answering, said, "Are you the teacher of Israel and have
no knowledge of these things? Truly, I say to you, We 11
say that of which we have knowledge; we give witness
of what we have seen; and you do not take our witness
to be true. If you have no belief when my words are 12
about the things of earth, how will you have belief if my
words are about the things of heaven? And no one has 13
ever gone up to heaven but he who came down from
heaven, the Son of man. As the snake was lifted up by 14
Moses in the waste land, even so it is necessary for the
Son of man to be lifted up: so that whoever has faith may 15
have in him eternal life."

For God had such love for the world that he gave his 16
only Son, so that whoever has faith in him may not come
to destruction but have eternal life. God did not send 17
his Son into the world to be judge of the world; he sent
him so that the world might have salvation through him.
The man who has faith in him does not come up to be 18
judged; but he who has no faith in him has been judged
even now, because he has no faith in the name of the
only Son of God. And this is the test by which men are 19
judged: the light has come into the world and men have
more love for the dark than for the light, because their
acts are evil. The light is hated by everyone whose acts 20
are evil and he does not come to the light for fear that
his acts will be seen. But he whose life is true comes 21
to the light, so that it may be clearly seen that his acts
have been done by the help of God.

After these things Jesus and his disciples went into the 22
land of Judaea, and there he was with them for some
time, giving baptism. Now John was then giving baptism 23
at Aenon near Salim, because there was much water

there; and people came and were given baptism. For 24
at this time John had not been put into prison. Then 25
a question came up between John's disciples and a Jew
about washing. And they went to John and said to him, 26
"Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side
of the Jordan, the man to whom you gave witness, is
now giving baptism, and everyone is going to him".
And this was John's answer: "A man is unable to have 27
anything if it is not given to him from heaven. You 28
yourselves give witness that I said, I am not the Christ.
What I said was, I am sent before the Christ. He who 29
has the bride is the husband: but the husband's friend,
whose place is by his side and whose ears are open to
him, is full of joy because of the husband's voice: such
is my joy, and it is complete. He has to become greater 30
while I become less."

He who comes from heaven is greater than all others: 31
he who comes from earth is of the earth, and of the earth
are his words: he who comes from heaven is over all.
He gives witness of what he has seen and of what has 32
come to his ears; and no man takes his witness as true.
He who so takes his witness has made clear his faith 33
that God is true. For he whom God has sent says God's 34
words; and God does not give him the Spirit by measure.
The Father has love for the Son and has put all things 35
into his hands. He who has faith in the Son has eternal 36
life; but he who has not faith in the Son will not see life;
God's wrath is resting on him.

THE WOMAN OF SAMARIA

4 Now when it was clear to the Lord that word had 1
come to the ears of the Pharisees that Jesus was
making more disciples than John and was giving
them baptism (though, in fact, it was his disciples who 2
gave baptism, not Jesus himself), he went out of Judaea 3
into Galilee again. And it was necessary for him to go 4
through Samaria. So he came to a town of Samaria which 5

was named Sychar, near to the bit of land which Jacob gave to his son Joseph: now Jacob's fountain was there. 6
Jesus, being tired after his journey, was resting by the fountain. It was about the sixth hour. A woman of 7
Samaria came to get water, and Jesus said to her, "Give me some water". For his disciples had gone to the town 8
to get food. The woman of Samaria said to him, "Why 9
do you, a Jew, make a request for water to me, a woman of Samaria?" She said this because Jews have nothing to do with the people of Samaria. In answer Jesus said, 10
"If you had knowledge of what God gives freely and who it is who says to you, Give me water, you would make your prayer to him, and he would give you living water". The woman said to him, "Sir, you have no 11
vessel and the fountain is deep; from where will you get the living water? Are you greater than our father Jacob 12
who gave us the fountain and took the water of it himself, with his children and his cattle?" Jesus said to her, 13
"Everyone who takes this water will be in need of it again: but whoever takes the water I give him will never 14
be in need of drink again; for the water I give him will become in him a fountain of eternal life". The woman 15
said to him, "Sir, give me this water, so that I may not be in need again of drink and will not have to come all this way for it". Jesus said to her, "Go, get your 16
husband and come back here with him". In answer, the 17
woman said, "I have no husband". Jesus said to her, "You have said rightly, 'I have no husband': you have 18
had five husbands, and the man you have now is not your husband: that was truly said". The woman said to 19
him, "Sir, I see that you are a prophet. Our fathers 20
gave worship on this mountain, but you Jews say that the right place for worship is in Jerusalem." Jesus said 21
to her, "Woman, take my word for this; the time is coming when you will not give worship to the Father on this mountain or in Jerusalem. You give worship, 22
but without knowledge of what you are worshipping: we give worship to what we have knowledge of: for

salvation comes from the Jews. But the time is coming, 23
and is even now here, when the true worshippers will
give worship to the Father in the true way of the spirit,
for these are the worshippers desired by the Father.
God is Spirit: then let his worshippers give him worship 24
in the true way of the spirit." The woman said to him, 25
"I am certain that the *Messiah*, who is named Christ,
is coming; when he comes he will make all things clear
to us". Jesus said to her, "I, who am talking to you, 26
am he".

At that point the disciples came back, and they were 27
surprised to see him talking to a woman; but not one of
them said to him, "What is your purpose?" or, "Why
are you talking to her?" Then the woman put down her 28
water-pot and went into the town, and said to the people,
"Come and see a man who has been talking to me of 29
everything I ever did! Is it possible that this is the
Christ?" So they went out of the town and came to him. 30
While this was taking place, the disciples were saying 31
to Jesus, "Master, take some food". But he said to 32
them, "I have food of which you have no knowledge".
So the disciples said one to another, "Did anyone give 33
him food?" Jesus said, "My food is to do the pleasure 34
of him who sent me and to make his work complete.
You would say, 'Four months from now is the time 35
of the grain-cutting'. Take a look, I say to you, at the
fields; they are even now white for cutting. He who 36
does the cutting now has his reward; he is getting
together fruit for eternal life, so that he who did the
planting and he who gets in the grain may have joy
together. In this the saying is a true one, 'One does the 37
planting, and another gets in the grain'. I sent you to 38
get in grain which you had no hand in planting: other
men did that work, and you take the reward."

Now a number of the people of that town had faith 39
in him because of the woman's witness: "He has been
talking to me of everything I ever did". So when the 40
people came to him they made request to him to be

among them for a time, and he was there two days.
And a great number more of them came to have faith 41
in him because of what he himself said. And they said 42
to the woman, "Now we have faith, but not because of
your story: we ourselves have given ear to his words,
and we are certain that he is the Saviour of the world".

And after the two days he went on from there into 43
Galilee. For Jesus himself said that a prophet has no 44
honour in the country of his birth. So when he came 45
into Galilee the Galilaeans took him to their hearts
because of the things which they had seen him do in
Jerusalem at the feast—they themselves having been
there at the feast.

So he came to Cana in Galilee, where he had made 46
the water wine. And there was a certain man of high
position whose son was ill at Capernaum. When it came 47
to his ears that Jesus had come from Judaea into Galilee,
he went to him and made a request that he would come
down to his son, who was near to death, and make him
well. Then Jesus said to him, "You will not have faith 48
if you do not see signs and wonders". The man said, 49
"Sir, come down before my boy is dead". And Jesus 50
said, "Go in peace; your son is living". The man had
faith in the word which Jesus said to him and went away.
And while he was going down, his servants came to him 51
and said, "Your boy is living". So he put a question to 52
them as to the hour when he became better; and they
said to him, "The disease went from him yesterday at
the seventh hour". It was clear then to the father that 53
this was the very time at which Jesus said to him, "Your
son is living". And he had faith in Jesus, he and all his
family. Now this is the second sign which Jesus did 54
after he had come out of Judaea into Galilee.

5 AFTER these things there was a feast of the Jews, 1
and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.
Now in Jerusalem near the sheep-market there 2
is a public bath which in Hebrew is named Beth-zatha.
It has five doorways. In these doorways there were 3
a great number of people with different diseases: some
unable to see, some without the power of walking, some
with wasted bodies. [They were waiting for the moving
of the water. For an angel went down into the bath 4
from time to time and put the water in motion; and then
whoever went in first after the moving of the water,
was made well of whatever disease he had.] One man 5
was there who had been ill for thirty-eight years. When 6
Jesus saw him there on the floor it was clear to him that
he had been now a long time in that condition, and so
he said to the man, "Is it your desire to get well?"
The ill man said in answer, "Sir, I have nobody to put 7
me into the bath when the water is moving; and while
I am on the way down some other person gets in before
me". Jesus said to him, "Get up, take your bed and go". 8
And the man became well straight away, and took up 9
his bed and went.

Now that day was the Sabbath. So the Jews said to 10
the man who had been made well, "It is the Sabbath;
and it is against the law for you to take up your bed".
He said to them, "But he who made me well, said to me, 11
'Take up your bed and go'". Then they put to him the 12
question: "Who is the man who said to you, 'Take it
up and go'?" Now he who had been made well had no 13
knowledge who it was, Jesus having gone away because
of the number of people who were in that place. After 14
a time Jesus came across him in the Temple and said to
him, "See, you are well and strong; do no more sin for
fear a worse thing comes to you". The man went away 15
and said to the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him
well. And for this reason the Jews were turned against 16

Jesus, because he was doing these things on the Sabbath.
But his answer was: "My Father is still working even 17
now, and so I am working". For this cause the Jews 18
had an even greater desire to put Jesus to death, because
not only did he not keep the Sabbath but he said God
was his Father, so making himself equal with God.

So Jesus made answer and said, 19

"Truly I say to you, The Son is not able to do anything himself; he is able to do only what he sees the Father doing; whatever the Father does the Son does it in the same way. For the Father has love for the Son 20
and lets him see everything which he does: and he will let him see greater works than these so that you may be full of wonder. In the same way, as the Father gives 21
life to the dead, even so the Son gives life to those to whom he is pleased to give it. The Father is not the 22
judge of men, but he has given all decisions into the hands of the Son; so that all men may give honour to 23
the Son even as they give honour to the Father. He who gives no honour to the Son gives no honour to the Father who sent him. Truly, I say to you, The man 24
whose ears are open to my word and who has faith in him who sent me, has eternal life; he will not be judged, but has come from death into life. Truly, I say to you, The 25
time is coming, it has even now come, when the voice of the Son of God will come to the ears of the dead, and those hearing it will have life. For even as the Father has 26
life in himself, so he has given to the Son to have life in himself. And he has given him authority to be judge 27
because he is the Son of man. Do not be surprised at this: 28
for the time is coming when his voice will come to all who are in the place of the dead, and they will come out; those 29
who have done good, into the new life; and those who have done evil, to be judged.

"Of myself I am unable to do anything: as the voice 30
comes to me so I give a decision: and my decision is right because I have no desire to do what is pleasing to myself, but only what is pleasing to him who sent me.
If I gave witness about myself, my witness would not 31

be true. There is another who gives witness about me 32
and I am certain that the witness he gives about me is
true. You sent to John and he gave true witness. 33
But I have no need of a man's witness: I only say these 34
things so that you may have salvation. He was a vessel 35
of light, burning and shining, and for a time you were
ready to be happy in his light. But the witness which 36
I have is greater than that of John: the work which the
Father has given me to do, the very work which I am
now doing, is a witness that the Father has sent me.
And the Father himself who sent me has given witness 37
about me. Not one of you has ever given ear to his
voice; his form you have not seen. And you have not 38
kept his word in your hearts, because you have not faith
in him whom he has sent. You make search in the holy 39
Writings, in the belief that through them you get eternal
life; and it is those Writings which give witness about
me. And still you have no desire to come to me so that 40
you may have life. I do not take honour from men; 41
but I have knowledge of you that you have no love for 42
God in your hearts. I have come in my Father's name, 43
and your hearts are not open to me. If another comes
with no other authority but himself, you will give him
your approval. How is it possible for you to have faith 44
while you take honour one from another and have no
desire for the honour which comes from the only God?
Put out of your minds the thought that I will say things 45
against you to the Father: the one who says things against
you is Moses, on whom you put your hopes. If you had 46
belief in Moses you would have belief in me; for his
writings are about me. If you have no belief in his 47
writings, how will you have belief in my words?"

THE FIVE BARLEY CAKES

AFTER these things Jesus went away to the other side 1
of the sea of Galilee—that is, the sea of Tiberias.
And a great number of people went after him 2
because they saw the signs which he did on those who

were ill. Then Jesus went up the mountain and was 3
seated there with his disciples. Now the Passover, a 4
feast of the Jews, was near. Lifting up his eyes, Jesus 5
saw a great number of people coming to where he was,
and he said to Philip, "Where may we get bread for
all these people?" This he said, testing him: for he had 6
no doubt what he himself would do. Philip made answer, 7
"Bread to the value of two hundred pence would not
be enough even to give everyone a little". One of his 8
disciples, Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, said to
Jesus, "There is a boy here with five *barley* cakes and 9
two fishes: but what is that among such a number?"
Jesus said, "Let the people be seated". Now there was 10
much grass in that place. And those seated on the grass
were about five thousand. Then Jesus took the cakes 11
and, having given praise to God, he gave them to the
people who were seated, and the fishes in the same way,
as much as they had need of. And when they had had 12
enough, Jesus said to his disciples, "Take up the broken
bits which are over, so that nothing may be wasted". So 13
they took them up: twelve baskets full of broken bits of
the five cakes which were over after the people had had
enough. And when the people saw the sign which he 14
had done, they said, "Truly this is the prophet who is
to come into the world".

Now when Jesus saw that the people were about to 15
come and take him by force to make him a king, he went
away again up the mountain by himself.

WALKING ON THE SEA

When evening came the disciples went down to the 16
sea; and they took a boat and went across the sea in the 17
direction of Capernaum. By then it was dark and still
Jesus had not come to them. The sea was getting rough 18
because of a strong wind which was blowing. After they 19
had gone three or four miles they saw Jesus walking
on the sea and coming near to the boat; and they had

great fear. But he said to them, "It is I, have no fear". 20
Then they readily took him into the boat: and straight 21
away the boat was at the land to which they were going.

THE BREAD FROM HEAVEN

The day after, the people who were on the other side 22
of the sea saw that only one small boat had been there,
that Jesus had not gone in that boat with the disciples,
but that the disciples had gone away by themselves.
Some other boats, however, came from Tiberias near 23
to the place where they had taken the bread after the
Lord had given praise. So when the people saw that 24
Jesus was not there, or his disciples, they got into those
boats and went over to Capernaum looking for Jesus.
And when they came across him on the other side of the 25
sea they said, "*Rabbi*, when did you come here?" Jesus, 26
answering them, said, "Truly, I say to you, You come
after me, not because you saw signs, but because you
were given the bread and had enough. Let your work 27
not be for the food which comes to an end, but for the
food which goes on for eternal life, which the Son of man
will give to you, for on him has God the Father put his
mark." Then they said to him, "How may we do the 28
works of God?" Jesus answering, said to them, "This 29
is to do the work of God: to have faith in him whom God
has sent". So they said, "What sign do you give us, 30
so that we may see and have faith in you? What do
you do? Our fathers had the *manna* in the waste land, 31
as the Writings say, 'He gave them bread from heaven'."
Jesus said then to them, "Truly, I say to you, What 32
Moses gave you was not the bread from heaven; it is
my Father who gives you the true bread from heaven.
The bread of God is the bread which comes down out 33
of heaven and gives life to the world." "Ah, Lord," 34
they said, "give us that bread for ever!" And this was 35
the answer of Jesus: "I am the bread of life. He who
comes to me will never be in need of food, and he who
has faith in me will never be in need of drink. But it is 36

as I said to you: you have seen me, and still you have
no faith. Whatever the Father gives to me will come 37
to me; and I will not send away anyone who comes to me.
For I have come down from heaven, not to do my 38
pleasure, but the pleasure of him who sent me. And this 39
is the pleasure of him who sent me, that I am not to let
out of my hands any of those whom he has given me,
but I am to take them all up from the dead on the last
day. This, I say, is my Father's pleasure, that everyone 40
who sees the Son and has faith in him may have eternal
life and I will take him up on the last day."

Now the Jews said bitter things about Jesus because 41
of his words, "I am the bread which came down from
heaven". And they said, "Is not this Jesus, the son of 42
Joseph, whose father and mother we have seen? How
is it then that he now says, 'I have come down from
heaven'?" Jesus made answer and said, "Do not say 43
things against me, one to another. No man is able to 44
come to me if the Father who sent me does not give
him the desire to come: and I will take him up from the
dead on the last day. The writings of the prophets say, 45
'And they will all have teaching from God'. Everyone
whose ears have been open to the teaching of the Father
comes to me. Not that anyone has ever seen the Father; 46
only he who is from God, he has seen the Father. Truly, 47
I say to you, He who has faith in me has eternal life. I am 48
the bread of life. Your fathers took the manna in the 49
waste land—and they are dead. The bread which comes 50
from heaven is such bread that a man may take it for
food and never see death. I am the living bread which 51
has come from heaven: if any man takes this bread for
food he will have life for ever: and more than this, the
bread which I will give is my flesh which I will give for
the life of the world."

Then the Jews had an angry discussion among them- 52
selves, saying, "How is it possible for this man to give
us his flesh for food?" Then Jesus said to them, "Truly, 53
I say to you, If you do not take the flesh of the Son

of man for food, and if you do not take his blood for drink, you have no life in you. He who takes my flesh 54
for food and my blood for drink has eternal life, and I will take him up from the dead at the last day. My 55
flesh is true food and my blood is true drink. He who 56
takes my flesh for food and my blood for drink is in me and I in him. As the living Father has sent me, and 57
I have life because of the Father, even so he who takes me for his food will have life because of me. This is the 58
bread which has come down from heaven. It is not like the food which your fathers had: they took of the manna, and are dead; but he who takes this bread for food will have life for ever." Jesus said these things in the 59
Synagogue while he was teaching at Capernaum.

Then, hearing this, a number of his disciples said, 60
"This is a hard saying; who is able to take in such teaching?" When Jesus became conscious that his dis- 61
ciples were protesting about what he said, he said to them, "Does this give you trouble? What then will 62
you say if you see the Son of man going up to where he was before? The spirit is the life-giver; the flesh is of 63
no value: the words which I have said to you are spirit and they are life. But still some of you have no faith." 64
For it was clear to Jesus from the first who they were who had no faith, and who it was who would be false to him. And he said, "This is why I said to you, No 65
man is able to come to me if he is not given the power to do so by the Father".

Because of what he said, a number of the disciples 66
went back and would no longer go with him. So Jesus 67
said to the twelve, "Have you a desire to go away?" Then Simon Peter gave this answer: "Lord, to whom are 68
we to go? you have the words of eternal life; and we have 69
faith and are certain that you are the Holy One of God". Then Jesus said, "Did I not make a selection of you, the 70
twelve, and one of you is a son of the Evil One?" He 71
was talking of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot. It was he who was to be false to Jesus—one of the twelve.

THE JEWS' ARGUMENT WITH JESUS

7 AFTER this, Jesus went from place to place in Galilee. 1
He did not go about in Judaea because the Jews
were looking for a chance to put him to death.
But the feast of the Jews, the feast of tents, was near. 2
So his brothers said to him, "Go away from here into 3
Judaea so that your disciples may see the works which
you do. Because no man does things secretly if he has 4
a desire that men may have knowledge of him. If you
do these things, let yourself be seen by all men." For 5
even his brothers had no belief in him. Jesus said to 6
them, "My time is still to come, but any time is good
for you. It is not possible for you to be hated by the 7
world; but I am hated by it, because I give witness that
what it does is evil. Go you up to the feast: I am not 8
going up now to the feast because my time has not fully
come." Having said these things to them, he still kept 9
in Galilee.

But after his brothers had gone up to the feast, then 10
he went up, not publicly, but in secret. At the feast the 11
Jews were looking for him and saying, "Where is he?"
And there was much discussion about him among the 12
mass of the people. Some said, "He is a good man";
but others said, "No, he is giving people false ideas".
But no man said anything about him openly for fear of 13
the Jews.

Now in the middle of the feast Jesus went up to the 14
Temple and was teaching. Then the Jews were surprised 15
and said, "How has this man got knowledge of books?
He has never been to school." Jesus gave them this 16
answer: "It is not my teaching, but his who sent me.
If any man is ready to do God's pleasure he will have 17
knowledge of the teaching and of where it comes from—
from God or from myself. The man whose words come 18
from himself is looking for glory for himself, but he who
is looking for the glory of him who sent him—that man
is true and there is no evil in him. Did not Moses give 19

you the law? Even so, not one of you keeps the law.
Why have you a desire to put me to death?" The people 20
said in answer, "You have an evil spirit: who has any
desire to put you to death?" This was the answer of 21
Jesus: "I have done one work and you are all surprised
at it. Moses gave you circumcision—not that it comes 22
from Moses, but from the fathers—and even on the
Sabbath you give a child circumcision. If a child is given 23
circumcision on the Sabbath so that the law of Moses may
not be broken, why are you angry with me because I
made a man completely well on the Sabbath? Let not 24
your decisions be based on what you see, but on right-
eousness."

Then some of the people of Jerusalem said, "Is not 25
this the man whose death is desired? And here he is 26
talking openly and they say nothing to him! Is it possible
that the rulers have knowledge that this is truly the
Christ? However, it is clear to us where this man 27
comes from: but when the Christ comes no one will
have knowledge where he comes from." Then, when 28
he was teaching in the Temple, Jesus said with a loud
voice, "You have knowledge of me and you have know-
ledge of where I come from; and I have not come of
myself; but there is One who has sent me; he is true,
but you have no knowledge of him. I have knowledge 29
of him because I came from him and he sent me." Then 30
they had a desire to take him: but no man put hands on
him because his hour was still to come. And numbers 31
of the people had belief in him, and they said, "When
the Christ comes will he do more signs than this man
has done?" This discussion of the people came to the 32
ears of the Pharisees; and the chief priests and the
Pharisees sent servants to take him. Then Jesus said, 33
"I will be with you a little longer and then I go to him
who sent me. You will be looking for me, and you will 34
not see me: and where I am you may not come." So 35
the Jews said among themselves, "To what place is he
going where we will not see him? Will he go to the

Jews living among the Greeks and become the teacher
of the Greeks? What is this saying of his, 'You will 36
be looking for me and will not see me, and where I am
you may not come'?"

On the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus got 37
up and said in a loud voice, "If any man is in need of
drink let him come to me and I will give it to him. He 38
who has faith in me, out of his body, as the Writings
have said, will come rivers of living water." This he 39
said of the Spirit which would be given to those who
had faith in him: the Spirit had not been given then,
because the glory of Jesus was still to come. When these 40
words came to their ears, some of the people said, "This
is certainly the prophet". Others said, "This is the 41
Christ". But others said, "Not so; will the Christ come
from Galilee? Do not the Writings say that the Christ 42
comes of the seed of David and from Bethlehem, the
little town where David was?" So there was a divi- 43
sion among the people because of him. And some of 44
them had a desire to take him; but no man put hands
on him.

Then the servants went back to the chief priests and 45
Pharisees, who said to them, "Why have you not got
him with you?" The servants made answer, "No man 46
ever said things like this man" Then the Pharisees said 47
to them, "Have you, like the others, been given false
ideas? Have any of the rulers belief in him, or any one 48
of the Pharisees? But these people who have no know- 49
ledge of the law are cursed." Nicodemus—he who had 50
come to Jesus before, being himself one of them—said
to them, "Is a man judged by our law before it has given 51
him a hearing and has knowledge of what he has done?"
This was their answer: "And do you come from Galilee? 52
Make search and you will see that no prophet comes out
of Galilee."

8 [And every man went to his house; but Jesus went to 53 1
the mountain of Olives.

AND early in the morning he came again into the Temple and all the people came to him and he was seated teaching them. Now the scribes and Pharisees came, with a woman who had been taken in the act of being untrue to her husband; and putting her forward, they said to him, "Master, this woman has been taken in the very act of being untrue to her husband. Now in the law Moses gave directions that such women were to be stoned; what do you say about it?" They said this, testing him, so that they might have something against him. But Jesus, with his head bent down, made letters on the floor with his finger. But when they went on with their questions, he got up and said to them, "Let him among you who is without sin be the first to send a stone at her". And again, with bent head, he made letters on the floor. And when his words came to their ears, they went out one by one, starting with the oldest even to the last, because they were conscious of what was in their hearts: and Jesus was there by himself with the woman before him. Then Jesus got up, and seeing nobody but the woman, he said to her, "Where are the men who said things against you? did no one give a decision against you?" And she said, "No man, Lord". And Jesus said, "And I do not give a decision against you: go and never do wrong again".]

THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

Then again Jesus said to them, "I am the light of the world; he who comes with me will not be walking in the dark but will have the light of life". So the Pharisees said to him, "The witness you give is about yourself: your witness is not true". Jesus said in answer, "Even if I give witness about myself, my witness is true, because I have knowledge of where I came from and where I am going; but you have no knowledge of where I come from or of where I am going. You are judging

from what you see; I am judging no man. Even if I am 16
judging, my decision is right, because I am not by
myself—with me is him who sent me. Even in your law 17
it is said that the witness of two men is true. I give 18
witness about myself and the Father who sent me gives
witness about me." Then they said to him, "Where 19
is your Father?" Jesus said in answer, "You have no
knowledge of me or of my Father: if you had knowledge
of me you would have knowledge of my Father". Jesus 20
said these words in the place where the offerings were
stored, while he was teaching in the Temple: but no
man took him because his time was still to come.

Then he said to them again, "I am going away and 21
you will be looking for me, but death will overtake you
in your sins. It is not possible for you to come where
I am going." So the Jews said, "Will he take his life? 22
Is that why he says, 'Where I go it is not possible for
you to come'?" And he said to them, "You are of the 23
earth; I am from heaven: you are of this world; I am
not of this world. For this reason I said to you that 24
death will overtake you in your sins: for if you have not
faith that I am he, death will come to you while you are
in your sins." Then they said to him, "Who are you?" 25
Jesus said, "What I said to you from the first. I have 26
much to say about you and against you: but he who sent
me is true and what he has said to me I say to the world."
They did not see that his words were about the Father. 27
So Jesus said, "When the Son of man has been lifted 28
up by you, then it will be clear to you who I am, and
that I do nothing of myself, but say as the Father gave
me teaching. He who sent me is with me; he has not 29
gone from me, because at all times I do the things which
are pleasing to him." When he said this a number came 30
to have faith in him.

Then Jesus said to the Jews who had faith in him, "If 31
you keep my word, then you are truly my disciples;
and you will have knowledge of what is true, and that 32
will make you free". They said to him in answer, "We 33

are Abraham's seed and have never been any man's servant: why do you say, 'You will become free'?" And 34
this was the answer Jesus gave them: "Truly, I say to you, Everyone who does evil is the servant of sin. Now 35
the servant does not go on living in the house for ever, but the Son does. If then the Son makes you free, you 36
will be truly free. I am conscious that you are Abraham's 37
seed; but you have a desire to put me to death because my word has no place in you. I say the things which 38
I have seen in my Father's house: and you do the things which come to you from your father's house." In answer 39
they said to him, "Our father is Abraham". Jesus said to them, "If you were Abraham's children you would do what Abraham did. But now you have a desire to put 40
me to death, a man who has said to you what is true, as I had it from God: Abraham did not do that. You 41
are doing the works of your father." They said to him, "We are true sons of Abraham; we have one Father, who is God". Jesus said to them, "If God was your 42
Father you would have love for me, because it was from God I came and am here. I did not come of myself, but he sent me. Why are my words not clear to you? 43
It is because your ears are shut to my teaching. You 44
are the children of your father the Evil One and it is your pleasure to do his desires. From the first he was a taker of life; and he did not go in the true way because there is no true thing in him. When he says what is false, it is natural to him, for he is false and the father of what is false. But because I say what is true, you have 45
no belief in me. Which of you is able truly to say that 46
I am a sinner? If I say what is true, why have you no belief in me? He who is a child of God gives ear to 47
the words of God: your ears are not open to them because you are not from God." The Jews said to him in answer, 48
"Are we not right in saying that you are of Samaria and have an evil spirit?" And this was the answer of 49
Jesus: "I have not an evil spirit; but I give honour to my Father and you do not give honour to me. I, however, 50

am not in search of glory for myself: there is One who is searching for it and he is judge. Truly, I say to 51
you, If a man keeps my word he will never see death."
The Jews said to him, "Now we are certain that you 52
have an evil spirit. Abraham is dead, and the prophets
are dead; and you say, 'If a man keeps my word he will
never see death'. Are you greater than our father 53
Abraham, who is dead? and the prophets are dead: who
do you say that you are?" Jesus said in answer, "If 54
I take glory for myself, my glory is nothing: it is my
Father who gives me glory, of whom you say that he is
your God. You have no knowledge of him, but I have 55
knowledge of him; and if I said I have no knowledge of
him I would be talking falsely like you: but I have full
knowledge of him, and I keep his word. Your father 56
Abraham was full of joy at the hope of seeing my day:
he saw it and was glad." Then the Jews said to him, 57
"You are not fifty years old; have you seen Abraham?"
Jesus said to them, "Truly, I say to you, Before Abraham 58
came into being, I am". So they took up stones to send 59
at him: but Jesus got secretly out of their way and went
out of the Temple.

THE MAN BLIND FROM BIRTH

9 AND when he went on his way, he saw a man blind 1
from birth. And his disciples put a question to 2
him, saying, "Master, was it because of this man's
sin, or the sin of his father and mother, that he has been
blind from birth?" Jesus said in answer, "It was not 3
because of his sin, or because of his father's or mother's;
it was so that the works of God might be seen openly
in him. While it is day we have to do the works of him 4
who sent me: the night comes when no work may be
done. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of 5
the world." Having said these words, he put earth, 6
mixed with water from his mouth, on the man's eyes,
and said to him, "Go and make yourself clean in the 7

bath of Siloam" (the sense of the name is, Sent). So he went away and, after washing, came back able to see. Then the neighbours and others who had seen him before 8
in the street with his hand out for money, said, "Is not this the man who got money from people?" Some said, 9
"It is he": others said, "No, but he is like him". He said, "I am he". So they said to him, "How then were 10
your eyes made open?" His answer was: "The man 11
who is named Jesus put earth mixed with water on my eyes, and said to me, 'Go and make yourself clean in Siloam': so I went away and, after washing, am now able to see". And they said to him, "Where is he?" 12
His answer was: "I have no knowledge".

They took him before the Pharisees—this man who 13
had been blind. Now the day on which the earth was 14
mixed by Jesus and the man's eyes were made open was the Sabbath. So the Pharisees put more questions to 15
him about how his eyes had been made open. And he said to them, "He put earth on my eyes, and I had a wash and am able to see". Then some of the Pharisees said, 16
"That man has not come from God, for he does not keep the Sabbath". Others said, "How is it possible for a sinner to do such signs?" So there was a division among them. Again they said to the blind man, "What 17
have you to say about him for opening your eyes?" And he said, "He is a prophet". Now the Jews had no belief 18
in the statement that he had been blind and was now able to see, till they sent for the father and mother of the man whose eyes had been made open, and put the 19
question to them, saying, "Is this your son, of whom you say that he was blind at birth? how is it then that he is now able to see?" In answer his father and mother 20
said, "We are certain that this is our son and that he was blind at birth: but how it is he is now able to see, 21
or who made his eyes open, we are not able to say: put the question to him; he is old enough to give an answer for himself". They said this because of their fear of the 22
Jews: for the Jews had come to an agreement that if

any man said that Jesus was the Christ he would be put out of the Synagogue. That was the reason why they 23
said, "He is old enough; put the question to him". So 24
they sent a second time for the man who had been blind and they said to him, "Give glory to God: it is clear to us that this man is a sinner". He said in answer, 25
"I have no knowledge if he is a sinner or not, but one thing I am certain about: I was blind, and now I see". Then they said to him, "What did he do to you? how 26
did he give you the use of your eyes?" His answer was: 27
"I have said it before, but your ears were shut: why would you have me say it again? is it your desire to become his disciples?" And they were angry with him 28
and said, "You are his disciple, but we are disciples of Moses. We are certain that God gave his word to Moses: 29
but as for this man, we have no knowledge where he comes from." The man said in answer, "Why, here is 30
a strange thing! You have no knowledge where he comes from though he gave me the use of my eyes. We 31
have knowledge that God does not give ear to sinners, but if any man is a worshipper of God and does his pleasure, to him God's ears are open. In all the years 32
nobody has ever before seen the eyes of a man blind from birth made open. If this man did not come from 33
God he would be unable to do anything." Their answer 34
was: "You came to birth through sin; do you make yourself our teacher?" And they put him out of the Synagogue.

It came to the ears of Jesus that they had put him out, 35
and meeting him he said, "Have you faith in the Son of man?" He said in answer, "And who is he, Lord? Say, 36
so that I may have faith in him." Jesus said to him, 37
"You have seen him; it is he who is talking to you". And he said, "Lord, I have faith". And he gave him 38
worship. And Jesus said, "I came into this world to be 39
a judge, so that those who do not see may see, and those who see may become blind". These words came to the 40
ears of the Pharisees who were with him and they said

to him, "Are we, then, blind?" Jesus said to them, "If 41
you were blind you would have no sin: but now that
you say, 'We see'; your sin is there still."

"THE DOOR OF THE SHEEP"

10 "TRULY, I say to you, He who does not go through 1
the door into the place where the sheep are kept,
but gets in by some other way, is a thief and an
outlaw. He who goes in by the door is the keeper of 2
the sheep. The porter lets him in; and the sheep give 3
ear to his voice; he says over the names of the sheep,
and takes them out. When he has got them all out, he 4
goes before them, and the sheep go after him, for they
have knowledge of his voice. They will not go after 5
another who is not their keeper, but will take flight from
him, because his voice is strange to them." In this Jesus 6
was teaching them in the form of a story: but what he
said was not clear to them.

So Jesus said again, "Truly, I say to you, I am the 7
door of the sheep. All who came before me are thieves 8
and outlaws: but the sheep did not give ear to them.
I am the door: if any man goes in through me he will 9
have salvation, and will go in and go out, and will get
food. The thief comes only to take the sheep and to put 10
them to death: he comes for their destruction: I have
come so that they may have life and have it in greater
measure. I am the good keeper of sheep: the good 11
keeper gives his life for the sheep. He who is a servant, 12
and not the keeper or the owner of the sheep, sees the
wolf coming and goes in flight, away from the sheep;
and the wolf comes down on them and sends them in all
directions: because he is a servant he has no interest in 13
the sheep. I am the good keeper; I have knowledge of 14
my sheep, and they have knowledge of me, even as the 15
Father has knowledge of me and I of the Father; and
I am giving my life for the sheep. And I have other 16
sheep which are not of this place: I will be their guide

in the same way, and they will give ear to my voice, so there will be one flock and one keeper. For this reason 17
am I loved by the Father, because I give up my life so that I may take it again. No one takes it away from 18
me; I give it up of myself. I have power to give it up, and I have power to take it again. These orders I have from my Father."

DIVISION AMONG THE JEWS

There was a division again among the Jews because 19
of these words. And a number of them said, "He has 20
an evil spirit and is out of his mind; why do you give ear to him?" Others said, "These are not the words 21
of one who has an evil spirit. Is it possible for an evil spirit to make blind people see?"

Then came the feast of the opening of the Temple in 22
Jerusalem: it was winter; and Jesus was walking in the 23
Temple, in Solomon's covered way. Then the Jews came 24
round him, saying, "How long are you going to keep us in doubt? If you are the Christ, say so clearly." Jesus said in answer, "I have said it and you have no 25
belief: the works which I do in my Father's name, these give witness about me. But you have no belief because 26
you are not of my sheep. My sheep give ear to my 27
voice, and I have knowledge of them, and they come after me: and I give them eternal life; they will never 28
come to destruction, and no one will ever take them out of my hand. That which my Father has given to me has 29
more value than all; and no one is able to take anything out of the Father's hand. I and my Father are one." 30
Then the Jews took up stones again to send at him. 31
Jesus said to them in answer, "I have let you see a 32
number of good works from the Father; for which of those works are you stoning me?" This was their 33
answer: "We are not stoning you for a good work but for evil words; because being a man you make yourself God". In answer, Jesus said, "Is there not a saying in 34

your law, 'I said, You are gods'? If he said they were 35
gods, to whom the word of God came (and the Writings
are not able to be broken), do you say of him whom the 36
Father made holy and sent into the world, 'Your words
are evil'; because I said, I am God's Son? If I am not 37
doing the works of my Father, do not have belief in me;
but if I am doing them, then have belief in the works 38
even if you have no belief in me; so that you may see
clearly and be certain that the Father is in me and I am
in the Father." Then again they made an attempt to 39
take him; but he got away from them.

And he went again to the other side of the Jordan, 40
to the place where John first gave baptism; and he was
there for a time. And a great number of people came 41
to him, saying, "John did no sign: but everything John
said of this man was true". And a number came to have 42
faith in him there.

THE DEATH OF LAZARUS

Now a certain man named Lazarus was ill; he was 1
of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister
Martha. (The Mary whose brother Lazarus was 2
ill, was the Mary who put perfumed oil on the Lord
and made his feet dry with her hair.) So the sisters sent 3
to him, saying, "Lord, your dear friend is ill". When 4
this came to his ears, Jesus said, "The end of this disease
is not death, but the glory of God, so that the Son of
God may have glory because of it". Now Jesus had 5
love in his heart for Martha and her sister and Lazarus.
So when the news came to him that Lazarus was ill, 6
he did not go from the place where he was for two days.
Then after that time he said to his disciples, "Let us go 7
into Judaea again". The disciples said to him, "Master, 8
the Jews were attempting only the other day to have
you stoned, and are you going back there again?" Then 9
Jesus said in answer, "Are there not twelve hours in
the day? A man may go about in the day without falling

because he sees the light of this world. But if a man 10
goes about in the night, he may have a fall because the
light is not in him." These things said he: and after 11
that he said to them, "Lazarus our friend is at rest; but
I go so that I may make him come out of his sleep".
Then his disciples said to him, "Lord, if he is resting 12
he will get well". Jesus, however, was talking of his 13
death: but they had the idea that he was talking about
taking rest in sleep. Then Jesus said to them clearly, 14
"Lazarus is dead. And because of you I am glad I was 15
not there, so that you may have faith; but let us go to
him." Then Thomas, who was named Didymus, said 16
to the other disciples, "Let us go so that we may be
with him in death".

Now when Jesus came, he made the discovery that 17
Lazarus had been put into the earth four days before.
Now Bethany was near to Jerusalèm, about two miles 18
away; and a number of Jews had come to Martha and 19
Mary to give them comfort about their brother. When 20
Martha had the news that Jesus was on the way, she
went out to him, but Mary did not go from the house.
Then Martha said to Jesus, "Lord, if you had been here 21
my brother would not be dead. But I am certain that, 22
even now, whatever request you make to God, God will
give it to you." Jesus said to her, "Your brother will 23
come to life again". Martha said to him, "I am certain 24
that he will come to life again when all come back from
the dead at the last day". Jesus said to her, "I am 25
myself that day and that life; he who has faith in me will
have life even if he is dead; and no one who is living 26
and has faith in me will ever see death. Is this your
faith?" She said to him, "Yes, Lord: my faith is that 27
you are the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come
into the world". And having said this, she went away 28
and said secretly to her sister Mary, "The Master is
here and has sent for you". And Mary, hearing this, 29
got up quickly and went to him. Now Jesus had not at 30
this time come into the town, but was still in the place

where Martha had seen him. Then the Jews who were 31
with her in the house, comforting her, when they saw
Mary get up quickly and go out, went after her in the
belief that she was going to the place of the dead and
would be weeping there. When Mary came to where 32
Jesus was and saw him, she went down at his feet, saying,
"Lord, if you had been here my brother would not be
dead". And when Jesus saw her weeping, and saw the 33
Jews weeping who came with her, his spirit was moved
and he was troubled, and said, "Where have you put 34
him?" They said, "Come and see, Lord". And Jesus 35
himself was weeping. So the Jews said, "See how dear 36
he was to him!" But some of them said, "This man, 37
who made open the eyes of the blind man, was he not
able to keep his friend from death?" So Jesus, deeply 38
troubled at heart, came to the place of the dead. It was
a hole in the rock, and a stone was over the opening.
Jesus said, "Take away the stone". Martha, the sister 39
of him who was dead, said, "Lord, by this time the body
will be smelling, for he has been dead four days". Jesus 40
said to her, "Did I not say to you that if you had faith
you would see the glory of God?" So they took away 41
the stone. And Jesus, looking up to heaven, said,
"Father, I give praise to you for hearing me. I was 42
certain that your ears are at all times open to me, but
I said it because of these who are here, so that they may
see that you sent me." Then he said in a loud voice, 43
"Lazarus, come out!" And he who was dead came out, 44
with linen bands folded tightly about his hands and feet,
and a cloth about his face. Jesus said to them, "Make
him free and let him go".

Then a number of the Jews who had come to Mary 45
and had seen the things which Jesus did had belief in
him. But some of them went to the Pharisees with the 46
news of what Jesus had done.

Then the high priests and the Pharisees had a meeting 47
and said, "What are we doing? This man is doing
a number of signs. If we let him go on in this way, 48

everybody will have belief in him and the Romans will come and take away our place and our nation." But one 49
of them, Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, said to them, "You have no knowledge of anything; you do 50
not see that it is to your interest for one man to be put to death for the people, so that all the nation may not come to destruction". He did not say this of himself, 51
but being the high priest that year he said, as a prophet, that Jesus would be put to death for the nation; and not 52
for that nation only, but for the purpose of uniting in one body the children of God all over the world. And 53
from that day they took thought together how to put him to death.

So Jesus no longer went about publicly among the 54
Jews, but went from there into the country near to the waste land, to a town named Ephraim, where he was for some time with the disciples. Now the Passover of the 55
Jews was near and numbers of people went up from the country to Jerusalem to make themselves clean before the Passover. They were looking for Jesus and saying 56
to one another while they were in the Temple, "What is your opinion? Will he not come to the feast?" Now 57
the chief priests and the Pharisees had given orders that if anyone had knowledge where he was, he was to give them word, so that they might take him.

BEFORE THE PASSOVER

12 THEN, six days before the Passover, Jesus came to 1
Bethany where Lazarus was, whom Jesus had made to come back from the dead. So they made him 2
a meal there, and he was waited on by Martha, and Lazarus was among those who were seated with him at table. Then Mary, taking a pound of perfumed oil of 3
great value, put it on the feet of Jesus and made them dry with her hair: and the house became full of the smell of the perfume. But one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot 4
(who was to give him up), said, "Why was not this 5

perfume traded for three hundred pence, and the money
given to the poor?" (He said this, not because he had 6
any love for the poor; but because he was a thief, and,
having the money-bag, took for himself what was put
into it.) Then Jesus said, "Let her be. Let her keep 7
what she has for the day of my death. The poor you 8
have ever with you, but me you have not for ever."

Then a great number of the Jews had news that he was 9
there: and they came, not only because of Jesus, but so
that they might see Lazarus who had been dead and to
whom he had given life. Now there was talk among the 10
chief priests of putting Lazarus to death; for because of 11
him a great number of the Jews went away and had
belief in Jesus.

The day after, a great number of people who were 12
there for the feast, when they had the news that Jesus
was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of *palm*-trees 13
and went out to him, crying, "A blessing on him who
comes in the name of the Lord, the King of Israel!"
And Jesus saw a young ass and took his seat on it; as 14
the Writings say, "Have no fear, daughter of Zion: see 15
your King is coming, seated on a young ass". (These 16
things were not clear to his disciples at first: but when
Jesus had been lifted up into his glory, then it came to
their minds that these things in the Writings were about
him and that they had been done to him.) Now the 17
people who were with him when his voice came to
Lazarus in the place of the dead, and gave him life again,
had been talking about it. And that was the reason the 18
people went out to him, because it had come to their
ears that he had done this sign. Then the Pharisees said 19
one to another, "You see, you are unable to do anything:
the world has gone after him".

Now there were some Greeks among the people who 20
had come up to give worship at the feast: they came to 21
Philip, who was of Bethsaida in Galilee, and made a
request, saying, "Sir, we have a desire to see Jesus".
Philip went and gave word of it to Andrew; and Andrew 22

went with Philip to Jesus. And Jesus said to them in 23
answer, "The hour of the glory of the Son of man has
come. Truly, I say to you, If a seed of grain does not 24
go into the earth and come to an end, it is still a seed
and no more; but through its death it gives much fruit.
He who is in love with life will have it taken from him; 25
and he who has no care for his life in this world will
keep it for ever and ever. If any man is my servant, 26
let him come after me; and where I am, there will my
servant be. If any man becomes my servant my Father
will give him honour. Now is my soul troubled; and 27
what am I to say? Father, keep me from this hour. No:
for this purpose have I come to this hour. Father, give 28
glory to your name." Then there came a voice out of
heaven, saying, "I have given it glory, and I will give
it glory again". Hearing the sound a number of people 29
who were there said that it was thunder: others said,
"An angel was talking to him". Jesus said in answer, 30
"This voice came not for me but for you. Now is this 31
world to be judged: now will the ruler of this world
be sent out. And I, if I am lifted up from the earth, 32
will make all men come to me." (This he said, pointing 33
to the sort of death he would have.) Then the people 34
in answer said to him, "The law says that the Christ
will have life without end: how say you then that it is
necessary for the Son of man to be lifted up? Who is
this Son of man?" Jesus said to them, "For a little time 35
longer the light will be among you; while you have the
light go on walking in it, so that the dark may not
overtake you: one walking in the dark has no knowledge
of where he is going. In so far as you have the light, 36
put your faith in the light so that you may become sons
of light."

With these words Jesus went away and for a time
was not seen again by them. But though he had done 37
such a number of signs before them, they still had no
belief in him: so that the words of the prophet Isaiah 38
might come true, when he said,

Lord, who has any belief in our preaching?
And the arm of the Lord, to whom has it been unveiled?

For this reason they were unable to have belief, because 39
Isaiah said again,

He has made their eyes blind, and their hearts hard; 40
For fear that they might see with their eyes and get
knowledge with their hearts,
And be changed,
And I might make them well.

(Isaiah said these words because he saw his glory. His 41
words were about him.) However, a number even of 42
the rulers had belief in him, but because of the Pharisees
they did not say so openly for fear that they might be
shut out from the Synagogue: for the praise of men was 43
dearer to them than the approval of God.

Then Jesus said with a loud voice, "He who has faith 44
in me, has faith not in me, but in him who sent me. And 45
he who sees me sees him who sent me. I have come as 46
a light into the world, so that no one who has faith in
me will go on living in the dark. And if any man gives 47
ear to my words and does not keep them, I am not his
judge: I did not come to be judge of the world but to
give salvation to the world. He who puts me on one 48
side and does not take my words to heart, is not without
a judge: the word which I have said will be his judge on
the last day. For I have not said it on my authority, 49
but the Father who sent me gave me orders what to say
and how to say it. And I have knowledge that his order 50
is eternal life: so that the things which I say, I say them
even as the Father says them to me."

THE WASHING OF THE DISCIPLES' FEET

13 Now before the feast of the Passover, it was clear 1
to Jesus that the time had come for him to go
away from this world to the Father. Having once
had love for those in the world who were his, his love

for them went on to the end. So while a meal was going 2
on, the Evil One having now put it into the heart of
Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to be false to him, Jesus, 3
being conscious that the Father had put everything into
his hands, and that he came from God and was going
to God, got up from table, put off his robe and took 4
a cloth and put it round him. Then he put water into 5
a basin and was washing the feet of the disciples and
drying them with the cloth which was round him. So 6
he came to Simon Peter. Peter said, "Lord, are my feet
to be washed by you?" And Jesus, answering, said to 7
him, "What I do is not clear to you now, but it will be
clear to you in time to come". Peter said, "I will never 8
let my feet be washed by you, never". Jesus said in
answer, "If I do not make you clean you have no part
with me". Simon Peter said to him, "Lord, not my 9
feet only, but my hands and my head". Jesus said to 10
him, "He who is bathed has need only to have his feet
washed and then he is clean all over: and you, my
disciples, are clean, but not all of you". (He had 11
knowledge who was false to him; that is why he said,
"You are not all clean".)

Then, after washing their feet and putting on his robe 12
again, he took his seat and said to them, "Do you see
what I have done to you? You give me the name of 13
Master and Lord: and you are right; that is what I am.
If then I, the Lord and the Master, have made your feet 14
clean, it is right for you to make one another's feet
clean. I have given you an example, so that you may 15
do what I have done to you. Truly, I say to you, A ser- 16
vant is not greater than his lord; and he who is sent is
not greater than the one who sent him. If these things 17
are clear to you, happy are you if you do them. I am not 18
talking of you all: I have knowledge of my true disciples,
but things are as they are, so that the Writings may
come true, 'The foot of him who takes bread with me
is lifted up against me'. From this time forward, I give 19
you knowledge of things before they come about, so

that when they come about you may have belief that I am
he. Truly, I say to you, He who takes to his heart anyone 20
whom I send, takes me to his heart; and he who so takes
me, takes him who sent me."

JUDAS ISCARIOT IS FALSE TO JESUS

When Jesus had said this he was troubled in spirit, 21
and gave witness, saying, "Truly, I say to you, that
one of you will be false to me". Then the eyes of the 22
disciples were turned on one another, in doubt as to
whom he had in mind. There was at table one of his 23
disciples, the one dear to Jesus, resting his head on Jesus'
breast. Making a sign to him, Simon Peter said, "Who 24
is it he is talking about?" He, then, resting his head 25
on Jesus' breast, said to him, "Lord, who is it?" This 26
was the answer Jesus gave: "It is the one to whom I will
give this bit of bread after I have put it in the vessel".
Then he took the bit of bread, put it into the vessel and
gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. And when 27
Judas took the bread Satan went into him. Then Jesus
said to him, "Do quickly what you have to do". Now 28
it was not clear to anyone at table why he said this to
him. Some were of the opinion that because Judas kept 29
the money-bag Jesus said to him, "Get the things we
have need of for the feast"; or, that he was to give some-
thing to the poor. So Judas, having taken the bit of 30
bread, straight away went out: and it was night.

Then when he had gone out, Jesus said, "Now is glory 31
given to the Son of man, and God is given glory in him.
If God is given glory in him, God will give him glory 32
in himself, and will give him glory even now. My dear 33
children, I am only to be with you a little longer. Then
you will be looking for me: and as I said to the Jews,
so now I say to you, Where I am going you may not
come. I give you a new law: Have love one for another; 34
even as I have had love for you, so are you to have love
one for another. By this it will be clear to all men 35

that you are my disciples, if you have love one for another."

Simon Peter said to him, "Lord, where are you 36
going?" Jesus said in answer, "Where I am going you may not come with me now, but you will come later". Peter said to him, "Why may I not come with you even 37
now? I will give up my life for you." Jesus said in 38
answer, "Will you give up your life for me? Truly, I say to you, Before the cry of the *cock* you will have said three times that you are not my disciple."

FAITH IN GOD

14 "LET not your heart be troubled: have faith in God 1
and have faith in me. In my Father's house are 2
rooms enough; if it was not so, would I have said that I am going to make ready a place for you? And if I go and make ready a place for you, I will come 3
back again and will take you to be with me, so that you may be where I am. And you all have knowledge of 4
where I am going, and of the way to it." Thomas said, 5
"Lord, we have no knowledge of where you are going; how may we have knowledge of the way?" Jesus said 6
to him, "I am the true and living way: no one comes to the Father but by me. If you had knowledge of me, you 7
would have knowledge of my Father: you have knowledge of him now and have seen him." Philip said to 8
him, "Lord, let us see the Father, and we have need of nothing more". Jesus said to him, "Philip, have I been 9
with you all this time, and still you have no knowledge of me? He who has seen me has seen the Father. Why do you say, 'Let us see the Father'? Have you not faith 10
that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words which I say to you, I say not from myself: but the Father who is in me all the time does his works. Have faith that I am in the Father and that the Father 11
is in me: at least, have faith in me because of what I do. Truly, I say to you, He who puts his faith in me will do 12

the very works which I do, and he will do greater things
than these, because I am going to my Father. And 13
whatever request you make in my name, that I will do,
so that the Father may have glory in the Son. If you 14
make any request to me in my name, I will do it. If 15
you have love for me, you will keep my laws. And I will 16
make prayer to the Father and he will give you another
Helper to be with you for ever, even the Spirit of true 17
knowledge. That Spirit the world is not able to take to
its heart because it sees him not and has no knowledge
of him: but you have knowledge of him, because he is
ever with you and will be in you. I will not let you be 18
without a friend: I am coming to you. A little time 19
longer, and the world will see me no more; but you will
see me; and you will be living because I am living. At 20
that time it will be clear to you that I am in my Father,
and you are in me, and I in you. He who has my laws 21
and keeps them, he it is who has love for me: and he who
has love for me will be loved by my Father, and I will
have love for him and will let myself be seen clearly
by him." Judas (not Judas Iscariot) said to him, "How 22
is it that you will let yourself be seen clearly by us and
not by the world?" Jesus said to him in answer, "If 23
anyone has love for me, he will keep my words: and
he will be dear to my Father; and we will come to him
and make our living-place with him. He who has no 24
love for me does not keep my words; and the word
which you are hearing is not my word but the Father's
who sent me.

"I have said all this to you while I am still with you. 25
But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will 26
send in my name, will be your teacher in all things and
will put you in mind of everything I have said to you.
May peace be with you; my peace I give to you: I give 27
it not as the world gives. Let not your heart be troubled;
let it be without fear. Keep in mind how I said to you, 28
I go away and come to you again. If you had love for
me you would be glad, because I am going to the Father:

for the Father is greater than I. And now I have given 29
you word of it before it comes, so that, when it comes,
you may have faith. After this I will not say much to 30
you, because the ruler of this world comes: and he has
no power over me; but he comes so that the world may 31
see that I have love for the Father, and that I am doing
as I am ordered by the Father. Get up, and let us go."

THE TRUE VINE

15 "I AM the true vine and my Father is the gardener. 1
He takes away every branch on me which has no 2
fruit, and every branch which has fruit he makes
clean, so that it may have more fruit. You are clean, 3
even now, through the teaching which I have given you.
Be in me at all times as I am in you. As the branch is 4
not able to give fruit of itself, if it is not still on the vine,
so you are not able to do so if you are not in me. I am 5
the vine, you are the branches: he who is in me at all
times as I am in him, gives much fruit, because without
me you are able to do nothing. If a man does not keep 6
himself in me, he becomes dead and is cut off like a dry
branch; such branches are taken up and put in the fire
and burned. If you are in me at all times, and my words 7
are in you, then anything for which you make a request
will be done for you. Here is my Father's glory, in 8
that you give much fruit and so are my true disciples.
Even as the Father has given me his love, so I have 9
given my love to you: be ever in my love. If you keep 10
my laws, you will be ever in my love, even as I have
kept my Father's laws, and am ever in his love. I have 11
said these things to you so that I may have joy in you
and so that your joy may be complete. This is the law 12
I give you: Have love one for another, even as I have
love for you. Greater love has no man than this, that 13
a man gives up his life for his friends. You are my friends, 14
if you do what I give you orders to do. No longer do 15
I give you the name of servants; because a servant is

without knowledge of what his master is doing: I give you the name of friends, because I have given you knowledge of all the things which my Father has said to me.
You did not take me for yourselves, but I took you for 16
myself; and I gave you the work of going about and producing fruit which will be for ever; so that whatever request you make to the Father in my name he may give it to you. So this is my law for you: Have love one for 17
another. If you are hated by the world, keep in mind 18
that I was hated by the world before you. If you were 19
of the world, you would be loved by the world: but because you are not of the world, but I have taken you out of the world, you are hated by the world. Keep in 20
mind the words I said to you, A servant is not greater than his lord. If they were cruel to me, they will be cruel to you; if they kept my words, they will keep yours.
They will do all this to you because of my name— 21
because they have no knowledge of him who sent me.
If I had not come and been their teacher they would have 22
had no sin: but now they have no reason to give for their sin. He who has hate for me has hate for my 23
Father. If I had not done among them the works which 24
no other man ever did, they would have had no sin: but now they have seen, and they have had hate in their hearts for me and my Father. This comes about so that 25
the writing in their law may be made true, 'Their hate for me was without cause'. When the Helper comes, 26
whom I will send to you from the Father—even the Spirit of true knowledge who comes from the Father—
he will give witness about me; and you, in addition, will 27
give witness because you have been with me from the first."

THE COMING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

16 "I HAVE said these things to you so that you may not 1
be in doubt. They will put you out of the Synagogues: 2
yes, the time is coming when whoever puts you to death will have the belief that he is doing God's pleasure.

They will do these things to you because they have not 3
had knowledge of the Father or of me. I have said these 4
things to you so that when the time comes, what I have
said may come to your mind. I did not say them to you
at the first, because then I was still with you. But now 5
I am going to him who sent me; and not one of you says
to me, 'Where are you going?' But your hearts are 6
full of sorrow because I have said these things. But what 7
I am saying is true: my going is for your good: for if
I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you;
but if I go, I will send him to you. And he, when he 8
comes, will make the world conscious of sin, and of
righteousness, and of being judged: of sin, because they 9
have not faith in me; of righteousness, because I go to 10
the Father and you will see me no more; of being judged, 11
because the ruler of this world has been judged. I have 12
still much to say to you, but you are not strong enough
for it now. However, when he, the Spirit of true know- 13
ledge, has come, he will be your guide into all true
knowledge: for his words will not come from himself,
but whatever has come to his hearing, that he will say:
and he will make clear to you the things to come. He 14
will give me glory, because he will take of what is mine,
and make it clear to you. Everything which the Father 15
has is mine: that is why I say, He will take of what is
mine and will make it clear to you. After a little time 16
you will see me no longer; and then again, after a little
time, you will see me." So some of the disciples said 17
one to another, "What is this he is saying, 'After a little
time you will see me no longer; and then again, after
a little time, you will see me'? and, 'I am going to the
Father'?" So they said again and again, "What is this 18
he is saying, 'A little time'? His words are not clear
to us." Jesus saw that they had a desire to put the 19
question to him, so he said to them, "Is this what you
are questioning one with another, why I said, After
a little time you will see me no longer; and then again,
after a little time, you will see me? Truly, I say to you, 20

You will be weeping and sorrowing, but the world will be glad: you will be sad, but your sorrow will be turned into joy. When a woman is about to give birth she has 21
sorrow, because her hour is come; but when she has given birth to the child, the pain is put out of her mind by the joy that a man has come into the world. So 22
you have sorrow now: but I will see you again, and your hearts will be glad, and no one will take away your joy. And on that day you will put no questions to me. Truly, 23
I say to you, Whatever request you make to the Father, he will give it to you in my name. Up to now you have 24
made no request in my name: do so, and it will be answered, so that your hearts may be full of joy.

GOD THE FATHER

"All this I have said to you in veiled language: but 25
the time is coming when I will no longer say things in veiled language but will give you knowledge of the Father clearly. In that day you will make requests in 26
my name: and I do not say that I will make prayer to the Father for you, for the Father himself gives his love 27
to you, because you have given your love to me and have had faith that I came from God. I came out from 28
the Father and have come into the world: again, I go away from the world and go to the Father." His disciples 29
said, "Now you are talking clearly and not in veiled language. Now we are certain that you have knowledge 30
of all things and have no need for anyone to put questions to you: through this we have faith that you came from God." Jesus made answer, "Have you faith now? 31
See, a time is coming, yes, it is now here, when you will 32
go away in all directions, every man to his house, and I will be by myself: but I am not by myself, because the Father is with me. I have said all these things to you 33
so that in me you may have peace. In the world you have trouble: but take heart! I have overcome the world."

JESUS' PRAYER TO THE FATHER

17 JESUS said these things; then, lifting his eyes to 1
heaven, he said, "Father, the time has now come;
give glory to your Son, so that the Son may give
glory to you: even as you gave him authority over all 2
flesh, to give eternal life to all those whom you have
given to him. And this is eternal life: to have knowledge 3
of you, the only true God, and of him whom you have
sent, even Jesus Christ. I have given you glory on the 4
earth, having done all the work which you gave me to do.
And now, Father, let me have glory with you, even that 5
glory which I had with you before the world was. I have 6
given knowledge of your name to the men whom you
gave me out of the world: yours they were, and you
gave them to me, and they have kept your words. Now 7
it is clear to them that whatever you have given to me
comes from you: because I have given them the words 8
which you gave to me; and they have taken them to
heart, and have certain knowledge that I came from you,
and they have faith that you sent me. My prayer is for 9
them: my prayer is not for the world, but for those whom
you have given to me, because they are yours (all mine 10
are yours, and yours are mine) and I have glory in them.
And now I will be no longer in the world, but they are 11
in the world and I come to you. Holy Father, keep them
in your name which you have given to me, so that they
may be one even as we are one. While I was with them 12
I kept them safe in your name which you have given to
me: I took care of them and not one of them has come
to destruction, but only the son of destruction, so that
the Writings might come true. And now I come to you; 13
and these things I say in the world so that they may have
my joy complete in them. I have given your word to 14
them; and they are hated by the world, because they
are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.
My prayer is not that you will take them out of the 15
world, but that you will keep them from the Evil One.

They are not of the world any more than I am of the 16
world. Make them holy by the true word: your word 17
is the true word. Even as you have sent me into the 18
world, so I have sent them into the world. And for 19
them I make myself holy, so that they may be made truly
holy. My prayer is not for them only, but for all who 20
will have faith in me through their word; may they all 21
be one! Even as you, Father, are in me and I am in you,
so let them be in us, so that all men may come to have
faith that you sent me. And the glory which you have 22
given to me I have given to them, so that they may be
one even as we are one; I in them, and you in me, so 23
that they may be made completely one, and so that it
may become clear to all men that you have sent me and
that they are loved by you as I am loved by you. Father, 24
it is my desire that these whom you have given to me
may be by my side where I am, so that they may see
my glory which you have given to me, because you had
love for me before the world came into being. Father 25
of righteousness, I have knowledge of you, though the
world has not; and to these it is clear that you sent me;
and I have given to them knowledge of your name, and 26
will give it, so that the love which you have for me may
be in them and I in them."

IN THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE

18 WHEN Jesus had said these words he went out 1
with his disciples over the stream Kedron to
a garden, into which he went with his disciples.
And Judas, who was false to him, had knowledge of the 2
place because Jesus went there frequently with his dis-
ciples. So Judas, getting a band of armed men and 3
police from the chief priests and Pharisees, went there
with lights and with arms. Then Jesus, having know- 4
ledge of everything which was coming on him, went
forward and said to them, "Who are you looking for?"
Their answer was, "Jesus the Nazarene". Jesus said, 5

"I am he". And Judas, who was false to him, was there at their side. And when he said to them, "I am he," 6
they went back, falling to the earth. So again he put 7
the question to them, "Who are you looking for?" And
they said, "Jesus the Nazarene". Jesus made answer, 8
"I have said that I am he; if you are looking for me, let
these men go away". (He said this so that his words 9
might come true, "I have kept safe all those whom you
gave to me".) Then Simon Peter, who had a sword, 10
took it out and gave the high priest's servant a blow,
cutting off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus.
Then Jesus said to Peter, "Put back your sword: am 11
I not to take the cup which my Father has given to me?"

JESUS TAKEN WITH CORDS

Then the band and the chief captain and the police 12
took Jesus and put cords round him. They took him 13
first to Annas, because Annas was the father-in-law of
Caiaphas who was the high priest that year. It was 14
Caiaphas who had said to the Jews that it was in their
interest for one man to be put to death for the people.

And Simon Peter went after Jesus with another dis- 15
ciple. Now that disciple was a friend of the high priest
and he went in with Jesus into the house of the high
priest; but Peter was kept outside at the door. Then 16
this other disciple, who was a friend of the high priest,
came out and had a word with the girl who kept the
door, and took Peter in. Then the girl who was the 17
door-keeper said to Peter, "Are you not one of this
man's disciples?" In answer he said, "I am not". Now 18
the servants and the police had made a fire of coals
because it was cold; they were warming themselves in
front of it and Peter was there with them, warming
himself.

BEFORE THE HIGH PRIEST

Then the high priest put questions to Jesus about his 19
disciples and his teaching. Jesus made answer, "I said 20
things openly to the world at all times; I have given my
teaching in the Synagogues and in the Temple to which
all the Jews come; and I have said nothing secretly.
Why are you questioning me? put questions to my 21
hearers about what I have said to them: they have know-
ledge of what I said." When he said this, one of the 22
police by his side gave him a blow with his open hand,
saying, "Do you give such an answer to the high priest?"
Jesus said in answer, "If I have said anything evil, give 23
witness to the evil: but if I said what is true, why do
you give me blows?" Then Annas sent him chained to 24
Caiaphas, the high priest.

But Simon Peter was still there warming himself by 25
the fire. They said to him, "Are you not one of his
disciples?" He said, "No, I am not". One of the 26
servants of the high priest, a relation of him whose ear
had been cut off by Peter, said, "Did I not see you with
him in the garden?" Then again Peter said, "No". 27
And straight away a *cock* gave its cry.

TO THE PRAETORIUM

So they took Jesus from Caiaphas' house to the 28
Praetorium. It was early. They themselves did not go
into the Praetorium, so that they might not become
unclean, but might take the Passover. So Pilate came 29
out to them and put the question: "What have you to
say against this man?" They said to him in answer, 30
"If the man was not a wrongdoer we would not have
given him up to you". Then Pilate said to them, "Take 31
him yourselves and let him be judged by your law".
But the Jews said to him, "We have no right to put
any man to death". (That the word of Jesus might come 32
true, pointing to the sort of death he would have.)

Then Pilate went back into the Praetorium and sent 33
for Jesus and said to him, "Are you the King of the
Jews?" Jesus made answer, "Do you say this of your- 34
self, or did others say it about me?" Pilate said, "Am 35
I a Jew? Your nation and the chief priests have given
you into my hands: what have you done?" Jesus said 36
in answer, "My kingdom is not of this world: if my
kingdom was of this world, my disciples would have
made a good fight to keep me out of the hands of the
Jews: but my kingdom is not here". Then Pilate said 37
to him, "Are you then a king?" Jesus made answer,
"You say that I am a king. For this purpose was I given
birth, and for this purpose I came into the world, that
I might give witness to what is true. Every lover of
what is true gives ear to my voice." Pilate said to him, 38
"True? what is true?"

Having said this he went out again to the Jews and
said to them, "I see no wrong in him. But every year 39
you make a request to me to let a prisoner go free at
the Passover. Is it your desire that I let the King of the
Jews go free?"

Then again they gave a loud cry, "Not this man, but 40
Barabbas". Now Barabbas was an outlaw.

THE CROWN OF THORNS

19 THEN Pilate took Jesus and had him whipped with 1
cords. And the men of the army made a crown of 2
thorns and put it on his head, and they put a purple
robe on him. And they kept coming and saying, "Long 3
life to the King of the Jews!" And they gave him blows
with their hands. And Pilate went out again and said 4
to them, "See, I let him come out to you to make it clear
to you that I see no wrong in him". Then Jesus came 5
out with the crown of thorns and the purple robe. And
Pilate said to them, "Here is the man!" So when the 6
chief priests and the police saw him they gave a loud
cry, "To the cross! to the cross!" Pilate said to them,

"Take him yourselves and put him on the cross: I see
no crime in him". And the Jews made answer, "We 7
have a law, and by that law it is right for him to be put
to death because he said he was the Son of God". When 8
this saying came to Pilate's ear his fear became greater;
and he went again into the Praetorium and said to Jesus, 9
"Where do you come from?" But Jesus gave him no
answer. Then Pilate said to him, "You say nothing to 10
me? is it not clear to you that I have power to let you
go free and power to put you to death on the cross?"
Jesus gave this answer: "You would have no power at 11
all over me if it was not given to you by God; so that he
who gave me up to you has the greater sin". Hearing 12
this, Pilate had a desire to let him go free, but the Jews
said in a loud voice, "If you let this man go, you are
not Caesar's friend: everyone who makes himself a king
goes against Caesar". So when these words came to 13
Pilate's ear, he took Jesus out, seating himself in the
judge's seat in a place named in Hebrew, Gabbatha, or
the Stone Floor. (It was the day when they made ready 14
for the Passover; and it was about the sixth hour.) And
he said to the Jews, "There is your King!" Then they 15
gave a loud cry, "Away with him! away with him! to
the cross!" Pilate said to them, "Am I to put your
King to death on the cross?" The chief priests said in
answer, "We have no king but Caesar". So then he 16
gave him up to them to be put to death on the cross.

GOLGOTHA

And they took Jesus away; and he went out with his 17
cross on him to the place which is named Dead Man's
Head (in Hebrew, Golgotha): where they put him on 18
the cross with two others, one on this side and one on
that, and Jesus in the middle. And Pilate put on the 19
cross a statement in writing. The writing was: JESUS
THE NAZARENE, THE KING OF THE JEWS.
This writing was seen by a number of the Jews, for the 20

place where Jesus was put to death on the cross was near the town; and the writing was in Hebrew and Latin and Greek. Then the chief priests of the Jews said to 21
Pilate, "Do not put, 'The King of the Jews,' but, 'He said, I am the King of the Jews'". But Pilate made 22
answer, "What I have put in writing will not be changed".

And when Jesus was nailed to the cross, the men of 23
the army took his clothing, and made a division of it into four parts, to every man a part, and they took his coat: now the coat was without a join, made out of one bit of cloth. So they said among themselves, "Let us 24
not make a division of it, but let us put it to the decision of chance and see who gets it". (They did this so that the Writings might come true, which say,

They made a distribution of my clothing among them,
And my coat they put to the decision of chance.)

This was what the men of the army did. Now by the 25
side of the cross of Jesus were his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene. So when Jesus saw his mother and the 26
disciple who was dear to him, he said to his mother, "Mother, there is your son!" Then he said to the 27
disciple, "There is your mother!" And from that hour the disciple took her to his house.

After this, being conscious that all things had now 28
been done so that the Writings might come true, Jesus said, "Give me water". Now there was a vessel ready, 29
full of bitter wine, and they put a sponge full of it on a stick and put it to his mouth. So when Jesus had taken 30
the wine he said, "All is done". And with his head bent he gave up his spirit.

WOUNDED WITH A SPEAR

Now it was the day of getting ready for the Passover, 31
and so that the bodies might not be on the cross on the Sabbath (because the day of that Sabbath was a great

day), the Jews made a request to Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. So the men of the army came, and the legs of the first 32
were broken and then of the other who was put to death on the cross with Jesus: but when they came to Jesus, 33
they saw that he was dead by this time, and so his legs were not broken; but one of the men made a wound in 34
his side with a spear, and straight away there came out blood and water. And he who saw it has given witness 35
(and his witness is true; he is certain that what he says is true) so that you may have belief. These things came 36
about so that the Writings might be true, "No bone of his body will be broken". And again another verse says, 37
"They will see him who was wounded by their spears".

THE BODY OF JESUS PUT TO REST

After these things, Joseph of Arimathaea, who was 38
a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, made a request to Pilate to let him take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate said he might do so. So he went and took away his body. And Nicodemus came (he who 39
had first come to Jesus by night) with a roll of *myrrh* and *aloes* mixed, about a hundred pounds. Then they 40
took the body of Jesus, folding linen about it with the spices, as is the way of the Jews when they put the dead to rest. Now there was a garden near the cross, and 41
in the garden a new place for the dead in which no man had ever been put. So they put Jesus there, because it 42
was the Jews' day of getting ready for the Passover, and the place was near.

THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK

20 Now on the first day of the week, very early, while 1
it was still dark, Mary Magdalene came to the place and saw that the stone had been taken away from it. Then she went running to Simon Peter, and to 2

the other disciple who was loved by Jesus, and said to them, "They have taken away the Lord out of the place of the dead and we have no knowledge where they have put him". So Peter and the other disciple went out to 3
the place of the dead. They went running together, and 4
the other disciple got in front of Peter and came first to the hole in the rock; and looking in, he saw the linen 5
bands on the earth; but he did not go in. Then Simon 6
Peter came after him and went into the hole in the rock; and he saw the linen bands on the earth, and the cloth, 7
which had been round his head, not with the linen bands but rolled up in a place by itself. Then the other disciple 8
who came there first went in; and he saw and belief came to him. For at that time they had no knowledge 9
that the Writings said that he would have to come again from the dead. So then the disciples went away again to 10
their houses.

But Mary was still there outside the hole in the rock, 11
weeping; and while she was weeping she took a look into the hole; and she saw two angels in white seated 12
where the body of Jesus had been, one at the head and the other at the feet. They said to her, "Woman, why 13
are you weeping?" She said to them, "Because they have taken away my Lord, and I have no knowledge where they have put him". And then looking round, 14
she saw Jesus there, but had no idea that it was Jesus. Jesus said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping? who 15
are you looking for?" She, taking him for the gardener, said to him, "Sir, if you have taken him away from here, say where you have put him and I will take him away". Jesus said to her, "Mary!" Turning, she said to him 16
in Hebrew, "*Rabboni!*" (which is to say, "Master"). Jesus said to her, "Do not put your hand on me, for 17
I have not gone up to the Father: but go to my brothers and say to them, I go up to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God". Mary Magdalene went 18
with the news to the disciples, and said she had seen the Lord and that he had said these things to her.

"WE HAVE SEEN THE LORD"

At evening on that day, the first day of the week, 19
when, for fear of the Jews, the doors were shut where
the disciples were, Jesus came among them and said to
them, "May peace be with you!" And when he had 20
said this, he let them see his hands and his side. Then
the disciples were glad when they saw the Lord. And 21
Jesus said to them again, "May peace be with you!
As the Father sent me, even so I now send you." And 22
when he had said this, breathing on them, he said to
them, "Let the Holy Spirit come on you: any to whom 23
you give forgiveness, will be made free from their sins;
and any from whom you keep back forgiveness, will still
be in their sins".

Now Thomas, one of the twelve, named Didymus, 24
was not with them when Jesus came. So the other 25
disciples said to him, "We have seen the Lord". But
he said to them, "If I do not see in his hands the print
of the nails and put my finger into the print of the nails,
and if I do not put my hand into his side, I will never
have belief".

And after eight days, his disciples were again in the 26
house and Thomas was with them. Though the doors
were shut, Jesus came, and taking his place in the middle
of them, he said, "May peace be with you!" Then he 27
said to Thomas, "Put out your finger, and see my
hands; and put your hand here into my side: and be no
longer in doubt but have belief". And Thomas said in 28
answer, "My Lord and my God!" Jesus said to him, 29
"Because you have seen me you have belief: a blessing
will be on those who have belief though they have not
seen me!"

A number of other signs Jesus did before his disciples 30
which are not recorded in this book: but these are 31
recorded, so that you may have faith that Jesus is the
Christ, the Son of God, and so that, having this faith
you may have life through his name.

JESUS SEEN AGAIN BY THE DISCIPLES

21 AFTER these things Jesus let himself be seen again 1
by the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and it came
about in this way. Simon Peter, Thomas named 2
Didymus, Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, the sons of
Zebedee and two others of his disciples were all together.
Simon Peter said to them, "I am going fishing". They 3
said to him, "And we will come with you". They went
out and got into the boat; but that night they took no
fish. Now very early in the morning Jesus was there 4
by the edge of the sea (though the disciples were not
conscious that it was Jesus). So Jesus said to them, 5
"Children, have you taken any fish?" They made
answer, "No". And he said to them, "Let down the 6
net on the right side of the boat and you will get some".
So they put it in the water and now they were not able to
get it up again because of the great number of fish. So 7
the disciple who was dear to Jesus said to Peter, "It is
the Lord!" Hearing that it was the Lord, Peter put
his coat round him (because he was not clothed) and
went into the sea. And the other disciples came in the 8
little boat (they were not far from land, only about
a hundred yards off) pulling the net full of fish. When 9
they got to land, they saw a fire of coals there, with fish
cooking on it, and bread. Jesus said to them, "Get some 10
of the fish which you have now taken". So Peter went 11
to the boat and came back pulling the net to land, full
of great fish, a hundred and fifty-three; and though there
was such a number the net was not broken. Jesus said 12
to them, "Come and take some food". And all the
disciples were in fear of putting the question, "Who
are you?" being conscious that it was the Lord. Then 13
Jesus came and took the bread and gave it to them, and
the fish in the same way. Now this was the third time 14
that Jesus let himself be seen by the disciples after he
had come back from the dead.

Then when they had taken food, Jesus said to Simon 15

Peter, "Simon, son of John, is your love for me greater than the love of these others?" He said to him, "Yes, Lord; you have knowledge that you are dear to me". He said to him, "Then give my lambs food". Again, 16
a second time, he said to him, "Simon, son of John, have you love for me?" "Yes, Lord," he said, "you have knowledge that you are dear to me." "Then take care of my sheep," said Jesus. He said to him a third 17
time, "Simon, son of John, am I dear to you?" Now Peter was troubled in his heart because he put the question a third time, "Have you love for me?" And he said to him, "Lord, you have knowledge of all things; you see that you are dear to me". Jesus said to him, "Then give my sheep food. Truly, I say to you, When you were 18
young, you made yourself ready and went wherever you had a desire to go: but when you are old, you will put out your hands and another will make you ready, and you will be taken where you have no desire to go." Now this he said, pointing out the sort of death by which 19
he would give God glory. And after saying this, he said to him, "Come after me". Then Peter, turning round, 20
saw the disciple who was dear to Jesus coming after them—the disciple who was resting on his breast at the last meal—and said, "Lord, who is it who will be false to you?" Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus, "What about 21
this man?" Jesus said to him, "If it is my desire for 22
him to be here till I come back, what is that to you? come yourself after me". So this saying went about 23
among the Christians that this disciple would not undergo death: Jesus, however, did not say that he would not undergo death, but, "If it is my desire for him to be here till I come back, what is that to you?"

This is the disciple who gives witness about these 24
things and who put them in writing: and we have knowledge that his witness is true.

And Jesus did such a number of other things that, if every 25
one was recorded, it is my opinion that even the world itself is not great enough for the books there would be.

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

JESUS TAKEN UP TO HEAVEN

1 I HAVE given an earlier account, O Theophilus, of all 1
the things which Jesus did, and of his teaching from
the first, till the day when he was taken up to heaven 2
after he had given his orders, through the Holy Spirit,
to the Apostles of whom he had made selection: and to 3
whom he gave clear and certain signs that he was living,
after his death; for he was seen by them for forty days,
and gave them teaching about the kingdom of God: and 4
when they were all together, with him, he gave them
orders not to go away from Jerusalem, but to keep there,
waiting till the word of the Father was put into effect,
"of which", he said, "I have given you knowledge: for 5
the baptism of John was with water, but you will have
baptism with the Holy Spirit, after a little time."

So, when they were together, they said to him, "Lord, 6
will you at this time give back the kingdom to Israel?"
And he said to them, "It is not for you to have knowledge 7
of the time and the order of events which the Father
has kept in his control. But you will have power, when 8
the Holy Spirit has come on you; and you will be my
witnesses in Jerusalem and all Judaea and Samaria, and
to the ends of the earth." And when he had said these 9
things, while they were looking, he was taken up, and
went from their view into a cloud. And while they were 10
looking up to heaven with great attention, two men
came to them, in white clothing, and said, "O men of 11
Galilee, why are you looking up into heaven? This
Jesus, who was taken from you into heaven, will come
again, in the same way as you saw him go into heaven."

Then they went back to Jerusalem from the mountain 12
named Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, a Sabbath day's

journey away. And when they came in, they went up 13
into the room where they were living; Peter and John
and James and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew
and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon
the Zealot, and Judas the son of James. And they all 14
with one mind gave themselves up to prayer, with the
women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

THE END OF JUDAS

And in those days Peter got up among the brothers 15
(there were about one hundred and twenty of them),
and said, "My brothers, the word of God had to be put 16
into effect, which the Holy Spirit had said before, by
the mouth of David, about Judas, who was guide to
those who took Jesus, for he was numbered among us, 17
and had his part in our work". (Now this man, with 18
the reward of his evil-doing, got for himself a field, and
falling head first, came to a sudden and violent end there.
And this came to the knowledge of all those who were 19
living in Jerusalem, so that the field was named in their
language, Akeldama, or, The field of blood.) "For in 20
the book of Psalms it says,

Let his house be waste,
And let no man be living in it:

and,

Let his position be taken by another.

For this reason, of the men who have been with us all 21
the time, while the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,
starting from the baptism of John till he went up from 22
us, one will have to be a witness with us of his coming
back from death." And they made selection of two, 23
Joseph, named Barsabbas, whose other name was Justus,
and Matthias. And they made prayers and said, "Lord, 24
having knowledge of the hearts of all men, make clear

which of these two has been marked out by you, to take 25
that position as a servant and Apostle, from which Judas
by his sin was shut out, so that he might go to his place".
And they put it to the decision of chance, and the decision 26
was given for Matthias, and he was numbered with the
eleven Apostles.

THE DAY OF PENTECOST

2 AND when the day of Pentecost was come, they were 1
all together in one place. And suddenly there came 2
from heaven a sound like the rushing of a violent
wind, and all the house where they were was full of it.
And they saw tongues, like flames of fire, coming to rest 3
on every one of them. And they were all full of the Holy 4
Spirit, and were talking in different tongues, as the
Spirit gave them power.

Now there were living at Jerusalem, Jews, God-fearing 5
men, from every nation under heaven. And when this 6
sound came to their ears, they all came together, and
were greatly surprised because every man was hearing
the words of the disciples in his special language. And 7
they were full of wonder and said, "Are not all these
men Galilaeans? And how is it that every one of us is 8
hearing their words in the language which was ours
from our birth? Men of Parthia, Media and Elam, and 9
those living in Mesopotamia, in Judaea, and Cappadocia,
in Pontus and Asia, in Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt 10
and the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and those who have
come from Rome, Jews by birth and others who have
become Jews, men of Crete and Arabia, to all of us they 11
are talking in our different languages, of the great works
of God." And they were all surprised and in doubt, 12
saying to one another, "What is the reason of this?"
But others, making sport of them, said, "They are full 13
of new wine".

PETER AND THE PROPHETS

But Peter, getting up, with the eleven, said in a loud 14
voice, "O men of Judaea, and all you who are living in
Jerusalem, take note of this and give ear to my words.
For these men are not overcome with wine, as it seems 15
to you, for it is only the third hour of the day; but this 16
is the thing which was said by the prophet Joel;

And it will come about, in the last days, says God, 17
That I will send out my Spirit on all flesh;
And your sons and your daughters will be prophets,
And your young men will see visions,
And your old men will have dreams:
And on my men-servants and my women-servants 18
I will send my Spirit, and they will be prophets.
And wonders will be seen in heaven, 19
And signs on the earth,
Blood and fire and smoke:
The sun will become dark 20
And the moon will be turned to blood,
Before that great day of the Lord comes in glory:
And whoever makes his prayer to the Lord will have 21
salvation.

Men of Israel, give ear to these words: Jesus of Nazareth, 22
a man who had the approval of God, as was made clear
to you by the great works and signs and wonders which
God did by him among you, as you yourselves have
knowledge, him, when he was given up, by the decision 23
and knowledge of God, you put to death on the cross,
by the hands of evil men: but God gave him back to 24
life, having made him free from the pains of death, because
it was not possible for him to be overcome by it. For 25
David said of him,

I saw the Lord before my face at all times,
For he is at my right hand, so that I may not be moved:
And for this cause my heart was glad and my tongue 26
full of joy,

And my flesh will be resting in hope:
For you will not let my soul be in hell 27
And you will not give up your Holy One to destruction.
You have made me see the ways of life; 28
I will be full of joy when I see your face.

My brothers, I may say to you openly that David came 29
to his death, and was put in the earth, and his resting-
place is with us today. But being a prophet, and having 30
in mind the oath which God had given to him, that of
the fruit of his body one would take his place as a king,
he, having knowledge of the future, was talking of the 31
coming again of Christ from the dead, that he was not
kept in hell and his body did not see destruction. This 32
Jesus God has given back to life, of which we all are
witnesses. And so, being lifted up to the right hand of 33
God, and having the Father's word that the Holy Spirit
would come, he has sent this thing, which now you see
and have knowledge of. For David has not gone up 34
into heaven, but says, himself,

The Lord said to my Lord, Be seated at my right
hand,
Till I put all those who are against you under your feet. 35

For this reason, let all the house of Israel be certain that 36
this Jesus, whom you put to death on the cross, God has
made Lord and Christ."

Now when these words came to their ears their hearts 37
were troubled, and they said to Peter and the other
Apostles, "Brothers, what are we to do?" And Peter 38
said, "Let your hearts be changed, every one of you,
and have baptism in the name of Jesus Christ, for the
forgiveness of your sins; and you will have the Holy
Spirit given to you. For the word of God is for you 39
and for your children and for all those who are far off,
even all those who may be marked out by the Lord our
God." And with more such words he gave his witness, 40
offering them salvation and saying, "Come out from
this evil generation". Then those who gave hearing 41

to his words had baptism: and about three thousand souls were joined to them that day. And they kept 42
their attention fixed on the Apostles' teaching and were united together in the taking of broken bread and in prayer.

But fear came on every soul: and all sorts of wonders 43
and signs were done by the Apostles. And all those who 44
were of the faith kept together, and had all things in common; and exchanging their goods and property for 45
money, they made division of it among them all, as they had need. And day by day, going in agreement together 46
regularly to the Temple and taking broken bread together in their houses, they took their food with joy, and with true hearts, giving praise to God, and having the 47
approval of all the people; and every day the number of those who had salvation was increased by the Lord.

AT THE DOOR OF THE TEMPLE

3 Now Peter and John were going up to the Temple 1
at the ninth hour, the hour of prayer; and a certain 2
man who from birth had had no power in his legs, was taken there every day, and put down at the door of the Temple which is named Beautiful, requesting money from those who went into the Temple; he then, seeing 3
Peter and John going into the Temple, made a request to them. And Peter, looking at him, with John, said, 4
"Keep your eyes on us". And he gave attention to 5
them, hoping to get something from them. But Peter 6
said, "I have no silver or gold, but what I have, that I give to you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, get up on your feet." And he took him by his right hand, 7
lifting him up; and straight away his feet and the bones of his legs became strong, and jumping up, he got on 8
to his feet, and went into the Temple with them, walking and jumping and giving praise to God. And all the 9
people saw him walking and praising God: and they saw 10
that it was the man who made requests for money at

the door of the Temple, and they were full of wonder and surprise at what had taken place.

And while he kept his hands on Peter and John, all 11
the people came running together to the covered way
which is named Solomon's, full of wonder. And when 12
Peter saw it he said to the people, "You men of Israel,
why are you so greatly surprised at this man? or why
are you looking at us as if by our power or virtue we
had given him the use of his legs? The God of Abraham, 13
of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, has given
glory to his servant Jesus; whom you gave up, turning
your backs on him, when Pilate had made the decision
to let him go free. But you would have nothing to do 14
with the Holy and Upright One, and made request for
a man of blood to be given to you, and put to death the 15
Lord of life; whom God gave back from the dead; of
which fact we are witnesses. And his name, through 16
faith in his name, has made this man strong, whom
you see and have knowledge of: yes, the faith which is
through him, has made him well, before you all. And 17
now, my brothers, I am conscious that you did this,
as did your rulers, without knowledge. But the things 18
which God had made clear before, by the mouth of all
the prophets, that the Christ would have to undergo, he
has put into effect in this way. So then, let your hearts 19
be changed and be turned to God, so that your sins may
be completely taken away, and times of blessing may
come from the Lord; and he may send the Christ who 20
was marked out for you from the first, even Jesus: who 21
is to be kept in heaven till the time when all things are
put right, of which God has given word by the mouth
of his holy prophets, who have been from the earliest
times. For Moses said, 'The Lord will give you a 22
prophet from among your people, like me; you will give
ear to everything which he will say to you. And every 23
soul who does not give attention to that prophet, will
be cut off from among the people.' And all the prophets 24
from Samuel, and those who came after, every one of

them, gave word of these days. You are the sons of the 25
prophets, and of the agreement which God made with
your fathers, saying to Abraham, 'Through your seed
a blessing will come on all the families of the earth'.
To you, first, God sent his servant, blessing you by 26
turning every one of you from his sins."

PETER AND JOHN IN PRISON

4 AND while they were talking to the people, the priests 1
and the captain of the Temple and the Sadducees
came up to them, being greatly troubled because 2
they were teaching the people and preaching Jesus as an
example of the coming back from the dead. And they 3
took them and put them in prison till the morning, for
it was now evening. But a number of those who gave 4
hearing to the word had faith; and they were now about
five thousand.

And on the day after, the rulers and those in authority 5
and the scribes came together in Jerusalem; and Annas, 6
the high priest, was there, and Caiaphas and John and
Alexander, and all the relations of the high priest. Then 7
sending for Peter and John, they said, "By what power
and in whose name have you done this?" Then Peter, 8
being full of the Holy Spirit, said to them, "O you rulers
of the people, and men of authority, if we are questioned 9
today about a good work done to a man who was ill,
as to how he has been made well, take note, all of you, 10
and all the people of Israel, that in the name of Jesus
Christ of Nazareth, whom you put to death on the cross,
whom God gave back from the dead, even through him
is this man now before you completely well. He is the 11
stone which you builders had no use for, but which has been
made the chief stone of the building. And in no other is 12
there salvation: for there is no other name under heaven,
given among men, through which we may have salvation."

Now when they saw that Peter and John were without 13
fear, though they were men of no education or learning,

they were greatly surprised; and they took note of them
that they had been with Jesus. And seeing that the man 14
who had been made well was there with them, they were
not able to say anything against it. But when they had 15
given them orders to go out of the Sanhedrin, they had
a discussion among themselves, saying, "What are we 16
to do with these men? For certainly it is clear to all who
are living in Jerusalem that a most important sign has
been done by them, and it is not possible to say that it
is not so. But so that it may not go farther among the 17
people, let us put them in fear of punishment if they
say anything in future in this name." And they sent for 18
them, and gave them orders not to make statements or
give teaching in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John, 19
in answer, said to them, "It is for you to say if it is
right in the eyes of God to give attention to you more
than to God: for it is not possible for us to keep from 20
saying what we have seen, and have knowledge of".
And when they had said more sharp words to them, they 21
let them go, not seeing what punishment they might
give them, because of the people; for all men were giving
praise to God for what had taken place. For the man on 22
whom this act of power was done was more than forty
years old.

And when they had been made free, they came back 23
to their friends, and gave an account of all the things
which the chief priests and the authorities had said to
them. And hearing it, they all, with one mind, made 24
prayer to God and said, "O Lord, maker of heaven and
earth and the sea, and all things in them: who has said, 25
by the Holy Spirit, through the mouth of our father
David your servant,

Why are the nations so violently moved,
And why are the thoughts of the people so foolish?
The kings of the earth were lifted up, 26
The rulers came together,
Against the Lord, and against his Christ:

for truly, in this town, against your holy servant Jesus, 27
who was marked out by you as Christ, Herod and
Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel,
came together to do that which had been fixed before 28
by your hand and your purpose. And now, Lord, take 29
note of their cruel words, and give your servants power
to be preachers of your word without fear, while your 30
hand is stretched out to do works of healing; so that
signs and wonders may be done through the name of
your holy servant Jesus." And when their prayer was 31
ended, the place where they were was violently moved,
and they all became full of the Holy Spirit, preaching
the word of God without fear.

ALL THINGS IN COMMON

And all those who were of the faith were one in heart 32
and soul: and not one of them said that any of the things
which he had was his property only; but they had all
things in common. And with great power the Apostles 33
gave witness of the coming back of the Lord Jesus from
the dead; and grace was on them all. And no one among 34
them was in need; for everyone who had land or houses,
exchanging them for money, took the price of them,
and put it at the feet of the Apostles for distribution to 35
everyone as he had need.

And Joseph, who was given by the Apostles the name 36
of Barnabas (the sense of which is, Son of comfort),
a Levite and a man of Cyprus by birth, having a field, 37
got money for it and put the money at the feet of the
Apostles.

ANANIAS AND SAPPHIRA

5 But a certain man, named Ananias, with Sapphira 1
his wife, got money for his property, and kept back 2
part of the price, his wife having knowledge of it,
and took the rest and put it at the feet of the Apostles.
But Peter said, "Ananias, why has the Evil One put it 3

into your heart to be false to the Holy Spirit, and to keep back part of the price of the land? While you had it, 4
was it not your property? and after you had given it in exchange, was it not still in your power? How has this purpose come into your mind? you have been false, not to men, but to God." And at these words, Ananias 5
went down on the earth, and his life went from him: and great fear came on all who were present. And the young 6
men went and made ready his body, and took it out, and put it in the earth.

And about three hours after, his wife, having no know- 7
ledge of what had taken place, came in. And Peter said 8
to her, "Give me an answer: Was this amount of money the price of the land?" And she said, "Yes, it was". But Peter said to her, "Why have you made an agree- 9
ment together to be false to the Spirit of the Lord? See, the feet of the young men who have put the body of your husband in the earth, are at the door, and they will take you out." And straight away she went down at his 10
feet, and her life went from her: and the young men came in, and saw her dead, and they took her out and put her in the earth with her husband. Then great fear came on 11
all the church and on all who had knowledge of these things.

Now a number of signs and wonders were done among 12
the people by the hand of the Apostles; and they were all together in Solomon's covered way. The others, in 13
fear, kept back from joining them: but the people made much of them; and a great number of men and women 14
had faith, and were joined to the Lord; and they even 15
took into the streets people who were ill, and put them on beds, so that when Peter went by, some of them might be in his shade. And numbers of people came together 16
from the towns round about Jerusalem, with those who were ill, and those who were troubled with unclean spirits: and they were all made well.

But the high priest, and those who were with him (the 17
Sadducees) were full of envy, and they took the Apostles 18
and put them in the common prison. But in the night, 19
an angel of the Lord, opening the doors of the prison,
took them out and said, "Go, take your place in the 20
Temple and give the people all the teaching about this
Life". And hearing this, they went into the Temple at 21
dawn, and were teaching. But the high priest and those
who were with him got together the Sanhedrin and the
representatives of the children of Israel, and sent to the
prison to get them. But the men who were sent saw 22
that they were not in the prison, and came back with the
news, saying, "The doors of the prison were safely shut, 23
and the keepers were at the doors, but when they were
open, there was nobody inside". Now, at these words, 24
the captain of the Temple and the chief priests were
greatly troubled about what might be the end of this
business. And someone came and said to them, "The 25
men, whom you put in prison, are in the Temple teaching
the people". Then the captain and some of the police 26
went and took them, but not violently, for fear that they
might be stoned by the people. And they took them into 27
the Sanhedrin, and the high priest said to them, "We 28
gave you very clear orders not to give teaching in this
name: and now Jerusalem is full of your teaching, and
you are attempting to make us responsible for this man's
death". But Peter and the Apostles, answering, said, 29
"We have to do the orders of God, not of men. The 30
God of our fathers gave Jesus back to life, whom you had
put to death, hanging him on a tree. Him God has put 31
on high at his right hand, as a ruler and a saviour, to
give to Israel a change of heart and forgiveness of sins.
And we are witnesses of these things, and so is the Holy 32
Spirit, whom God has given to those who keep his laws."

But when these words came to their ears, they were 33
cut to the heart, and had a mind to put them to death.

But one of the Sanhedrin, a Pharisee named Gamaliel, 34
a man of learning in the law, of whom all the people had
a high opinion, got up and made a suggestion for the
men to be put outside for a little time. And he said to 35
them, "Men of Israel, take care what you do about these
men. For before this there was Theudas, who said he 36
was someone important, to whom about four hundred
men gave their support: he was put to death, and his
band was broken up and came to nothing. After this 37
man, there was Judas of Galilee, at the time of the
numbering, and some of the people went after him: he
was put to death, and all his supporters were put to
flight. And now I say to you, Do nothing to these men, 38
but let them be: for if this teaching or this work is of
men, it will come to nothing: but if it is of God, you will 39
not be able to overcome them, and you are in danger
of fighting against God." And he seemed to them to 40
be right: and they sent for the Apostles, and after having
them whipped, and giving them orders to give no teaching
in the name of Jesus, they let them go. So they went 41
away from the Sanhedrin, happy to undergo shame for
the Name. And every day, in the Temple and privately, 42
they went on teaching and preaching Jesus as the Christ.

6 Now in those days, when the number of the dis- 1
ciples was increasing, protests were made by the
Greek Jews against the Hebrews, because their
widows were not taken care of in the distribution of food
every day. And the Apostles sent for all the disciples 2
and said, "It is not right for us to give up preaching
the word of God in order to make distribution of food.
Take then from among you seven men of good name, 3
full of the Spirit and of wisdom, to whom we may give
control of this business. Then we will give all our time 4
to prayer and the teaching of the word." And this saying 5
was pleasing to all of them: and they made selection of
Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and
Philip and Prochorus and Nicanor and Timon and

Parmenas and Nicolas of Antioch, who had become a Jew: these they took to the Apostles, who, after prayer, 6
put their hands on them.

And the word of God was increasing in power; and 7
the number of the disciples in Jerusalem became very great, and a great number of priests were in agreement with the faith.

THE STONING OF STEPHEN

And Stephen, full of grace and power, did great 8
wonders and signs among the people. But some of those 9
who were of the Synagogue named that of the Libertines, and some of the men of Cyrene and of Alexandria and those from Cilicia and Asia, had arguments with Stephen. But they were not able to get the better of him, for his 10
words were full of wisdom and of the Spirit. Then they 11
got men to say, "He has said evil against Moses and against God, in our hearing". And the people, with the 12
rulers and the scribes, were moved against him, and they came and took him before the Sanhedrin, and they got false 13
witnesses who said, "This man is for ever saying things against this holy place and against the law: for he has 14
said in our hearing that this Jesus of Nazareth will put this place to destruction and make changes in the rules which were handed down to us by Moses". And all 15
those who were in the Sanhedrin, looking at him, saw that his face was like the face of an angel.

7 THEN the high priest said, "Are these things true?" 1
And he said, 2

"My brothers and fathers, give hearing. The God of glory came to our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he was living in Haran, and 3
said to him, 'Go out of your land, and away from your family, and come into the land to which I will be your guide'. Then he came out of the land of the Chaldaeans, 4
and went into Haran; and from there, when his father

was dead, he was guided by God into this land, where
you are living now: and God gave him no heritage in it, 5
not even enough to put his foot on: but he gave him an
undertaking that he would give it to him, and to his
children after him, though he had no child at that time.
And God said that his seed would be living in a strange 6
land, and that they would make them servants, and be
cruel to them for four hundred years. 'And I will be 7
the judge', said God, 'of that nation which made them
servants: and after that, they will come out and give
me worship in this place.' And he made with him the 8
agreement of which circumcision was the sign. And so
Abraham had a son, Isaac, and gave him circumcision
on the eighth day; and Isaac had a son, Jacob, and Jacob
was the father of the twelve heads of the families of
Israel. And the twelve, moved with envy against Joseph, 9
gave him to the Egyptians for money: but God was with
him, and made him free from all his troubles, and gave 10
him wisdom and the approval of Pharaoh, king of Egypt,
who made him ruler over Egypt and all his house. Now 11
there was no food to be had in all Egypt and Canaan,
and there was great trouble: and our fathers were not
able to get food. But Jacob, hearing that there was grain 12
in Egypt, sent out our fathers the first time. And the 13
second time his brothers had a meeting with Joseph,
and Pharaoh had knowledge of Joseph's family. Then 14
Joseph sent for Jacob his father, and all his family,
seventy-five souls. And Jacob went down to Egypt, and 15
came to his end there, and so did our fathers; and they 16
were taken over to Shechem, and put to rest in the place
which Abraham got for a price in silver from the sons
of Hamor in Shechem. But when the time was near for 17
putting into effect the undertaking which God had given
to Abraham, the people were increasing in Egypt, till 18
another king came to power, who had no knowledge of
Joseph. He, having evil designs against our nation, was 19
cruel to our fathers, and they were forced to put out
their young children, so that they might not go on living.

At which time Moses came to birth, and he was very 20
beautiful; and he was kept for three months in his
father's house: and when he was put out, Pharaoh's 21
daughter took him and kept him as her son. And Moses 22
was trained in all the wisdom of Egypt, and was great
in his words and works. But when he was almost forty 23
years old, it came into his heart to go and see his
brothers, the children of Israel. And seeing one of them 24
being attacked, he went to his help and gave the Egyptian
a death-blow: and he was hoping that his brothers would 25
see that God had sent him to be their saviour; but they
did not see. And the day after, he came to them, while 26
they were having a fight, and would have made peace
between them, saying, 'Sirs, you are brothers; why do
you do wrong to one another?' But the man who was 27
doing wrong to his neighbour, pushing him away, said,
'Who made you a ruler and a judge over us? Will you 28
put me to death as you did the Egyptian yesterday?'
And at these words, Moses took flight, and went to the 29
land of Midian, and was living there for a time, and had
two sons. At the end of forty years, an angel came to 30
him in the waste land of Sinai, in the flame of a burning
thorn-tree. And Moses, seeing it, was full of wonder, 31
and when he came near to have a look, the voice of the
Lord came to him, saying, 'I am the God of your fathers, 32
the God of Abraham and of Isaac and of Jacob'. And
Moses, shaking with fear, kept his eyes from looking
at it. And the Lord said, 'Take off the shoes from your 33
feet, for the place where you are is holy. Truly, I have 34
seen the sorrows of my people in Egypt, and their cries
have come to my ears, and I have come down to make
them free: and now, come, I will send you to Egypt.'
This Moses, whom they would not have, saying, 'Who 35
made you a ruler and a judge?' him God sent to be
a ruler and a saviour, by the hand of the angel whom he
saw in the thorn-tree. This man took them out, having 36
done wonders and signs in Egypt and in the Red sea,
and in the waste land, for forty years. This is the same 37

Moses, who said to the children of Israel, 'God will
give you a prophet from among your brothers, like me'.
This is the man who was in the church in the waste land 38
with the angel who was talking to him in Sinai, and with
our fathers; and to him were given the living words of
God, so that he might give them to you: by whom our 39
fathers would not be controlled; but they put him on one
side, turning back in their hearts to Egypt, and saying 40
to Aaron, 'Make us gods to go before us: as for this
Moses, who took us out of the land of Egypt, we have
no idea what has become of him'. And they made the 41
image of a young ox in those days, and made an offering
to it, and had joy in the work of their hands. But God 42
was turned from them, and let them give worship
to the stars of heaven, as it says in the book of the
prophets,

Did you make offerings to me of sheep and oxen
For forty years in the waste land, O house of Israel?
And you took up the tent of Moloch 43
And the star of the god Rephan,
Images which you made to give worship to them:
And I will take you away, farther than Babylon.

Our fathers had the tent of witness in the waste land, 44
as God gave orders to Moses to make it after the design
which he had seen. Which our fathers, in their turn, 45
took with them when, with Joshua, they came into the
heritage of the nations whom God was driving out before
the face of our fathers, till the time of David; who was 46
pleasing to God; and he had a desire to make a tent for
the God of Jacob. But Solomon was the builder of his 47
house. But still, the Most High has not his resting-place 48
in houses made with hands, as the prophet says,

Heaven is the seat of my power, 49
And earth is a resting-place for my feet: [Lord,
What sort of house will you make for me, says the
Or what is my place of rest?
Did not my hand make all these things? 50

"You whose hearts are hard and whose ears are shut 51
to me; you are ever working against the Holy Spirit;
as your fathers did, so do you. Which of the prophets 52
was not cruelly attacked by your fathers? and they put
to death those who gave them the news of the coming
of the Upright One; whom you have now given up and
put to death; you, to whom the law was given as it 53
was ordered by angels, and who have not kept it."

Hearing these things, they were cut to the heart, and 54
moved with wrath against him. But he was full of the 55
Holy Spirit, and looking up to heaven, he saw the glory
of God, and Jesus at the right hand of God. And he said, 56
"Now I see heaven open, and the Son of man at the
right hand of God". But with loud cries, and stopping 57
their ears, they made an attack on him all together,
driving him out of the town, and stoning him: and the 58
witnesses put their clothing at the feet of a young man
named Saul. And Stephen, while he was being stoned, 59
made prayer to God, saying, "Lord Jesus, take my
spirit". And going down on his knees, he said in a loud 60
voice, "Lord, do not make them responsible for this
sin". And when he had said this, he went to his rest.
8 And Saul gave approval to his death. 1

Now at that time a violent attack was started against the church in Jerusalem; and all but the Apostles went away into all parts of Judaea and Samaria. And God-fearing men put Stephen's body in 2
its last resting-place, making great weeping over him.
But Saul was burning with hate against the church, going 3
into every house and taking men and women and putting
them in prison.

PHILIP IN SAMARIA

But those who had taken flight went everywhere 4
preaching the word. And Philip went down to Samaria 5
and was teaching them about Christ. And all the people 6
gave attention to the words which Philip said, when they

saw the signs which he did. For unclean spirits came 7
out from those who had them, crying with a loud voice;
and a number of those who were ill, and broken in body,
were made well. And there was much joy in that town. 8

SIMON THE WONDER-WORKER

But there was a certain man named Simon, who in 9
the past had been a wonder-worker, and a cause of
surprise to the people of Samaria, saying that he himself
was a great man: to whom they all gave attention, from 10
the smallest to the greatest, saying, "This man is that
power of God which is named Great". And they gave 11
attention to him, because for a long time his wonder-
working powers had kept them under his control. But 12
when they had faith in the good news given by Philip
about the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ,
a number of men and women had baptism. And Simon 13
himself had faith, and having had baptism, he went with
Philip, and seeing the signs and the great wonders which
he did, he was full of surprise.

Now when the Apostles at Jerusalem had news that 14
the people of Samaria had taken the word of God into
their hearts, they sent to them Peter and John; who, 15
when they came there, made prayer for them, that the
Holy Spirit might be given to them: for up to that time 16
he had not come on any of them; only baptism had been
given to them in the name of the Lord Jesus. Then they 17
put their hands on them, and the Holy Spirit came on
them. Now when Simon saw that the Holy Spirit was 18
given through the touch of the Apostles' hands, he made
them an offering of money, saying, "Give me this power, 19
so that when I put my hands on anyone he may get the
Holy Spirit": But Peter said, "May your money come 20
to destruction with you, because you had the idea that
what is freely given by God may be got for a price. You 21
have no part in this business, because your heart is not
right before God. Let your heart be changed, and make 22

prayer to God that you may have forgiveness for your evil thoughts. For I see that you are prisoned in bitter 23
envy and the chains of sin." And Simon, answering, 24
said, "Make prayer for me to the Lord, so that these things which you have said may not come on me".

So they, having given their witness and made clear 25
the word of the Lord, went back to Jerusalem, giving the good news on their way in a number of the small towns of Samaria.

PHILIP AND THE ETHIOPIAN

But an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "Get up, and 26
go to the south, to the road which goes from Jerusalem to Gaza, through the waste land". And he went: and 27
there was a man of Ethiopia, a servant of great authority under Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, and controller of all her property, who had come up to Jerusalem for worship; he was going back, seated in his carriage, and 28
was reading the book of the prophet Isaiah. And the 29
Spirit said to Philip, "Go near, and get on his carriage". And Philip, running up to him, saw that he was reading 30
Isaiah the prophet, and said to him, "Is the sense of what you are reading clear to you?" And he said, "How 31
is that possible when I have no guide?" And he made Philip get up by his side. Now the place in the book 32
where he was reading was this:

He was taken, like a sheep, to be put to death;
And as a lamb is quiet when its wool is being cut,
So he made no sound:
Being of low degree, his cause was not given a hearing: 33
Who has knowledge of his family?
For his life is cut off from the earth.

And the Ethiopian said to Philip, "About whom are 34
these words said by the prophet? about himself, or some other?" So Philip, starting from this writing, gave him 35
the good news about Jesus. And while they were going 36

on their way, they came to some water, and the Ethiopian said, "See, here is water; why may I not have baptism?" And he gave orders for the carriage to be stopped, and 38
the two of them went down into the water, and Philip gave him baptism. And when they came up out of the 39
water, the Spirit of the Lord took Philip away; and the Ethiopian saw him no more, for he went on his way full of joy. But Philip came to Azotus, and went through 40
all the towns, preaching the good news, till he came to Caesarea.

THE ROAD TO DAMASCUS

9 BUT Saul, still burning with desire to put to death 1
the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest,
and made a request for letters from him to the 2
Synagogues of Damascus, so that if there were any of the Way there, men or women, he might take them as prisoners, to Jerusalem. And while he was journeying, 3
he came near Damascus; and suddenly he saw a light from heaven shining round him; and he went down on 4
the earth, and a voice said to him, "Saul, Saul, why are you attacking me so cruelly?" And he said, "Who are 5
you, Lord?" And he said, "I am Jesus, whom you are attacking: but get up, and go into the town, and it will 6
be made clear to you what you have to do". And the 7
men who were with him were not able to say anything; hearing the voice, but seeing no one. And Saul got up 8
from the earth, and when his eyes were open, he saw nothing; and he was guided by the hand into Damascus. And for three days he was not able to see, and he took 9
no food or drink.

Now there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named 10
Ananias; and the Lord said to him in a vision, "Ananias!" and he said, "Here I am, Lord". And the Lord said to 11
him, "Get up, and go to the street which is named Straight, and make search at the house of Judas for one named Saul of Tarsus: for he is at prayer; and he has 12
seen a man named Ananias coming in and putting his

hands on him, so that he may be able to see". But 13
Ananias said, "Lord, I have had accounts of this man
from a number of people, how much evil he has done to
your saints at Jerusalem: and here he has authority from 14
the chief priests to take prisoner all who give worship
to your name". But the Lord said, "Go without fear: 15
for he is a special vessel for me, to give to the Gentiles
and kings and to the children of Israel the knowledge
of my name: for I will make clear to him what troubles 16
he will have to undergo for me". And Ananias went 17
out, and came to the house, and putting his hands on him,
said, "Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, whom you saw
when you were on your journey, has sent me, so that
you may be able to see, and be full of the Holy Spirit".
And straight away it seemed as if a veil was taken from 18
his eyes, and he was able to see; and he got up, and had
baptism; and when he had taken food his strength came 19
back.

And for some days he kept with the disciples who were
in Damascus. And straight away, in the Synagogues, he 20
was preaching Jesus as the Son of God. And all those 21
hearing him were full of wonder and said, "Is not this
the man who in Jerusalem was attacking all the wor-
shippers of this name? and he had come here so that he
might take them as prisoners before the chief priests".
But Saul went on increasing in power, and the Jews in 22
Damascus were not able to give answers to the argu-
ments by which he made it clear that Jesus was the
Christ.

Then, after some days, the Jews made an agreement 23
together to put him to death: but Saul got knowledge 24
of their design. And they kept watch day and night on
the roads out of the town, so that they might put him
to death: but his disciples took him by night and let him 25
down from the wall in a basket.

And when he came to Jerusalem, he made an attempt 26
to be joined to the disciples, but they were all in fear of
him, not taking him for a disciple. But Barnabas took 27

him to the Apostles and gave them an account of how he had seen the Lord on the road, and had given hearing to his words, and how at Damascus he had been preaching in the name of Jesus without fear. And he was with them, 28
going in and out at Jerusalem, preaching in the name of 29
the Lord without fear; and he had discussions with the Greek Jews; but they were working for his death. And 30
when the brothers had knowledge of it, they took him to Caesarea and sent him to Tarsus.

THE CHURCH AT PEACE

And so the church through all Judaea and Galilee and 31
Samaria had peace, and was made strong; and living in the fear of the Lord and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, was increased greatly.

And it came about that while Peter was going through 32
all parts of the country he came to the saints who were living at Lydda. And there was a certain man there, 33
named Aeneas, who for eight years had been in bed, without power of moving. And Peter said to him, 34
"Aeneas, Jesus Christ makes you well: get up and make your bed". And straight away he got up. And all those 35
living in Lydda and Sharon saw him, and were turned to the Lord.

Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named 36
Tabitha, that is, Dorcas: this woman was given to good works and acts of mercy at all times. And it came about, 37
in those days, that she got ill and came to her death: and when she had been washed, they put her in a room which was high up. And because Lydda was near Joppa, 38
the disciples, having knowledge that Peter was there, sent two men to him, requesting him to come to them straight away. And Peter went with them. And when 39
he had come, they took him into the room: and all the widows were there, weeping, and putting before him the coats and clothing which Dorcas had made while she was with them. But Peter made them all go outside, 40

and went down on his knees in prayer; and turning to
the body, he said, "Tabitha, get up". And opening her
eyes, she saw Peter, and got up. And he took her hand, 41
lifting her up; and sending for the saints and widows,
he gave her to them, living. And news of it went all 42
through Joppa, and a number of people had faith in the
Lord. And he was living in Joppa for some time with 43
Simon, a leather-worker.

THE VISION OF CORNELIUS

10 Now there was a certain man in Caesarea, named 1
Cornelius, the captain of the Italian band of the
army; a serious-minded man, fearing God with 2
all his family; he gave much money to the poor, and
made prayer to God at all times. He saw in a vision, 3
clearly, at about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of
the Lord coming to him and saying to him, "Cornelius!"
And he, looking on him in fear, said, "What is it, 4
Lord?" And he said to him, "Your prayers and your
offerings have come up to God, and he has kept them
in mind. Now send men to Joppa, and get one Simon, 5
named Peter, who is living with Simon, a leather-worker, 6
whose house is by the sea." And when the angel who 7
said these words to him had gone away, he sent for
two of his house-servants, and a God-fearing man of
the army, one of those who were waiting on him at all
times; and having given them an account of everything, 8
he sent them to Joppa.

Now the day after, when they were on their journey 9
and were near the town, Peter went up to the top of
the house for prayer, about the sixth hour: and he was 10
in need of food: but while they were getting it ready,
a deep sleep came on him; and he saw the heavens 11
opening, and a vessel coming down, like a great cloth
let down on the earth: in which were all sorts of beasts 12
and birds. And a voice came to him, saying, "Come, 13
Peter; take them for food". But Peter said, "No, Lord; 14

for I have never taken food which is common or unclean".
And the voice came to him a second time, "What God 15
has made clean, do not you make common". And this 16
was done three times: and then the vessel was taken back
into heaven.

Now while Peter was in doubt as to the purpose of 17
this vision, the men who were sent by Cornelius, having
made search for Simon's house, came to the door, to 18
see if Simon, named Peter, was living there. And while 19
Peter was turning the vision over in his mind, the Spirit
said to him, "See, three men are looking for you. Go 20
down, then, and go with them, doubting nothing, for
I have sent them." And Peter went down to the men, 21
and said, "I am the man you are looking for: why have
you come?" And they said, "Cornelius, a captain, an 22
upright and God-fearing man, respected by all the nation
of the Jews, had word from God by an angel to send for
you to his house, and to give hearing to your words".
So he took them in for the night. 23

And the day after, he went with them, taking some of
the brothers from Joppa with him. And the day after 24
that, they came to Caesarea. And Cornelius was waiting
for them, having got together his relations and his near
friends. And when Peter came in, Cornelius came to 25
him, and falling down at his feet, gave him worship.
But Peter, lifting him up, said, "Get up, for I am a man 26
as you are". And saying these words, he went in, and 27
saw that a great number of people had come together;
and he said to them, "You yourselves have knowledge 28
that it is against the law for a man who is a Jew to be
in the company of one who is of another nation; but
God has made it clear to me that no man may be named
common or unclean: and so I came without question, 29
when I was sent for. What then is your purpose in
sending for me?" And Cornelius said, "Four days from 30
now I was in my house in prayer at the ninth hour; and
I saw before me a man in shining clothing, who said, 31
'Cornelius, your prayer has come to the ears of God,

and your offerings are kept in his memory. Send, then, 32
to Joppa, and get Simon, named Peter, to come to you;
he is living in the house of Simon, a leather-worker, by
the sea.' So, straight away, I sent for you; and you 33
have done well to come. And now, we are all present
before God, ready to give attention to all the things
which the Lord has given you to say." Then Peter said, 34

"Truly, I see clearly that God is no respecter of
persons: but in every nation, the man who has fear of 35
him and does righteousness is pleasing to him. The word 36
which he sent to the children of Israel, giving the good
news of peace through Jesus Christ (who is Lord of all)—
that word you yourselves have knowledge of, which was 37
made public through all Judaea, starting from Galilee,
after the baptism of which John was the preacher, about 38
Jesus of Nazareth, how God gave the Holy Spirit to
him, with power: and how he went about doing good
and making well all who were troubled by evil spirits,
for God was with him. And we are witnesses of all the 39
things which he did in the country of the Jews and in
Jerusalem; whom they put to death, hanging him on
a tree. On the third day God gave him back to life, 40
and let him be seen, not by all the people, but by witnesses 41
marked out before by God, even by us, who took food
and drink with him after he came back from the dead.
And he gave us orders to give news of this to the people, 42
and to give public witness that this is he, whom God has
made judge of the living and the dead. To him all the 43
prophets give witness, that through his name everyone
who has faith in him will have forgiveness of sins."

While Peter was saying these words, the Holy Spirit 44
came on all those who were hearing the word. And the 45
Jews of the faith, who had come with Peter, were full
of wonder, because the Holy Spirit was given to the
Gentiles. For they saw them talking with tongues, and 46
giving glory to God. Then Peter said, "Will any man 47
say that these may not have baptism who have been
given the Holy Spirit as we have?" And he gave orders 48

for them to have baptism in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they kept him with them for some days.

PETER AT JOPPA

11 Now the Apostles and the brothers who were in Judaea had news that the word of God had been given to the Gentiles. And when Peter came to Jerusalem, those who kept the rule of circumcision had an argument with him, saying, "You went to men without circumcision, and took food with them". But Peter gave them an account of it all in order, saying to them, "I was in the town of Joppa, at prayer: and falling into a deep sleep, I saw in a vision a vessel like a great cloth let down from heaven, and it came down to me: and looking on it with attention I saw in it all sorts of beasts and birds. And a voice came to my ears saying, 'Come, Peter; take them for food'. But I said, No, Lord; for nothing common or unclean has ever come into my mouth. But the voice, coming a second time from heaven, said, 'What God has made clean, do not you make common'. And this was done three times, and they were all taken up again into heaven. And at that minute, three men, sent from Caesarea, came to the house where we were. And the Spirit gave me orders to go with them, doubting nothing. And these six brothers came with me; and we went into that man's house: and he gave us an account of how he had seen the angel in his house, saying, 'Send to Joppa, and get Simon, named Peter, to come to you; who will say words to you through which you and all your family may get salvation'. And while I was talking to them, the Holy Spirit came on them, as on us at first. And the words of the Lord came into my mind, how he said, 'The baptism of John was with water, but you will have baptism with the Holy Spirit'. If then God gave them, when they had faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, the same as he gave to us, who was I to go against God?" And hearing these things

they said nothing more, but gave glory to God, saying, "Then to the Gentiles as to us has God given a change of heart, so that they may have life".

THE NAME OF CHRISTIANS

Then those who had taken flight at the time of the 19
trouble about Stephen, went as far as Phoenicia and
Cyprus, preaching to the Jews only. But some of them, 20
men of Cyprus and Cyrene, when they came to Antioch,
gave the good news about the Lord Jesus to the Greeks.
And the power of the Lord was with them, and a great 21
number had faith and were turned to the Lord. And 22
news of them came to the ears of the church at Jerusalem:
and they sent Barnabas as far as Antioch: who, when he 23
came and saw the grace of God, was glad; and he made
clear to them the need of keeping near the Lord with
all the strength of their hearts: for he was a good man 24
and full of the Holy Spirit, and of faith: and a great
number were joined to the Lord. Then he went on to 25
Tarsus, looking for Saul; and when he had come across 26
him, he took him to Antioch. And they were with the
church there for a year, teaching the people; and the
disciples were first given the name of Christians in
Antioch.

Now in those days prophets came from Jerusalem to 27
Antioch. And one of them, named Agabus, said publicly 28
through the Spirit that there would be serious need of
food all over the earth: which came about in the time
of Claudius. And the disciples, everyone as he was able, 29
made a decision to send help to the brothers living in
Judaea: which they did, sending it to the rulers of the 30
church by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

THE ATTACKS OF KING HEROD

12 Now, about that time, Herod the king made cruel 1
attacks on the Christians. And he put James the 2
brother of John to death with the sword. And 3
when he saw that this was pleasing to the Jews he went
on to take Peter in addition. This was at the time of
the feast of unleavened bread. And having taken him, 4
he put him in prison, with four bands of armed men to
keep watch over him; his purpose being to take him
out to the people after the Passover. So Peter was kept 5
in prison: but the church made strong prayer to God for
him. And when Herod was about to take him out, the 6
same night Peter was sleeping in chains between two
armed men, and the watchmen were keeping watch
before the door of the prison. And a great light was 7
seen shining in the room, and an angel of the Lord came
to Peter, and touching him on his side so that he came
out of his sleep, said, "Get up quickly". And his chains
came off his hands. Then the angel said, "Put on your 8
shoes and get ready to go". And he did so. And he
said, "Put your coat round you and come with me".
And he went out after him; and he was not certain if 9
what was done by the angel was a fact, for it seemed to
him that he was seeing a vision. And when they had 10
gone past the first and second watchmen they came to
the iron gate into the town, which came open by itself:
and they went out and down one street; and then the
angel went away. And when Peter came to his senses 11
he said, "Now, truly, I am certain that the Lord has
sent his angel and taken me out of the hands of Herod,
against all the hopes of the Jews". And while he was 12
turning it over in his mind, he came to the house of
Mary the mother of John named Mark, where a number
of them had come together for prayer. And he gave 13
a blow on the door, and a young girl came to it, named
Rhoda. And hearing the voice of Peter, in her joy she 14
went running, without opening the door, to say that

Peter was outside. And they said to her, "You are off your head". But still she said, with decision, that it was so. And they said, "It is his angel". But Peter went on giving blows on the door: and when it was open and they saw him, they were full of wonder. But he made a sign to them with his hand to be quiet, and gave them an account of how the Lord had taken him out of prison. And he said, "Give the news to James and the brothers". And then he went away. Now, when it was day, the armed men were greatly troubled about what had become of Peter. And Herod, when he sent for him, and he was not there, after questioning the watchmen, gave orders that they were to be put to death. Then he went down from Judaea to Caesarea for a time.

Now he was very angry with the people of Tyre and Sidon: and they came to him, all together, and having made friends with Blastus, the controller of the king's house, they made a request for peace, because their country was dependent on the king's country for its food. And on the day which had been fixed, Herod, dressed in his robes and seated in his place, made a public statement to them. And the people, with loud cries, said, "It is the voice of a god, not of a man". And straight away, the angel of the Lord sent a disease on him, because he did not give the glory to God: and his flesh was wasted away by worms, and so he came to his end.

But the word of the Lord went on increasing.

And Barnabas and Saul came back from Jerusalem, when their work was ended, taking with them John named Mark.

13 Now there were at Antioch, in the church there, prophets and teachers, Barnabas and Symeon, who was named Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, a relation of Herod the king, and Saul. And while they were doing the Lord's work, and going without food, the Holy Spirit said, "Let Barnabas and Saul

be given to me for the special work for which they have been marked out by me". Then, after prayer and going 3
without food, they put their hands on them, and sent them away.

PAUL AND BARNABAS TAKE SHIP

So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down 4
to Seleucia; and from there they went by ship to Cyprus.
And at Salamis they were preaching the word of God 5
in the Synagogues of the Jews: and John was with them,
helping them. And when they had gone through all the 6
island to Paphos, they came across a certain wonder-
worker and false prophet, a Jew whose name was
Bar-Jesus; who was with the ruler, Sergius Paulus, an 7
able man. This man sent for Barnabas and Saul, desiring
to have knowledge of the word of God. But Elymas, 8
the wonder-worker (for that is the sense of his name),
put himself against them, with the purpose of turning
the ruler from the faith. But Saul, whose other name is 9
Paul, being full of the Holy Spirit, looking hard at him,
said, "O you, who are full of false tricks and evil ways, 10
a son of the Evil One, hating all righteousness, will you
for ever be turning people from the right ways of the
Lord? And now, see, the hand of the Lord is on you, 11
and you will be blind and not able to see the sun for
a time." And straight away a dark mist came down on
him; and he went about looking for a guide. Then the 12
ruler, when he saw what was done, had faith, being full
of wonder at the teaching of the Lord.

Then Paul and those who were with him went by 13
ship from Paphos and came to Perga in Pamphylia: and
there John went away from them and came back to
Jerusalem. But they, going through from Perga, came 14
to Antioch in Pisidia; and they went into the Synagogue
on the Sabbath, and took their seats. And after the 15
reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the
Synagogue sent to them, saying, "Brothers, if you have

a word of comfort for the people, say on". And Paul, 16
getting up and making a sign with his hand, said,

"Men of Israel, and you who have the fear of God,
give ear. The God of this people Israel made selection 17
of our fathers, lifting the people up from their low
condition when they were living in the land of Egypt,
and with a strong arm took them out of it. And for 18
about forty years he put up with their ways in the waste
land. And having put to destruction seven nations in 19
the land of Canaan, he gave them the land for their
heritage for about four hundred and fifty years. And 20
after these things he gave them judges, till the time of
Samuel the prophet. Then at their request for a king, 21
God gave them Saul, the son of Kish, a man of the family
of Benjamin, who was their king for forty years. And 22
having put him on one side, he made David their king,
to whom he gave witness, saying, 'I have taken David
the son of Jesse, a man dear to my heart, who will do
all my pleasure'. From this man's seed has God given 23
to Israel a Saviour, even Jesus, as he gave his word;
for whose coming John made ready the way by preaching 24
to all the people of Israel the baptism which goes with
a change of heart. And when John was completing his 25
work, he said, 'What do I seem to you to be? I am
not he; but one is coming after me, whose shoes I am
not good enough to undo.' My brothers, children of the 26
family of Abraham, and those among you who have the
fear of God, to us the word of this salvation is sent.
For the men of Jerusalem, and their rulers, having no 27
knowledge of him, or of the sayings of the prophets
which come to their ears every Sabbath day, gave effect
to them by judging him. And though no cause of death 28
was seen in him, they made a request to Pilate that he
might be put to death. And when they had done all 29
the things said in the Writings about him, they took
him down from the tree, and put him in the place of
the dead. But God gave him back from the dead: 30
and for a number of days he was seen by those who 31

came with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are now his witnesses before the people. And we are giving you 32
the good news of the undertaking made to the fathers, which God has now put into effect for our children, by 33
sending Jesus; as it says in the second Psalm, 'You are my Son; this day I have given you being'. And about 34
his coming back from the dead, never again to go to destruction, he has said these words, 'I will give you the holy and certain mercies of David'. Because he says 35
in another Psalm, 'You will not let your Holy One see destruction'. Now David, having done God's work for 36
his generation, went to sleep, and was put with his fathers, and his body came to destruction: but he, who 37
was lifted up by God, did not see destruction. And so, 38
let it be clear to you, my brothers, that through this man forgiveness of sins is offered to you: and through 39
him everyone who has faith is made free from all those things, from which the law of Moses was not able to make you free. So take care that these words of the 40
prophets do not come true for you;

See, you doubters, have wonder and come to your end; 41
For I will do a thing in your days
To which you will not give belief, even if it is made clear to you."

JEWS AND GENTILES

And when they went out, they made a request that 42
these words might be said to them again on the Sabbath after. Now when the meeting was ended, a number 43
of the Jews and of the God-fearing Gentiles who had become Jews, went after Paul and Barnabas: who put before them how important it was to keep on in the grace of God.

And on the Sabbath after, almost all the town came 44
together to give hearing to the word of God. But when 45
the Jews saw such a great number of people, they were full of envy, and said evil words against Paul's preaching.

Then Paul and Barnabas without fear said, "It was 46
necessary for the word of God to be given to you first;
but because you will have nothing to do with it, and
have no desire for eternal life, it will now be offered
to the Gentiles. For so the Lord has given us orders, 47
saying,

> I have given you for a light to the Gentiles
> So that you may be for salvation to the ends of the
> earth."

And the Gentiles, hearing this, were glad and gave glory 48
to the word of God: and those marked out by God for
eternal life had faith. And the word of the Lord went 49
through all the country. But the Jews, working up the 50
feelings of the God-fearing women of high position, and
of the chief men of the town, got an attack started against
Paul and Barnabas, driving them out of those parts. But 51
they, shaking off the dust of that place from their feet,
came to Iconium. And the disciples were full of joy, 52
and of the Holy Spirit.

14 Now in Iconium they went together to the Syna- 1
gogue of the Jews and gave such teaching that
a great number of Jews and Greeks had faith.
But those Jews who had not the faith, made the minds 2
of the Gentiles bitter against the brothers. So they kept 3
there for a long time, taking heart in the Lord, who
gave witness to the word of his grace by causing signs
and wonders to be done by their hands. But there was 4
a division among the people of the town; some were on
the side of the Jews, and some on the side of the Apostles.
And when a violent attempt was made by the Gentiles 5
and the Jews, with their rulers, to make an attack on
them and have them stoned, having got news of it, they 6
took flight to the towns of Lycaonia, Lystra and Derbe,
and the country round about: and went on preaching the 7
good news there.

PAUL AT LYSTRA

And at Lystra there was a certain man, who from 8
birth had been without the use of his feet, never having
had the power of walking. This man was giving ear to 9
the preaching of Paul, who, looking at him and seeing
that he had faith to be made well, said in a loud voice, 10
"Get up on your feet". And, jumping up, he went
walking about. And when the people saw what Paul 11
had done, they said in a loud voice, in the language of
Lycaonia, "The gods have come down to us in the form
of men". And they gave the name of Jupiter to Barnabas, 12
and to Paul that of Mercury, because he was the chief
talker. And the priest of the image of Jupiter, which 13
was before the town, took oxen and flowers to the doors
of the town, and was about to make an offering with the
people. But when this came to the ears of the Apostles, 14
Paul and Barnabas, they went running out among the
people, parting their clothing, and crying out, "Good 15
people, why are you doing these things? We are men
with the same feelings as you, and we give you the good
news so that you may be turned away from these foolish
things to the living God, who made the heaven and the
earth and the sea and all things in them: who in the 16
past let all nations go in the ways that seemed good to
them. But he was not without witness, because he did 17
good, and gave you rain from heaven, and times of fruit,
making your hearts full of food and joy." And even with 18
these words, it was hard for them to keep the people
from making an offering to them.

But some Jews came to that place from Antioch and 19
Iconium, and got control over the people; and after
stoning Paul, they had him pulled out of the town, taking
him for dead. But when the disciples came round him, 20
he got up, and went into the town: and the day after
he went away with Barnabas to Derbe. And having 21
made a number of disciples through the preaching of
the good news in that town, they went back to Lystra

and Iconium and Antioch, making strong the souls of 22
the disciples, saying to them that they were to keep the
faith, and that we have to go through troubles of all
sorts to come into the kingdom of God. And when they 23
had made selection of some to be rulers in every church,
and had given themselves to prayer and kept themselves
from food, they put them into the care of the Lord in
whom they had faith. And they went through Pisidia 24
and came to Pamphylia. And after preaching the word 25
in Perga, they went down to Attalia; and from there they 26
went by ship to Antioch, where they had been handed
over to the grace of God for the work which they had
now done. And when they came there, and had got 27
the church together, they gave them an account of all
the things which God had done through them, and how
he had made open a door of faith to the Gentiles. And 28
they were with the disciples there for a long time.

ARGUMENT AND DISCUSSION

15 Now certain men came down from Judaea, teaching 1
the brothers and saying that without circumcision,
after the rule of Moses, there is no salvation.
And after Paul and Barnabas had had no little argument 2
and discussion with them, the brothers made a decision
to send Paul and Barnabas and certain others of them
to the Apostles and the rulers of the church at Jerusalem
about this question. So they, being sent on their way 3
by the church, went through Phoenicia and Samaria,
giving news of the salvation of the Gentiles, to the great
joy of all the brothers. And when they came to Jerusalem, 4
they had a meeting with the church and the Apostles and
the rulers, and they gave an account of all the things
which God had done through them. But some of the 5
Pharisees, who were of the faith, got up and said, "It is
necessary for these to have circumcision and to keep the
law of Moses".

And the Apostles and the rulers of the church came 6

together and gave thought to the question. And when 7
there had been much discussion, Peter got up and said
to them,

"My brothers, you have knowledge that some time
back it was God's pleasure that by my mouth the good
news might be given to the Gentiles so that they might
have faith. And God, the searcher of hearts, was a 8
witness to them, giving them the Holy Spirit even as
he did to us; making no division between them and us, 9
but making clean their hearts by faith. Why then are 10
you testing God, by putting on the neck of the disciples
a yoke so hard that not even our fathers or we were
strong enough for it? But we have faith that we will 11
get salvation through the grace of the Lord Jesus in
the same way as they."

And all the people were quiet while Barnabas and Paul 12
gave an account of the signs and wonders which God
had done among the Gentiles by them. And when they 13
had come to an end, James, answering, said,

"My brothers, give ear to me: Symeon has given an 14
account of how God was first pleased to take from among
the Gentiles a people for himself. And this is in agree- 15
ment with the words of the prophets, as it is said,

After these things I will come back, 16
And I will put up the tent of David which has been
broken down,
Building up again its broken parts
And making it complete:
So that the rest of men may make search for the Lord, 17
And all the Gentiles on whom my name is named,
Says the Lord, who has made these things clear from 18
the earliest times.

For this reason my decision is, that we do not put trouble 19
in the way of those who from among the Gentiles are
turned to God; but that we give them orders to keep 20
themselves from things offered to false gods, and from
the evil desires of the body, and from the flesh of animals

put to death in ways against the law, and from blood.
For Moses, from times long past, has his preachers in 21
every town, reading his law in the Synagogues every
Sabbath."

Then it seemed good to the Apostles and the rulers 22
and all the church, to send men from among them to
Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; Judas, named Barsabbas,
and Silas, chief men among the brothers: and they sent 23
a letter by them, saying, "The Apostles and the older
brothers, to the brothers who are of the Gentiles in
Antioch and Syria and Cilicia, may joy be with you:
Because we have knowledge that some who went from 24
us have been troubling you with their words, putting
your souls in doubt; to whom we gave no such order;
it seemed good to us, having come to an agreement 25
together, to send these men to you, with our well-loved
Barnabas and Paul, men who have given up their lives 26
for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. And so we have 27
sent Judas and Silas, who will say the same things to
you themselves, by word of mouth. For it seemed good 28
to the Holy Spirit and to us, to put on you nothing more
than these necessary things; to keep from things offered 29
to false gods, and from blood, and from things put to
death in ways which are against the law, and from the
evil desires of the body; if you keep yourselves from
these, you will do well. May you be happy."

So they, being sent away, came down to Antioch, and 30
having got the people together, they gave them the
letter. And after reading it, they were glad of its com- 31
fort. And Judas and Silas, who themselves were prophets, 32
gave teaching to the brothers and made them strong in
the faith. And when they had been there for some time, 33
they were sent back in peace by the brothers to those
who had sent them. But Paul and Barnabas kept on in 35
Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of God, with
a number of others.

PAUL AND BARNABAS ARE PARTED

And after some days, Paul said to Barnabas, "Let us 36
go back and see the brothers in every town where we
have given the word of God, and see how they are"
And Barnabas had a desire to take with them John, 37
named Mark. But Paul was of the opinion that it was 38
not right to take with them one who had gone away from
them in Pamphylia, and had not gone on with the work.
And there was a sharp argument between them, so that 39
they were parted from one another, and Barnabas took
Mark with him and went by ship to Cyprus; but Paul 40
took Silas and went away with the blessing of the
brothers. And he went through Syria and Cilicia, making 41
the churches stronger in the faith.

16 AND he came to Derbe and Lystra: and there was 1
a certain disciple there named Timothy, whose
mother was one of the Jews of the faith, but his
father was a Greek; of whom the brothers at Lystra 2
and Iconium had a high opinion. Paul had a desire 3
for him to go with him, and he gave him circumcision
because of the Jews who were in those parts: for they
all had knowledge that his father was a Greek. And on 4
their way through the towns, they gave them the rules
which had been made by the Apostles and the rulers of
the church at Jerusalem, so that they might keep them.
So the churches were made strong in the faith and were 5
increased in number every day.

PAUL IN MACEDONIA

And after they had gone through the land of Phrygia 6
and Galatia, the Holy Spirit did not let them take the
word into Asia; and having come to Mysia, they made 7
an attempt to go into Bithynia, but the spirit of Jesus
did not let them; and going past Mysia, they came down 8
to Troas. And Paul had a vision in the night; a man of 9

Macedonia came, requesting him, and saying, "Come over into Macedonia and give us help". And when he had seen the vision, straight away we made the decision to go into Macedonia, for it seemed certain to us that God had sent us to give the good news to them.

So, from Troas we went straight by ship to Samothrace and the day after to Neapolis; and from there to Philippi, which is the most important town of Macedonia and a Roman colony: and we were there for some days. And on the Sabbath we went outside the town, by the river, where we had an idea that there would be a place of prayer; and being seated, we had talk with the women who had come together. And a certain woman named Lydia, a trader in purple cloth of the town of Thyatira, and a God-fearing woman, gave ear to us: whose heart the Lord made open to give attention to the things which Paul was saying. And when she and her family had had baptism, she made a request to us, saying, "If it seems to you that I am true to the Lord, come into my house and be my guests". And she made us come.

And when we were going to the place of prayer, we came across a girl having a spirit which gave knowledge of the future, whose masters made great profit from her power. She came after Paul and us, crying out, and saying, "These men are the servants of the Most High God, who are giving you news of the way of salvation". And this she did on a number of days. But Paul was greatly troubled, and turning, said to the spirit, "I give you orders in the name of Jesus Christ, to come out of her". And it came out that very hour.

THE PRISON DOORS

But when her masters saw that their hope of profit was gone, they took Paul and Silas, pulling them into the market-place before the rulers; and when they had taken them before the authorities, they said, "These men, who are Jews, are greatly troubling our town;

teaching rules of living which it is not right for us to 21
have or to keep, being Romans". And the people made 22
an attack on them all together: and the authorities took
their clothing off them, and gave orders for them to be
whipped. And when they had given them a great number 23
of blows, they put them in prison, giving orders to the
keeper of the prison to keep them safely: and he, having 24
such orders, put them into the inner prison with chains
on their feet. But about the middle of the night, Paul 25
and Silas were making prayers and songs to God in the
hearing of the prisoners; and suddenly there was an 26
earth-shock, so that the base of the prison was moved:
and all the doors came open, and everyone's chains came
off. And the keeper, coming out of his sleep, and seeing 27
the prison doors open, took his sword and was about to
put himself to death, fearing that the prisoners had got
away. But Paul said in a loud voice, "Do yourself no 28
damage, for we are all here". And he sent for lights 29
and came rushing in, and shaking with fear, went down
on his face before Paul and Silas, and took them out and 30
said, "Sirs, what have I to do to get salvation?" And 31
they said, "Have faith in the Lord Jesus, and you and
your family will have salvation". And they gave the 32
word of the Lord to him and to all who were in his house.
And that same hour of the night, he took them, and when 33
he had given attention to their wounds, he and all his
family had baptism straight away. And he took them 34
into his house and gave them food, and he was full of
joy, having faith in God with all his family.

But when it was day, the authorities sent the police, 35
saying, "Let these men go". And the keeper said to 36
Paul, "The authorities have given orders to let you go:
come out now, and go in peace". But Paul said to them, 37
"They have given us who are Romans a public whipping
without judging us, and have put us in prison. Will they
now send us out secretly? no, truly, let them come them-
selves and take us out." And the police gave an account 38
of these words to the authorities, and they were full

of fear on hearing that they were Romans; then they 39
came and made prayers to them, requesting them, when
they had taken them out, to go away from the town.
And they came out of the prison and went to the house 40
of Lydia: and when they had seen the brothers they gave
them comfort and went away.

Now when they had gone through Amphipolis and 1
Apollonia they came to Thessalonica, where there
was a Synagogue of the Jews: and Paul, as he 2
generally did, went in to them, and on three Sabbath
days had discussions with them from the holy Writings,
saying to them clearly and openly that Christ had to be 3
put to death and come back to life again; and that "this
Jesus, whom", he said, "I am preaching to you, is the
Christ". And some of them had faith, and were joined 4
to Paul and Silas; and a number of the God-fearing
Greeks, and some of the chief women. But the Jews, 5
being moved with envy, took with them certain low
persons from among the common people, and getting
together a great number of people, made an outcry in
the town, attacking the house of Jason with the purpose
of taking them out to the people. And when they were 6
not able to get them, they took Jason and some of the
brothers by force before the rulers of the town, crying,
"These men, who have made trouble all over the world,
have now come here; whom Jason has taken into his 7
house: and they are acting against the orders of Caesar,
saying that there is another king, Jesus". And hearing 8
these things the people and the rulers of the town were
troubled. And having made Jason and the others give 9
an undertaking to keep the peace, they let them go.

And the brothers straight away sent Paul and Silas 10
away, by night, to Beroea: and they, when they came
there, went to the Synagogue of the Jews. Now these 11
were more noble than the Jews of Thessalonica, for they
gave serious attention to the word, searching in the holy
Writings every day, to see if these things were so. And 12

a number of them had faith, and no small number of the Greek women of high position and of the men. But 13
when the Jews of Thessalonica had news that Paul was preaching the word at Beroea, they came there, troubling the people and working them up. So the brothers sent 14
Paul straight away to the sea: but Silas and Timothy kept there still. But those who went with Paul took 15
him as far as Athens, and then went away, with orders from him to Silas and Timothy to come to him quickly.

PAUL AT ATHENS

Now while Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his 16
spirit was troubled, for he saw all the town full of images of the gods. So he had discussions in the Synagogue 17
with the Jews and God-fearing Gentiles, and every day in the market-place with those who were there. And 18
some of those who were supporters of the theories of the Epicureans and the Stoics, had a meeting with him. And some said, "What is this talker of foolish words saying?" And others, "He seems to be a preacher of strange gods": because he was preaching of Jesus and his coming back from the dead. And they took him to 19
Mars' Hill, saying, "Will you make clear to us what is this new teaching of yours? For you seem to us to say 20
strange things, and we have a desire to get the sense of them." (Now all the Athenians and the men from 21
other lands who come there were giving all their time to talking or hearing of anything new.) And Paul got 22
to his feet on Mars' Hill and said,

"O men of Athens, I see that you are overmuch given to fear of the gods. For when I came by, I was looking 23
at the things to which you give worship, and I saw an altar with this writing on it, TO THE GOD OF WHOM THERE IS NO KNOWLEDGE. Now, what you, without knowledge, give worship to, I make clear to you. The God who made the earth and every- 24
thing in it, he, being Lord of heaven and earth, is not

housed in buildings made with hands; and he is not 25
dependent on the work of men's hands, as if he had need
of anything, for he himself gives to all life and breath
and all things; and he has made of one blood all the 26
nations of men living on all the face of the earth, ordering
their times and the limits of their lands; so that they 27
might make search for God, in order, if possible, to get
knowledge of him, and make discovery of him, though
he is not far from every one of us: for in him we have 28
life and motion and existence; as certain of your verse
writers have said, 'For we are his offspring'. If then 29
we are the offspring of God, it is not right for us to
have the idea that God is like gold or silver or stone,
formed by the art or design of man. Those times when 30
men had no knowledge were overlooked by God; but
now he gives orders to all men in every place to undergo
a change of heart: because a day has been fixed in which 31
all the world will be judged in righteousness by the man
who has been marked out by him for this work; of which
he has given a sign to all men by giving him back from
the dead."

Now on hearing about the coming back from death, 32
some of them made sport of it, but others said, "Let
us go more fully into this another time". And so Paul 33
went away from among them. But some men gave 34
him their support: among whom was Dionysius the
Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others
with them.

FROM ATHENS TO CORINTH

18 AFTER these things, he went away from Athens, and 1
came to Corinth. And there he came across a 2
certain Jew named Aquila, a man of Pontus by
birth, who not long before had come from Italy with his
wife Priscilla, because Claudius had given orders that
all Jews were to go away from Rome: and he came to
them; and because he was of the same trade, he was 3
living with them, and they did their work together; for

by trade they were tent-makers. And every Sabbath 4
he had discussions in the Synagogue, turning Jews and
Greeks to the faith.

And when Silas and Timothy came down from 5
Macedonia, Paul was completely given up to the word,
preaching to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. And 6
when they put themselves against him, and said evil
words, he said, shaking his clothing, "Your blood be
on your heads, I am clean: from now I will go to the
Gentiles". And moving from there, he went into the 7
house of a man named Titus Justus, a God-fearing man,
whose house was very near the Synagogue. And Crispus, 8
the ruler of the Synagogue, with all his family, had faith
in the Lord; and a great number of the people of Corinth,
hearing the word, had faith and were given baptism.
And the Lord said to Paul in the night, in a vision, "Have 9
no fear and go on preaching: for I am with you, and no 10
one will make an attack on you to do you damage: for
I have a number of people in this town". And he was 11
there for a year and six months, teaching the word of
God among them.

But when Gallio was ruler of Achaia, all the Jews 12
together made an attack on Paul, and took him to the
judge's seat, saying, "This man is teaching the people 13
to give worship to God in a way which is against the
law". But when Paul was about to say something, 14
Gallio said to the Jews, "If this was anything to do with
wrongdoing or crime, there would be a reason for me
to give you a hearing: but if it is a question of words 15
or names or of your law, see to it yourselves; I will not
be a judge of such things". And he sent them away 16
from the judge's seat. And they all made an attack on 17
Sosthenes, the ruler of the Synagogue, and gave him
blows before the judge's seat; but Gallio gave no atten-
tion to these things.

And Paul, after waiting some days, went away from 18
the brothers and went by ship to Syria, Priscilla and
Aquila being with him; and he had had his hair cut off

in Cenchrea, for he had taken an oath. And they came 19
down to Ephesus and he left them there: and he himself
went into the Synagogue and had a discussion with the
Jews. And being requested by them to be there for 20
a longer time, he said, "No"; and went from them, 21
saying, "I will come back to you if God lets me"; and
he took ship from Ephesus. And when he had come to 22
land at Caesarea, he went to see the church, and then
went down to Antioch. And having been there for some 23
time, he went through the country of Galatia and Phrygia
in order, making the disciples strong in the faith.

Now a certain Jew named Apollos, an Alexandrian 24
by birth, and a man of learning, came to Ephesus; and
he had great knowledge of the holy Writings. This man 25
had been trained in the way of the Lord; and burning in
spirit, he gave himself up to teaching the facts about
Jesus, though he had knowledge only of John's baptism:
and he was preaching in the Synagogue without fear. 26
But Priscilla and Aquila, hearing his words, took him in,
and gave him fuller teaching about the way of God. And 27
when he had a desire to go over into Achaia, the brothers
gave him help, and sent letters to the disciples requesting
them to take him in among them: and when he had come,
he gave much help to those who had faith through grace:
for he overcame the Jews in public discussion, making 28
clear from the holy Writings that Jesus was the Christ.

DISCIPLES OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

19 AND it came about that while Apollos was at Corinth, 1
Paul, having gone through the higher country,
came to Ephesus, where there were certain dis-
ciples: and he said to them, "Did you get the Holy 2
Spirit when you had faith?" And they said to him, "No,
we have had no knowledge of the Holy Spirit". And 3
he said, "What sort of baptism did you have?" And
they said, "The baptism of John". And Paul said, "John 4
gave a baptism which goes with a change of heart, saying

to the people that they were to have faith in him who was coming after him, that is, in Jesus". And hearing 5
this, they had baptism in the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul had put his hands on them, the Holy 6
Spirit came on them; and they had the power of talking with tongues, and became prophets. And there were about 7
twelve of these men.

And he went into the Synagogue, and for three months 8
he was preaching there without fear, reasoning and teaching about the kingdom of God. But because some 9
of the people were hard-hearted and would not give hearing, saying evil words about the Way before the people, he went away from them, and kept the disciples separate, reasoning every day in the school of Tyrannus. And this went on for two years, so that all those who 10
were living in Asia had knowledge of the word of the Lord, Greeks as well as Jews. And God did special 11
works of power by the hands of Paul: so that bits of 12
linen and clothing from his body were taken to people who were ill, and their diseases went away from them, and the evil spirits went out. But some of the Jews who 13
went from place to place driving out evil spirits, took it on themselves to make use of the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had evil spirits, saying, "I give you orders, by Jesus, whom Paul is preaching". And 14
there were seven sons of a man named Sceva, a Jew and a chief priest, who did this. And the evil spirit, 15
answering, said to them, "I have knowledge of Jesus, and of Paul, but who are you?" And the man in whom 16
the evil spirit was, jumping on them, was stronger than the two of them, and overcame them, so that they took flight from that house wounded and without their clothing. And this came to the ears of all those, Jews 17
and Greeks, who were living at Ephesus; and fear came on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was made great. And a number of those who had faith came and 18
made public statement of their sins and all their acts. And a great number of those who were experts in strange 19

arts took their books and put them on the fire in front of everyone: and when the books were valued they came to fifty thousand bits of silver. So the word of the Lord 20
was increased very greatly and was full of power.

Now after these things were ended, Paul came to 21
a decision that when he had gone through Macedonia and Achaia he would go to Jerusalem, saying, "After I have been there, I have a desire to see Rome". And 22
having sent two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, into Macedonia, he himself went on living in Asia for a time.

DIANA OF EPHESUS

And about that time a great outcry took place about 23
the Way. For there was a certain man named Demetrius, 24
a silver-worker, who made silver boxes for the images of Diana, and gave no small profit to the workmen; whom he got together, with other workmen of the same 25
trade, and said to them, "Men, it is clear that from this business we get our wealth. And you see, for it has 26
come to your ears, that not only at Ephesus, but almost all through Asia, this Paul has been teaching numbers of people and turning them away, saying that those are not gods who are made by men's hands: and there is 27
danger, not only that our trade may be damaged in the opinion of men, but that the holy place of the great *goddess* Diana may be no longer honoured, and that she to whom all Asia and the world give worship, will be put down from her high position." And hearing this, 28
they were very angry, crying out and saying, "Great is Diana of Ephesus". And the town was full of noise and 29
trouble, and they all came running into the theatre, having taken by force Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia who were journeying in company with Paul. And when Paul was about to go in to the people, the 30
disciples did not let him. And some of the rulers of 31
Asia, being his friends, sent to him, requesting him seriously not to put himself in danger by going into the

theatre. And some said one thing, and some another: 32
for there was no order in the meeting; and most of them
had no idea why they had come together. Then they 33
took Alexander out from among the people, the Jews
putting him forward. And Alexander, making a sign
with his hand, was about to make a statement to the
people in answer: but when they saw that he was a Jew, 34
all of them with one voice went on crying out for about
two hours, "Great is Diana of Ephesus". And when the 35
chief secretary had got the people quiet, he said, "Men
of Ephesus, is any man without knowledge that the town
of Ephesus is the keeper of the holy place of the great
Diana, who was sent down from Jupiter? So then, 36
because these things may not be doubted, it would be
better for you to be quiet, and do nothing unwise. For 37
you have taken these men, who are not doing damage
to the holy place, or talking against our goddess. If, 38
then, Demetrius and the workmen who are with him
have a protest to make against any man, the law is open
to them, and there are judges; let them put up a cause
at law against one another. But if any other business 39
is in question, let it be taken up in the regular meeting.
For, truly, we are in danger of being made responsible 40
for this day's trouble, there being no cause for it: and
we are not able to give any reason for this coming
together." And when he had said this, he sent the 41
meeting away.

20 AND after the noise had come to an end, Paul, having 1
sent for the disciples and given them comfort, went
away from them to Macedonia. And when he had 2
gone through those parts and given them much teaching,
he came into Greece. And when he had been there three 3
months, because the Jews had made a secret design
against him when he was about to take ship for Syria,
he made a decision to go back through Macedonia. And 4
Sopater of Beroea, the son of Pyrrhus; and Aristarchus
and Secundus of Thessalonica; and Gaius of Derbe, and

Timothy; and Tychicus and Trophimus of Asia, went
with him as far as Asia. But these had gone before, and 5
were waiting for us at Troas. And we went away from 6
Philippi by ship after the days of unleavened bread, and
came to them at Troas in five days; and we were there
for seven days.

THE HOLY MEAL AT TROAS

And on the first day of the week, when we had come 7
together for the holy meal, Paul gave them a talk, for
it was his purpose to go away on the day after; and he
went on talking till after the middle of the night. And 8
there were a number of lights in the room where we
had come together. And a certain young man named 9
Eutychus, who was seated in the window, went into
a deep sleep; and while Paul went on talking, being
overcome by sleep, he had a fall from the third floor,
and was taken up dead. And Paul went down, and falling 10
on him, took him in his arms and said, "Do not be
troubled, for his life is in him". And when he had gone 11
up, and had taken the broken bread, he went on talking
to them for a long time, even till dawn, and then he went
away. And they took the boy in, living, and were greatly 12
comforted.

But we, going before him by ship, went to Assos with 13
the purpose of taking Paul in there: for so he had given
orders, because he himself was coming by land. And 14
when he came up with us at Assos, we took him in the
ship, and went on to Mitylene. And going from there 15
by sea, we came on the day after opposite Chios, and
touching at Samos on the day after that, we came on the
third day to Miletus. For Paul's purpose was to go past 16
Ephesus, so that he might not be kept in Asia; for he
was going quickly, in order, if possible, to be at Jeru-
salem on the day of Pentecost.

And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus for the rulers 17
of the church. And when they had come, he said to 18
them,

"You yourselves have seen what my life has been
like all the time from the day when I first came into
Asia, doing the Lord's work without pride, through all 19
the sorrow and troubles which came on me because of
the evil designs of the Jews: and how I kept back nothing 20
which might be of profit to you, teaching you publicly
and privately, preaching to Jews and to Greeks the 21
need for a turning of the heart to God, and faith in
the Lord Jesus Christ. And now, as you see, I am going 22
to Jerusalem, a prisoner in spirit, having no knowledge
of what will come to me there: only that the Holy Spirit 23
makes clear to me in every town that prison and pains
are waiting for me. But I put no value on my life, if 24
only at the end of it I may see the work complete which
was given to me by the Lord Jesus, to be a witness of
the good news of the grace of God. And now I am 25
conscious that you, among whom I have gone about
preaching the kingdom, will not see my face again. And 26
so I say to you this day that I am clean from the blood
of all men. For I have not kept back from you anything 27
of the purpose of God. Give attention to yourselves, 28
and to all the flock which the Holy Spirit has given into
your care, to give food to the church of God, for which
he gave his blood. I am conscious that after I am gone, 29
evil wolves will come in among you, doing damage to
the flock; and from among yourselves will come men 30
who will give wrong teaching, turning away the disciples
after them. So keep watch, having in mind that for 31
three years without resting I was teaching every one
of you, day and night, with weeping. And now, I give 32
you into the care of God and the word of his grace, which
is able to make you strong and to give you your heritage
among all the saints. I have had no desire for any man's 33

silver or gold or clothing. You yourselves have seen 34
that with these hands I got what was necessary for me
and those who were with me. In all things I was an 35
example to you of how, in your lives, you are to give
help to the feeble, and keep in memory the words of the
Lord Jesus, how he himself said, 'There is a greater
blessing in giving than in getting'."

And having said these words, he went down on his 36
knees in prayer with them all. And they were all weeping, 37
falling on Paul's neck, and kissing him, being sad most 38
of all because he had said that they would not see his
face again. And so they went with him to the ship.

21 AND after parting from them, we put out to sea and 1
came straight to Cos, and the day after to Rhodes,
and from there to Patara: and as there was a ship 2
going to Phoenicia, we went in it. And when we had 3
come in view of Cyprus, going past it on our left, we
went on to Syria, and came to land at Tyre: for there
the goods which were in the ship had to be taken out.
And having come upon the disciples we were there for 4
seven days: and they gave Paul orders through the
Spirit not to go up to Jerusalem. And when these days 5
came to an end, we went on our journey; and they all,
with their wives and children, came with us on our way
till we were out of the town: and after going on our
knees in prayer by the sea, we said our last words to 6
one another, and got into the ship, and they went back
to their houses.

And journeying by ship from Tyre we came to 7
Ptolemais; and there we had talk with the brothers, and
were with them for one day. And on the day after we 8
went away and came to Caesarea, where we were guests
in the house of Philip, the preacher, who was one of the
seven. And he had four unmarried daughters, who were 9
prophets. And while we were waiting there for some 10
days, a certain prophet, named Agabus, came down from
Judaea. And he came to us, and took the band of Paul's 11

clothing, and putting it round his feet and hands, said, "The Holy Spirit says these words, 'So will the Jews do to the man who is the owner of this band, and they will give him up into the hands of the Gentiles'". And 12
hearing these things, we and those who were living in that place made request to him not to go to Jerusalem. Then Paul said, "What are you doing, weeping and 13
wounding my heart? for I am ready, not only to be a prisoner, but to be put to death at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus". And as he might not be moved 14
we did no more, saying, "Let the purpose of God be done".

And after these days we got ready and went up to 15
Jerusalem. And some of the disciples from Caesarea 16
went with us, taking a certain Mnason of Cyprus, one of the early disciples, in whose house we were to be living.

PAUL AT JERUSALEM

And when we came to Jerusalem, the brothers were 17
pleased to see us. And on the day after, Paul went with 18
us to James, and all the rulers of the church were present. And when he had said how glad he was to see them, he 19
gave them a detailed account of the things which God had done through his work among the Gentiles. And 20
hearing it, they gave praise to God; and they said to him, "You see, brother, what thousands there are among the Jews, who have the faith; and they all have a great respect for the law: and they have had news of you, how 21
you have been teaching all the Jews among the Gentiles to give up the law of Moses, and not to give circumcision to their children, and not to keep the old rules. What 22
then is the position? They will certainly get news that you have come. Do this, then, which we say to you: 23
We have four men who have taken an oath; go with 24
these, and make yourself clean with them, and make the necessary payments for them, so that they may be free from their oath: and everyone will see that the

statements made about you are not true, but that you
put yourself under rule, and keep the law. But as to the 25
Gentiles who have the faith, we sent a letter, giving our
decision that they were to keep themselves from offerings
made to false gods, and from blood, and from the flesh
of animals put to death in ways against the law, and
from the evil desires of the body." Then Paul took the 26
men, and on the day after, making himself clean with
them, he went into the Temple, giving out the statement
that the days necessary for making them clean were
complete, till the offering was made for every one of
them.

And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews 27
from Asia, seeing him in the Temple, got the people
together and put their hands on him, crying out, "Men 28
of Israel, come to our help: this is the man who is
teaching all men everywhere against the people and the
law and this place: and in addition, he has taken Greeks
into the Temple, and made this holy place unclean".
For they had seen him before in the town with Trophimus 29
of Ephesus, and had the idea that Paul had taken him
with him into the Temple. And all the town was moved, 30
and the people came running together, and put their
hands on Paul, pulling him out of the Temple: and then
the doors were shut. And while they were attempting 31
to put him to death, news came to the chief captain of
the band that all Jerusalem was out of control. And 32
straight away he took some armed men and went quickly
down to them: and the Jews seeing them gave no more
blows to Paul. Then the chief captain came near and 33
took him, and gave orders for him to be put in chains,
questioning them as to who he was and what he had
done. And some said one thing and some another, 34
among the people: and as he was not able to get a know-
ledge of the facts because of the noise, he gave orders for
Paul to be taken into the army building. And when 35
he came on to the steps, he was lifted up by the armed
men, because of the force of the people; for a great 36

mass of people came after them, crying out, "Away with him!"

And when Paul was about to be taken into the building, 37
he said to the chief captain, "May I say something to you?" And he said, "Have you a knowledge of Greek? Are you by chance the Egyptian who, before this, got 38
the people worked up against the government and took four thousand men of the Assassins out into the waste land?" But Paul said, "I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, 39
which is not an unimportant town: I make a request to you to let me say a word to the people". And when 40
he let him do so, Paul, from the steps, made a sign with his hand to the people, and when they were all quiet, he said to them in the Hebrew language,

PAUL'S STORY OF HIS LIFE

22 "My brothers and fathers, give ear to the story 1
of my life which I now put before you."
And hearing him talking in the Hebrew 2
language, they became the more quiet, and he said,

"I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia by birth, but I had 3
my education in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, being trained in the keeping of every detail of the law of our fathers; given up to the cause of God with all my heart, as you are today. And I made attacks on this Way, even 4
to death, taking men and women and putting them in prison. Of which the high priest will be a witness, and 5
all the rulers, from whom I had letters to the brothers; and I went into Damascus, to take those who were there as prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. And it came 6
about that while I was on my journey, coming near to Damascus, about the middle of the day, suddenly I saw a great light from heaven shining round me. And when 7
I went down on the earth, a voice came to my ears saying to me, 'Saul, Saul, why are you attacking me so cruelly?' And I, answering, said, Who are you, Lord? 8
And he said to me, 'I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom you

are attacking'. And those who were with me saw the 9
light, but the voice of him who was talking to me came
not to their ears. And I said, What have I to do, Lord? 10
And the Lord said to me, 'Get up, and go into Damascus;
and it will be made clear to you what you have to do'.
And because I was unable to see because of the glory of 11
that light, those who were with me took me by the hand,
and so I came to Damascus. And one Ananias, a God- 12
fearing man, who kept the law, and of whom all the
Jews in that place had a high opinion, came to my side 13
and said, 'Brother Saul, let your eyes be open'. And
in that very hour I was able to see him. And he said, 14
'You have been marked out by the God of our fathers
to have knowledge of his purpose, and to see the Upright
One and to give ear to the words of his mouth. For you 15
will be a witness for him to all men of what you have
seen and of what has come to your ears. And now, why 16
are you waiting? get up, and have baptism, for the
washing away of your sins, giving worship to his name.'
And it came about that when I had come back to Jeru- 17
salem, while I was at prayer in the Temple, my senses
became more than naturally clear, and I saw him saying 18
to me, 'Go out of Jerusalem straight away because they
will not give hearing to your witness about me'. And 19
I said, Lord, they themselves have knowledge that I went
through the Synagogues putting in prison and whipping
all those who had faith in you: and when Stephen your 20
witness was put to death, I was there, giving approval,
and looking after the clothing of those who put him to
death. And he said to me, 'Go, for I will send you far 21
away to the Gentiles'."

And they gave him a hearing as far as this word; then 22
with loud voices they said, "Away with this man from
the earth; it is not right for him to be living". And while 23
they were crying out, and pulling off their clothing, and
sending dust into the air, the chief captain gave orders 24
for him to be taken into the army building, saying that
he would put him to the test by whipping, so that he

might have knowledge of the reason why they were crying out so violently against him. And when they had put leather bands round him, Paul said to the captain who was present, "Is it the law for you to give blows to a man who is a Roman and has not been judged?" And hearing this, the man went to the chief captain and gave him an account of it, saying, "What are you about to do? for this man is a Roman". And the chief captain came to him and said, "Give me an answer, are you a Roman?" And he said, "Yes". And the chief captain said, "I got Roman rights for myself at a great price" And Paul said, "But I had them by birth". Then those who were about to put him to the test went away: and the chief captain was in fear, seeing that he was a Roman, and that he had put chains on him.

But on the day after, desiring to have certain knowledge of what the Jews had to say against him, he made him free, and gave orders for the chief priests and all the Sanhedrin to come together, and he took Paul and put him before them.

23 AND Paul, looking fixedly at the Sanhedrin, said, "My brothers, my life has been upright before God till this day". And the high priest, Ananias, gave orders to those who were near him to give him a blow on the mouth. Then Paul said to him, "God will give blows to you, you whitewashed wall: are you here to be my judge by law, and by your orders am I given blows against the law?" And those who were near said, "Do you say such words against God's high priest?" And Paul said, "Brother, I had no idea that he was the high priest: for it has been said, 'You may not say evil about the ruler of your people'". But when Paul saw that half of them were Sadducees and the rest Pharisees, he said in the Sanhedrin, "Brothers, I am a Pharisee, and the son of Pharisees: I am here to be judged on the question of the hope of the coming back from the dead". And when he had said this, there was an argument between the

Pharisees and the Sadducees, and a division in the meeting. For the Sadducees say that there is no coming 8
back from the dead, and no angels or spirits: but the Pharisees have belief in all these. And there was a 9
great outcry: and some of the scribes on the side of the Pharisees got up and took part in the discussion, saying, "We see no evil in this man: what if he has had a revelation from an angel or a spirit?" And when the 10
argument became very violent, the chief captain, fearing that Paul would be pulled in two by them, gave orders to the armed men to take him by force from among them, and take him into the army building.

And the night after, the Lord came to his side and 11
said, "Be of good heart, for as you have been witnessing for me in Jerusalem, so will you be my witness in Rome".

And when it was day, the Jews came together and put 12
themselves under an oath that they would take no food or drink till they had put Paul to death. And more than 13
forty of them took this oath. And they came to the chief 14
priests and the rulers and said, "We have taken a great oath to take no food till we have put Paul to death. So now, will you and the Sanhedrin make a request to 15
the military authorities to have him sent down to you, as if you were desiring to go into the business in greater detail; and we, before ever he gets to you, will be waiting to put him to death." But Paul's sister's son had word 16
of their design, and he came into the army building and gave news of it to Paul. And Paul sent for a captain 17
and said, "Take this young man to your chief, for he has news for him". So he took him to the chief captain 18
and said, "Paul, the prisoner, made a request to me to take this young man to you, for he has something to say to you". And the chief took him by the hand and, going 19
on one side, said to him privately, "What is it you have to say to me?" And he said, "The Jews are in agree- 20
ment together to make a request to you for Paul to be taken, on the day after this, into the Sanhedrin, to be

questioned in greater detail. But do not give way to 21
them, for more than forty of them are waiting for him,
having taken an oath not to take food or drink till they
have put him to death: and now they are ready, waiting
for your order." So the chief captain let the young man 22
go, saying to him, "Do not say to anyone that you have
given me word of these things". And he sent for two 23
captains and said, "Make ready two hundred men, with
seventy horsemen and two hundred spearmen, to go to
Caesarea, at the third hour of the night: and get beasts 24
so that they may put Paul on them, and take him safely
to Felix, the ruler". And he sent a letter in these 25
words:

PAUL SENT TO FELIX

"Claudius Lysias, to the most noble ruler, Felix, 26
peace be with you. This man was taken by the Jews, 27
and was about to be put to death by them, when I came
on them with the army and took him out of danger,
having knowledge that he was a Roman. And desiring 28
to get at the reason for their attack on him, I took him
down to their Sanhedrin: then it became clear to me that 29
it was a question of their law, and that nothing was said
against him which might be a reason for prison or death.
And when news was given to me that a secret design 30
was being made against the man, I sent him straight
away to you, giving orders to those who are against
him to make their statements before you."

So the armed men, as they were ordered, took Paul 31
and came by night to Antipatris. But on the day after, 32
they sent the horsemen on with him, and went back to
their place: and they, when they came to Caesarea, gave 33
the letter to the ruler, and took Paul before him. And 34
after reading it, he said, "What part of the country do
you come from?" And hearing that he was from Cilicia,
"I will give hearing to your cause", he said, "when 35
those who are against you have come". And he gave
orders for him to be kept in Herod's Praetorium.

24 AND after five days, the high priest, Ananias, came 1
with certain of the rulers, and an expert talker,
one Tertullus; and they made a statement to Felix
against Paul. And when he had been sent for, Tertullus, 2
starting his statement, said,

"Because by you we are living in peace, and through
your wisdom wrongs are put right for this nation, in 3
all things and in all places we are conscious of our great
debt to you, most noble Felix. But, so that I may not 4
make you tired, I make a request to you of your mercy,
to give hearing to a short statement. For this man, in 5
our opinion, is a cause of trouble, a maker of attacks
on the government among Jews through all the empire,
and a chief mover in the society of the Nazarenes: who, 6
in addition, was attempting to make the Temple unclean:
whom we took, and from whom you will be able, by 8
questioning him yourself, to get knowledge of all the
things which we say against him." And the Jews were 9
in agreement with his statement, saying that these things
were so.

Then when the ruler had given him a sign to make 10
his answer, Paul said,

"Because I have knowledge that you have been a judge
over this nation for a number of years, I am glad to make
my answer: seeing that you are able to make certain 11
of the fact that it is not more than twelve days from the
time when I came up to Jerusalem for worship: and they 12
have not seen me in argument with any man in the
Temple, or working up the feelings of the people, in
the Synagogues, or in the town. And they are not able 13
to give facts in support of the things which they say
against me now. But this I will say openly to you, that 14
I do give worship to the God of our fathers after that
Way, which to them is not the true religion: but I have
belief in all the things which are in the law, and in the
books of the prophets: hoping in God for that which 15
they themselves are looking for, that there will be a

coming back from the dead for upright men and wrongdoers. And in this, I do my best at all times to have no reason for shame before God or men. Now after a number of years I came to give help and offerings to my nation: and having been made clean, I was in the Temple, but not with a great number of people, and not with noise: but there were certain Jews from Asia, and it would have been better if they had come here to make a statement, if they have anything against me. Or let these men here present say what wrongdoing was seen in me when I was before the Sanhedrin, but only this one thing which I said among them in a loud voice, I am this day being judged on the question of the coming back from the dead."

But Felix, who had a more detailed knowledge of the Way, put them off, saying, "When Lysias, the chief captain, comes down, I will give attention to your business". And he gave orders to the captain to keep Paul under his control, and to let him have everything he had need of; and not to keep his friends from coming to see him.

PAUL IN CHAINS

But after some days, Felix came with Drusilla his wife, who was of the Jews by birth, and sent for Paul, and gave hearing to him about faith in Christ Jesus. And while he was talking about righteousness, and self-control, and the judging which was to come, Felix had great fear and said, "Go away for the present, and when the right time comes I will send for you". For he was hoping that Paul would give him money: so he sent for him more frequently and had talk with him. But after two years Porcius Festus took the place of Felix, who, desiring to have the approval of the Jews, kept Paul in chains.

25 So Festus, having come into that part of the country 1
which was under his rule, after three days went up
to Jerusalem from Caesarea. And the chief priests 2
and the chief men of the Jews made statements against
Paul, requesting Festus to give effect to their design 3
against him, and send him to Jerusalem, when they
would be waiting to put him to death on the way. But 4
Festus, in answer, said that Paul was being kept in
prison at Caesarea, and that in a short time he himself
was going there. "So," he said, "let those who have 5
authority among you go with me, and if there is any
wrong in the man, let them make a statement against
him."

"LET MY CAUSE COME BEFORE CAESAR"

And when he had been with them not more than eight 6
or ten days, he went down to Caesarea; and on the day
after, he took his place on the judge's seat, and sent for
Paul. And when he came, the Jews who had come down 7
from Jerusalem came round him, and made all sorts of
serious statements against him, which were not supported
by the facts. Then Paul, in his answer to them, said, 8
"I have done no wrong against the law of the Jews, or
against the Temple, or against Caesar". But Festus, 9
desiring to get the approval of the Jews, said to Paul,
"Will you go up to Jerusalem, and be judged before me
there in connection with these things?" And Paul said, 10
"I am before the seat of Caesar's authority where it
is right for me to be judged: I have done no wrong to
the Jews, as you are well able to see. If, then, I am 11
a wrongdoer and there is a cause of death in me, I am
ready for death: if it is not as they say against me, no
man may give me up to them. Let my cause come before
Caesar." Then Festus, having had a discussion with 12
the Jews, made answer, "You have said, 'Let my cause
come before Caesar'; to Caesar you will go".

Now when some days had gone by, king Agrippa and 13
Bernice came to Caesarea and went to see Festus. And 14
as they were there for some days, Festus gave them
Paul's story, saying, "There is a certain man here who
was put in prison by Felix: against whom the chief priests 15
and the rulers of the Jews made a statement when I was
at Jerusalem, requesting me to give a decision against
him. To whom I gave answer that it is not the Roman 16
way to give a man up, till he has been face to face with
those who are attacking him, and has had a chance to
give an answer to the statements made against him. So, 17
when they had come together here, straight away, on
the day after, I took my place on the judge's seat and
sent for the man. But when they got up they said 18
nothing about such crimes as I had in mind: but had 19
certain questions against him in connection with their
religion, and about one Jesus, now dead, who, Paul said,
was living. And as I had not enough knowledge for the 20
discussion of these things, I made the suggestion to him
to go to Jerusalem and be judged there. But when Paul 21
made a request that he might be judged by Caesar, I gave
orders for him to be kept till I might send him to
Caesar." And Agrippa said to Festus, "I have a desire 22
to give the man a hearing myself". "Tomorrow", he
said, "you may give him a hearing."

PAUL AND AGRIPPA

So on the day after, when Agrippa and Bernice in 23
great glory had come into the public place of hearing,
with the chief of the army and the chief men of the town,
at the order of Festus Paul was sent for. And Festus 24
said, "King Agrippa, and all those who are present here
with us, you see this man, about whom all the Jews have
made protests to me, at Jerusalem and in this place,
saying that it is not right for him to be living any longer.
But, in my opinion, there is no cause of death in him, 25
and as he himself has made a request to be judged by

Caesar, I have said that I would send him. But I have no certain account of him to send to Caesar. So I have sent for him to come before you, and specially before you, king Agrippa, so that after the business has been gone into, I may have something to put in writing. For it seems to me against reason to send a prisoner without making clear what there is against him."

26 AND Agrippa said to Paul, "You may put your cause before us". Then Paul, stretching out his hand, made his answer, saying:

"In my opinion I am happy, king Agrippa, to be able to give my answer before you today to all these things which the Jews say against me: the more so, because you are expert in all questions to do with the Jews and their ways: so I make my request to you to give me a hearing to the end. All the Jews have knowledge of my way of life from my early years, as it was from the start among my nation, and at Jerusalem; and they are able to say, if they would give witness, that I was living as a Pharisee, in that division of our religion which is most regular in the keeping of the law. And now I am here to be judged because of the hope given by God's word to our fathers; for the effecting of which our twelve tribes have been working and waiting night and day with all their hearts. And in connection with this hope I am attacked by the Jews, O king! Why, in your opinion, is it outside belief for God to make the dead come to life again? For I, truly, was of the opinion that it was right for me to do a number of things against the name of Jesus of Nazareth. And this I did in Jerusalem: and numbers of the saints I put in prison, having had authority given to me from the chief priests, and when they were put to death, I gave my decision against them. And I gave them punishment frequently, in all the Synagogues, forcing them to say things against God; and burning with passion against them, I went after them even into far-away towns. Then, when I was

journeying to Damascus with the authority and orders
of the chief priests, in the middle of the day, on the 13
road I saw a light from heaven, brighter than the sun,
shining round me and those who were journeying with
me. And when we had all gone down on the earth, 14
a voice came to me, saying in the Hebrew language,
'Saul, Saul, why are you attacking me so cruelly? It is
hard for you to go against the impulse which is driving
you.' And I said, Who are you, Lord? And the Lord 15
said, 'I am Jesus, whom you are attacking. But get up 16
on your feet: for I have come to you for this purpose,
to make you a servant and a witness of the things in
which you have seen me, and of those in which you will
see me; and I will keep you safe from the people, and 17
from the Gentiles, to whom I send you, to make their 18
eyes open, turning them from the dark to the light, and
from the power of Satan to God, so that they may have
forgiveness of sins and a heritage among those who are
made holy by faith in me.' So, then, king Agrippa, I did 19
not go against the vision from heaven; but I went about, 20
first to those in Damascus and Jerusalem, and through
all the country of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles,
preaching a change of heart, so that they, being turned
to God, might give, in their works, the fruits of a
changed heart. For this reason, the Jews took me in 21
the Temple, and made an attempt to put me to death.
And so, by God's help, I am here today, witnessing to 22
small and great, saying nothing but what the prophets
and Moses said would come about; that the Christ would 23
go through pain, and being the first to come back from
the dead, would give light to the people and to the
Gentiles."

And when he made his answer in these words, Festus 24
said in a loud voice, "Paul, you are out of your mind;
your great learning has made you unbalanced". Then 25
Paul said, "I am not out of my mind, most noble Festus,
but my words are true and wise. For the king has know- 26
ledge of these things, to whom I am talking freely;

being certain that all this is common knowledge to him;
for it has not been done in secret. King Agrippa, have 27
you faith in the prophets? I am certain that you have."
And Agrippa said to Paul, "A little more and you will 28
be making me a Christian". And Paul said, "It is my 29
prayer to God that, in little or great measure, not only
you, but all those hearing me today might be even as
I am, but for these chains".

And the king and the ruler and Bernice and those who 30
were seated with them got up; and when they had gone 31
away they said to one another, "This man has done
nothing which might give cause for death or prison".
And Agrippa said to Festus, "This man might have 32
been made free, if he had not put his cause before
Caesar".

BY SEA TO ITALY

And when the decision had been made that we were 1
to go by sea to Italy, they gave Paul and certain
other prisoners into the care of a captain named
Julius, of the Augustan band. And we went to sea in 2
a ship of Adramyttium which was sailing to the sea towns
of Asia, Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica,
being with us. And on the day after, we came to Sidon; 3
and Julius was kind to Paul, and let him go to see his
friends, and take a rest. And sailing again from there, 4
we went on under cover of Cyprus, because the wind was
against us. And having gone across the sea off Cilicia 5
and Pamphylia we came to Myra, in Lycia. And there 6
the captain came across a ship of Alexandria, sailing for
Italy, and put us in it. And when we had gone on slowly 7
for a long time, and had had hard work getting across
to Cnidus, for the wind was against us, we went under
cover of Crete, in the direction of Salmone; and sailing 8
down the side of it, as well as we were able, we came
to a certain place named Fair Havens, near which was
the town of Lasea.

LOSS OF THE SHIP AT SEA

And as a long time had gone by, and the journey was 9
now full of danger, because it was late in the year, Paul
put the position before them, saying, "Friends, I see 10
that this journey will be one of great damage and loss,
not only to the goods and the ship, but to ourselves".
But the captain gave more attention to the master and 11
the owner of the ship than to what Paul said. And as the 12
harbour was not a good one in which to be for the winter,
the greater number of them were for going out to sea, in
order, if possible, to put in for the winter at Phoenix,
a harbour of Crete, looking to the north-east and south-
east. And when the south wind came softly, being of 13
the opinion that their purpose might be effected, they
let the ship go and went sailing down the side of Crete,
very near to the land. But after a little time, a very 14
violent wind, named Euraquilo, came down from it with
great force. And when the ship got into the grip of it, 15
and was not able to make headway into the wind, we
gave way, and went before it. And sailing near the side 16
of a small island named Cauda, we were able, though it
was hard work, to make the ship's boat safe: and having 17
got it up, they put cords under and round the ship; but
fearing that they might be pushed on to the Syrtis, they
let down the sails and so went running before the wind.
And still fighting the storm with all our strength, the 18
day after they made a start at getting the goods out of
the ship; and on the third day, they let all the sailing 19
apparatus go over the side. And as we had not seen the 20
sun or stars for a long time, and a great storm was on us,
all hope of salvation was gone. And when they had been 21
without food for a long time, Paul got up among them
and said, "Friends, it would have been better if you had
given attention to me and not gone sailing out from
Crete, to undergo this damage and loss. But now, I say 22
to you, be of good heart, for there will be no loss of life,
but only of the ship. For this night there came to my 23

side an angel of the God who is my Master and whose servant I am, saying, 'Have no fear, Paul, for you will 24
come before Caesar, and God has given to you all those who are sailing with you'. And so, O men, be of good 25
heart, for I have faith in God that it will be as he said to me. But we will be sent on to a certain island." 26

But when the fourteenth day came, while we were going 27
here and there in the Adriatic sea, about the middle of the night the sailors had an idea that they were getting near land; and they let down the lead, and saw that the 28
sea was a hundred and twenty feet deep; and after a little time they did it again and it was ninety feet. Then 29
fearing that by chance we might come on to the rocks, they let down four hooks from the back of the ship, and made prayers for the coming of day. Then the sailors 30
made attempts secretly to get away from the ship, letting down a boat as if they were about to put down hooks from the front of the ship; but Paul said to the captain 31
and his men, "If you do not keep these men in the ship, you will not be safe". Then the armed men, cutting the 32
cords of the boat, let her go. And when dawn was near, 33
Paul gave them all orders to take food, saying, "This is the fourteenth day that you have been waiting and taking no food. So I make request to you to take food; 34
for this is for your salvation: not a hair from the head of any of you will come to destruction." And when he 35
had said this and had taken bread, he gave praise to God before them all, and took a meal of the broken bread. Then they all took heart and did the same. 36
And we were, in the ship, two hundred and seventy-six 37
souls. And when they had had enough food, they made 38
the weight of the ship less, turning the grain out into the sea. And when it was day, they had no knowledge 39
of the land, but they saw an inlet of the sea with a floor of sand, and they had the idea of driving the ship up on to it if possible. So cutting away the hooks, and letting 40
them go into the sea, and freeing the cords of the guiding-blades, and lifting up the sail to the wind, they

went in the direction of the inlet. And coming to a point 41
between two seas, they got the ship to land; and the
front part was fixed in the sand and not able to be moved,
but the back part was broken by the force of the waves.
Then the armed men were for putting the prisoners to 42
death, so that no one would get away by swimming.
But the captain, desiring to keep Paul safe, kept them 43
from their purpose, and gave orders that those who had
knowledge of swimming were to go off the ship and get
first to land: and the rest, some on boards and some on 44
things from the ship. And so it came about that they all
got safe to land.

SAFE AT MELITA

28 And when we were safe, we made the discovery that 1
the island was named Melita. And the simple 2
people living there were uncommonly kind to us,
for they made a fire for us, and took us in, because it
was raining and cold. But when Paul had got some sticks 3
together and put them on the fire, a snake came out,
because of the heat, and gave him a bite on the hand.
And when the people saw it hanging on his hand, they 4
said to one another, "Without doubt this man has put
someone to death, and though he has got safely away
from the sea, God will not let him go on living". But 5
shaking off the beast into the fire, he got no damage.
But they had the idea that they would see him becoming 6
ill, or suddenly falling down dead; but after waiting
a long time, and seeing that no damage came to him,
changing their opinion, they said he was a god.

Now near that place there was some land, the property 7
of the chief man of the island, who was named Publius;
who very kindly took us into his house as his guests
for three days. And the father of Publius was ill, with 8
a disease of the stomach; to whom Paul went, and put
his hands on him, with prayer, and made him well. And 9
when this took place, all the others in the island who

had diseases came and were made well. Then they gave 10
us great honour, and, when we went away, they put into
the ship whatever things we were in need of.

And after three months we went to sea in a ship of 11
Alexandria, sailing under the sign of the Dioscuri, which
had been at the island for the winter. And going into 12
the harbour at Syracuse, we were waiting there for
three days. And from there, going about in a curve, 13
we came to Rhegium: and after one day a south wind
came up and on the day after we came to Puteoli: where 14
we came across some of the brothers, who kept us with
them for seven days; and so we came to Rome. And the 15
brothers, when they had news of us, came out from town
as far as Appii Forum and the Three Taverns to have
a meeting with us: and Paul, seeing them, gave praise
to God and took heart.

TWO YEARS AT ROME

And when we came into Rome, they let Paul have 16
a house for himself and the armed man who kept watch
over him.

Then after three days he sent for the chief men of 17
the Jews: and when they had come together, he said to
them, "My brothers, though I had done nothing against
the people or the ways of our fathers, I was given,
a prisoner from Jerusalem, into the hands of the Romans.
Who, when they had put questions to me, were ready 18
to let me go free, because there was no cause of death
in me. But when the Jews made protest against it, I had 19
to put my cause into Caesar's hands; not because I have
anything to say against my nation. But for this reason 20
I sent for you, to see and have talk with you: for because
of the hope of Israel I am in these chains." And they 21
said to him, "We have not had letters from Judaea
about you, and no one of the brothers has come to us
here to give an account or say any evil about you. But 22
we have a desire to give hearing to your opinion: for

as to this form of religion, we have knowledge that in all places it is attacked."

And when a day had been fixed, they came to his 23
house in great numbers; and he gave them teaching, giving witness to the kingdom of God, and having discussions with them about Jesus, from the law of Moses and from the prophets, from morning till evening. And 24
some were in agreement with what he said, but some had doubts. And they went away, for there was a division 25
among them after Paul had said this one thing: "Well did the Holy Spirit say by the prophet Isaiah to your fathers,

Go to this people and say, 26
Though you give ear, you will not get knowledge;
And seeing, you will see, but the sense will not be clear to you:
For the heart of this people has become fat 27
And their ears are slow in hearing
And their eyes are shut;
For fear that they might see with their eyes,
And give hearing with their ears
And become wise in their hearts
And be turned again to me,
So that I might make them well.

Be certain, then, that the salvation of God is sent to 28
the Gentiles, and they will give hearing."

And for the space of two years, Paul was living in 30
the house of which he had the use, and had talk with all those who went in to see him, preaching the kingdom 31
of God and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ without fear, and no orders were given that he was not to do so.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE ROMANS

1 PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, an Apostle by the 1
selection of God, given authority as a preacher
of the good news, of which God had given word 2
before by his prophets in the holy Writings, about his 3
Son who, in the flesh, came from the family of David,
but was marked out as Son of God in power by the Holy 4
Spirit through the coming to life again of the dead;
Jesus Christ our Lord, through whom grace has been 5
given to us, sending us out to make disciples to the faith
among all nations, for his name: among whom you in the 6
same way have been marked out to be disciples of Jesus
Christ: to all those who are in Rome, loved by God, 7
marked out as saints: Grace to you and peace from God
our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

First of all, I give praise to my God through Jesus 8
Christ for you all, because news of your faith has gone
into all the world. For God is my witness, whose servant 9
I am in spirit in the good news of his Son, that you are
at all times in my memory and in my prayers, and that 10
I am ever making prayers that God will give me a good
journey to you. For I have a strong desire to see you, 11
and to give you some grace of the spirit, so that you
may be made strong; that is to say, that all of us may 12
be comforted together by the faith which is in you and
in me. You may be certain, my brothers, that it has 13
frequently been in my mind to come to you (but till now
I was kept from it), so that I might have some fruit from
you in the same way as I have had it from the other
nations. I have a debt to Greeks and to the nations 14
outside; to the wise and to those who have no learning.
For which reason I have the desire, as far as I am able, 15
to give the knowledge of the good news to you who are

in Rome. For I have no feeling of shame about the 16
good news, because it is the power of God giving
salvation to everyone who has faith, to the Jew first,
and then to the Greek. For in it there is the revelation 17
of the righteousness of God from faith to faith: as it
is said in the holy Writings, "The man who does
righteousness will be living by his faith".

THE WRONGDOINGS OF MEN

For there is a revelation of the wrath of God from 18
heaven against all the wrongdoing and evil thoughts
of men who keep down what is true by wrongdoing;
because the knowledge of God may be seen in them, 19
God having made it clear to them. For from the first 20
making of the world, those things of God which the eye
is unable to see, that is, his eternal power and existence,
are fully made clear, he having given the knowledge of
them through the things which he has made, so that
men have no reason for wrongdoing: because, having 21
the knowledge of God, they did not give glory to God
as God, and did not give praise, but their minds were
full of foolish things, and their hearts, being without
sense, were made dark. Seeming to be wise, they were 22
in fact foolish, and by them the glory of the eternal God 23
was changed and made into the image of man who is
not eternal, and birds, and beasts, and things which go
on the earth.

For this reason God gave them up to the evil desires 24
of their hearts, working shame in their bodies with one
another: because by them the true word of God was 25
changed into that which is false, and they gave worship
and honour to the thing which is made, and not to him
who made it, to whom be blessing for ever. So be it.

For this reason God gave them up to evil passions, 26
and their women were changing the natural use into one
which is unnatural: and in the same way the men gave 27
up the natural use of the woman and were burning in

their desire for one another, men doing shame with men, and getting in their bodies the right reward of their evil-doing.

And because they had not the mind to keep God in 28
their knowledge, God gave them up to an evil mind, to
do those things which are not right; being full of all 29
wrongdoing, evil, desire for the goods of others, hate,
envy, putting to death, fighting, deceit, cruel ways, evil
talk and false statements about others; hated by God, 30
full of pride, without respect, full of loud talk, given to
evil inventions, not honouring father or mother, with- 31
out knowledge, not true to their undertakings, unkind,
having no mercy: who, though they have knowledge of 32
the law of God, that the fate of those who do these things
is death, not only go on doing these things themselves,
but give approval to those who do them.

DOERS, NOT HEARERS

2 So you have no reason, whoever you are, for judging: 1
for in judging another you are judging yourself, for
you do the same things. And we are conscious that 2
God is a true judge against those who do such things.
But you who are judging another for doing what you 3
do yourself, are you hoping that God's decision will not
take effect against you? Or is it nothing to you that God 4
had pity on you, waiting and putting up with you for so
long, not seeing that in his pity God's desire is to give
you a change of heart? But by your hard and unchanged 5
heart you are storing up wrath for yourself in the day
of the revelation of God's judging in righteousness; who 6
will give to every man his right reward: to those who 7
go on with good works in the hope of glory and honour
and salvation from death, he will give eternal life: but 8
to those who, from a love of competition, are not guided
by what is true, will come the heat of his wrath, trouble 9
and sorrow on all whose works are evil, to the Jew first
and then to the Greek; but glory and honour and peace 10

to all whose works are good, to the Jew first and then
to the Greek: for one man is not different from another 11
before God. All those who have done wrong without 12
the law will get destruction without the law: and those
who have done wrong under the law will have their
punishment by the law; for it is not the hearers of the 13
law who will be judged as having righteousness before
God, but only the doers: for when the Gentiles without 14
the law have a natural desire to do the things in the law,
they are a law to themselves; because the work of the 15
law is seen in their hearts, their sense of right and wrong
giving witness to it, while their minds are at one time
judging them and at another giving them approval; in 16
the day when God will be a judge of the secrets of men,
as it says in the good news of which I am a preacher,
through Jesus Christ.

But as for you who have the name of Jew, and are 17
resting on the law, and take pride in God, and have 18
knowledge of his desires, and are a judge of the things
which are different, having the learning of the law, in 19
the belief that you are a guide to the blind, a light to
those in the dark, a teacher of the foolish, having in the 20
law the form of knowledge and of what is true; you who 21
give teaching to others, do you give it to yourself? you
who say that a man may not take what is not his, do
you do it yourself? You who say that a man may not 22
be untrue to his wife, are you true to yours? you who
are a hater of images, do you do wrong to the house of
God? You who take pride in the law, are you doing 23
wrong to the honour of God by behaviour which is
against the law? For the name of God is shamed among 24
the Gentiles because of you, as it is said in the holy
Writings. It is true that circumcision is of use if you 25
keep the law, but if you go against the law it is as if you
had it not. If those who have not circumcision keep 26
the rules of the law, will it not be credited to them as
circumcision? And they, by their keeping of the law 27
without circumcision, will be judges of you, by whom

the law is broken though you have the letter of the law
and circumcision. The true Jew is not one who is only 28
so publicly, and circumcision is not that which may be
seen in the flesh: but he is a Jew who is a secret one, 29
whose circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit and not
in the letter; whose praise is not from men, but from
God.

JEWS AND GENTILES

3 How then is the Jew better off? or what profit is 1
there in circumcision? Much in every way: first 2
of all because the words of God were given to
them. And if some have no faith, will that make the 3
faith of God of no effect? In no way: but let God be 4
true, though every man is seen to be untrue; as it is
said in the Writings,

That your words may be seen to be true,
And you may be seen to be right when you are judged.

But if the righteousness of God is supported by our 5
wrongdoing what is to be said? Is it wrong for God to
be angry (as men may say)? In no way: because if it is 6
so, how is God able to be the judge of all the world?
But if, because I am untrue, God being seen to be true 7
gets more glory, why am I to be judged as a sinner?
Let us not do evil so that good may come (a statement 8
which we are falsely said by some to have made), because
such behaviour will have its right punishment.

What then? are we worse off than they? In no way: 9
because we have before made it clear that Jews as well
as Greeks are all under the power of sin; as is said in the 10
holy Writings,

There is not one who does righteousness;
Not one who has the knowledge of what is right, 11
Not one who is a searcher after God;
They have all gone out of the way, there is no profit 12
in any of them;

There is not one who does good, not so much as one:
Their throat is like an open place of death; 13
With their tongues they have said what is not true:
The poison of snakes is under their lips:
Whose mouth is full of curses and bitter words: 14
Their feet are quick in running after blood; 15
Destruction and trouble are in their ways; 16
And of the way of peace they have no knowledge: 17
There is no fear of God before their eyes. 18

Now, we have knowledge that what the law says is 19
for those who are under the law, so that every mouth
may be stopped, and all men may be judged by God:
because by the works of the law no man is able to have 20
righteousness in his eyes, for through the law comes the
knowledge of sin. But now without the law there is a 21
revelation of the righteousness of God, to which wit-
ness is given by the law and the prophets; that is, the 22
righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ, to
all those who have faith; and one man is not different
from another, for all have done wrong and are far from 23
the glory of God; and they may have righteousness put 24
to their credit, freely, by his grace, through the salvation
which is in Christ Jesus: whom God has put forward as 25
the sign of his mercy, through faith, by his blood, to
make clear his righteousness when, in his pity, God let
the sins of earlier times go without punishment; and to 26
make clear his righteousness now, so that he might
himself be upright, and give righteousness to him who
has faith in Jesus. What reason, then, is there for pride? 27
It is shut out. By what sort of law? of works? No, but
by a law of faith. For this reason, then, a man may get 28
righteousness by faith without the works of the law.
Or is God the God of Jews only? is he not in the same 29
way the God of Gentiles? Yes, of Gentiles: if God is 30
one; and he will give righteousness because of faith to
those who have circumcision, and through faith to those
who have not circumcision. Do we, then, through faith 31

make the law of no effect? in no way: but we make it clear that the law is important.

THE FAITH OF ABRAHAM

4 WHAT, then, may we say that Abraham, our father after the flesh, has got? For if Abraham got righteousness by works, he has reason for pride; but not before God. But what does it say in the holy Writings? "And Abraham had faith in God, and it was put to his account as righteousness". Now, the reward is credited to him who does works, not as of grace but as a debt. But to him who without working has faith in him who gives righteousness to the evil-doer, his faith is put to his account as righteousness. As David says that there is a blessing on the man to whose account God puts righteousness without works, saying,

1 2 3 4 5 6

> Happy are those who have forgiveness for their wrong- [doing, 7
> And whose sins are covered.
> Happy is the man against whom no sin is recorded by the Lord. 8

Is this blessing, then, for the circumcision only, or in the same way for those who have not circumcision? for we say that the faith of Abraham was put to his account as righteousness. How, then, was it judged? when he had circumcision, or when he had it not? Not when he had it, but when he did not have it: and he was given the sign of circumcision as a witness of the faith which he had before he got circumcision: so that he might be the father of all those who have faith, though they have not circumcision, and so that righteousness might be put to their account; and the father of circumcision to those who not only are of the circumcision, but who keep to the way of that faith which our father Abraham had before he got circumcision. For God's word, that the earth would be his heritage, was given to Abraham, not through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

9 10 11 12 13

For if they who are of the law are the people who get 14
the heritage, then faith is made of no use, and the word
of God has no power; for the outcome of the law is 15
wrath; but where there is no law it will not be broken.
For this reason it is of faith, so that it may be through 16
grace; and so that the word of God may be certain to all
the seed; not only to that which is of the law, but to that
which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of
us all, (as it is said in the holy Writings, "I have made 17
you a father of a number of nations") before him in
whom he had faith, that is, God, who gives life to the
dead, and to whom the things which are not are as if
they were. Who without reason for hope, in faith went 18
on hoping, so that he became the father of a number of
nations, as it had been said, "So will your seed be".
And not being feeble in faith though his body seemed 19
to him little better than dead (he being about a hundred
years old) and Sarah was no longer able to have children:
still, he did not give up faith in the undertaking of God, 20
but was made strong by faith, giving glory to God, and 21
being certain that God was able to keep his word. For 22
which reason it was put to his account as righteousness.
Now, it was not because of him only that this was said, 23
but for us in addition, to whose account it will be put, 24
if we have faith in him who made Jesus our Lord come
back again from the dead, who was put to death for our 25
evil-doing, and came to life again so that we might have
righteousness.

RIGHTEOUSNESS THROUGH FAITH

5 FOR which reason, because we have righteousness 1
through faith, let us be at peace with God through
our Lord Jesus Christ; through whom, in the same 2
way, we have been able by faith to come to this grace
in which we now are; and let us have joy in hope of the
glory of God. And not only so, but let us have joy in 3
our troubles: in the knowledge that trouble gives us the

power of waiting; and waiting gives experience; and 4
experience, hope: and hope does not put to shame; 5
because our hearts are full of the love of God through
the Holy Spirit which is given to us. For when we were 6
still without strength, at the right time Christ gave his
life for evil-doers. Now it is hard for anyone to give 7
his life even for an upright man, though it might be that
for a good man someone would give his life. But God 8
has made clear his love to us, in that, when we were still
sinners, Christ gave his life for us. Much more, if we 9
now have righteousness by his blood, will salvation from
the wrath of God come to us through him. For if, when 10
we were haters of God, the death of his Son made us at
peace with him, much more, now that we are his friends,
will we have salvation through his life; and not only so, 11
but we have joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ,
through whom we are now at peace with God.

For this reason, as through one man sin came into 12
existence, and death because of sin, and so death came
to all men, because all have done evil: because, till the 13
law came, sin was in existence, but sin is not put to the
account of anyone when there is no law to be broken.
But still death had power from Adam till Moses, even 14
over those who had not done wrong like Adam, who is
a picture of him who was to come. But the free-giving 15
of God is not like the wrongdoing of man. For if, by
the wrongdoing of one man death came to numbers of
men, much more did the grace of God, and the free-giving
by the grace of one man, Jesus Christ, come to men.
And the free-giving has not the same effect as the sin 16
of one: for the effect of one man's sin was punishment
by the decision of God, but the free-giving had power
to give righteousness to wrongdoers in great number.
For, if by the wrongdoing of one, death was ruling 17
through the one, much more will those to whom has
come the wealth of grace and the giving of righteous-
ness, be ruling in life through the one, even Jesus Christ.
So then, as the effect of one act of wrongdoing was that 18

punishment came on all men, even so the effect of one act of righteousness was righteousness of life for all men. Because, as numbers of men became sinners 19
through the wrongdoing of one man, even so will great numbers get righteousness through the keeping of the word of God by one man. And the law came in addition, 20
to make wrongdoing worse; but where there was much sin, there was much more grace: that, as sin had power 21
in death, so grace might have power through righteousness to eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

LIVING TO GOD IN CHRIST

6 WHAT may we say, then? Are we to go on in 1
sin so that there may be more grace? In no 2
way. How may we, who are dead to sin, be living in it any longer? Or are you without the know- 3
ledge that all we who had baptism into Christ Jesus, had baptism into his death? We have been placed with 4
him among the dead through baptism into death: so that as Christ came again from the dead by the glory of the Father, we, in the same way, might be living in new life. For, if we have been made like him in his death, 5
we will, in the same way, be like him in his coming to life again; being conscious that our old man was put to 6
death on the cross with him, so that the body of sin might be put away, and we might no longer be servants to sin. Because he who is dead is free from sin. 7
But if we are dead with Christ, we have faith that we 8
will be living with him; having knowledge that because 9
Christ has come back from the dead, he will never again go down to the dead; death has no more power over him. For his death was a death to sin, but his life now 10
is a life which he is living to God. Even so see yourselves 11
as dead to sin, but living to God in Christ Jesus.

For this cause let not sin be ruling in your body which 12
is under the power of death, so that you give way to its desires; and do not give your bodies to sin as the 13

instruments of wrongdoing, but give yourselves to God,
as those who are living from the dead, and your bodies
as instruments of righteousness to God. For sin may 14
not have rule over you: because you are not under law,
but under grace.

What then? are we to go on in sin because we are 15
not under law but under grace? Let it not be so. Are 16
you not conscious that you are the servants of him to
whom you give yourselves to do his desire; if to sin,
the end being death, or if to do the desire of God, the
end being righteousness? But praise be to God that 17
though you were the servants of sin, you have now given
yourselves freely to that form of teaching under which
you were placed; and being made free from sin you have 18
been made the servants of righteousness. I am using 19
words in the way of men, because your flesh is feeble:
as you gave your bodies as servants to what is unclean,
and to evil to do evil, so now give them as servants
to righteousness to do what is holy. When you were 20
servants of sin you were free from righteousness. What 21
fruit had you at that time in the things which are now
a shame to you? for the end of such things is death. But 22
now, being free from sin, and having been made servants
to God, you have your fruit in that which is holy, and
the end is eternal life. For the reward of sin is death; 23
but what God freely gives is eternal life in Jesus Christ
our Lord.

7 Is it not clear, my brothers (I am using an argument 1
to those who have knowledge of the law), that the
law has power over a man as long as he is living?
For the woman who has a husband is placed by the law 2
under the power of her husband as long as he is living;
but if her husband is dead, she is free from the law of the
husband. So if, while the husband is living, she is joined 3
to another man, she will get the name of one who is
untrue to her husband: but if the husband is dead, she
is free from the law, so that she is not untrue, even if

she takes another man. In the same way, my brothers, 4
you were made dead to the law through the body of
Christ, so that you might be joined to another, even to
him who came again from the dead, so that we might
give fruit to God. For when we were in the flesh, the 5
evil passions which came into being through the law
were working in our bodies to give the fruit of death.
But now we are free from the law, having been made 6
dead to that which had power over us; so that we are
servants in the new way of the spirit, not in the old way
of the letter.

THE LAW OF GOD AND THE LAW OF SIN

What then is to be said? Is the law sin? in no way. 7
But I would not have had knowledge of sin but for the
law: for I would not have been conscious of desire if
the law had not said, "You may not have a desire for
what is another's" But sin, taking its chance through 8
that which was ordered by the law, was working in me
every form of desire: because without the law sin is
dead. And there was a time when I was living without 9
the law: but when the law gave its orders, sin came to
life and put me to death; and I made the discovery that 10
the law whose purpose was to give life had become a
cause of death: for I was tricked and put to death by sin, 11
which took its chance through the law. But the law is 12
holy, and its orders are holy, upright and good. Was 13
then that which is good, death to me? in no way. But
the purpose was that sin might be seen to be sin by
working death to me through that which is good; so
that through the orders of the law sin might seem much
more evil. For we are conscious that the law is of the 14
spirit; but I am of the flesh, given into the power of sin.
And I have no clear knowledge of what I am doing, for 15
that which I have a mind to dŏ, I do not, but what I have
hate for, that I do. But, if I do that which I have no 16
mind to do, I am in agreement with the law that it is

good. So it is no longer I who do it, but the sin living 17
in me. For I am conscious that in me, that is, in my 18
flesh, there is nothing good: I have the mind but not
the power to do what is right. For the good which I 19
have a mind to do, I do not: but the evil which I have
no mind to do, that I do. But if I do what I have no 20
mind to do, it is no longer I who do it, but the sin living
in me. So I see a law that, though I have a mind to do 21
good, evil is present in me. In my heart I take pleasure 22
in the law of God, but I see another law in my body, 23
working against the law of my mind, and making me
the servant of the law of sin which is in my flesh. How 24
unhappy am I! who will make me free from the body of
this death? I give praise to God through Jesus Christ 25
our Lord. So with my mind I am a servant to the law
of God, but with my flesh to the law of sin.

THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST

8 FOR this cause those who are in Christ Jesus will not 1
be judged as sinners. For the law of the spirit of 2
life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law
of sin and death. For what the law was not able to do 3
because it was feeble through the flesh, God, sending
his Son in the image of the evil flesh, and as an offering
for sin, gave his decision against sin in the flesh: so that 4
what was ordered by the law might be done in us, who
are living, not in the way of the flesh, but in the way of
the spirit. For those who are living in the way of the 5
flesh give their minds to the things of the flesh, but those
who go in the way of the spirit, to the things of the
spirit. For the mind of the flesh is death, but the mind 6
of the spirit is life and peace: because the mind of the 7
flesh is opposite to God; it is not under the law of God,
and is not able to be: so that those who are in the flesh 8
are not able to give pleasure to God. You are not in the 9
flesh but in the spirit, if the spirit of God is in you. But
if any man has not the spirit of Christ he is not one of

his. And if Christ is in you, the body is dead because 10
of sin, but the spirit is life because of righteousness.
But if the spirit of him who made Jesus come again from 11
the dead is in you, he who made Christ Jesus come again
from the dead will in the same way, through his spirit
which is in you, give life to your bodies which now are
under the power of death.

So then, my brothers, we are in debt, not to the flesh 12
to be living in the way of the flesh: for if you go in the 13
way of the flesh, death will come on you; but if by the
spirit you put to death the works of the body, you will
have life. And all those who are guided by the Spirit of 14
God are sons of God. For you did not get the spirit of 15
servants again to put you in fear, but the spirit of sons
was given to you, by which we say, "*Abba*, Father".
The Spirit is witness with our spirit that we are children 16
of God: and if we are children, we have a right to a part 17
in the heritage; a part in the things of God, together
with Christ; so that if we have a part in his pain, we
will in the same way have a part in his glory.

I am of the opinion that there is no comparison 18
between the pain of this present time and the glory
which we will see in the future. For the strong desire 19
of all things which are made is waiting for the revelation
of the sons of God. For everything which is made was 20
put under the power of change, not by its desire, but by
him who made it so, in hope that all things will be made 21
free from the power of death and will have a part with
the free children of God in glory. For we are conscious 22
that all things are weeping and sorrowing in pain
together till now. And not only so, but we who have 23
the first fruits of the Spirit, even we have sorrow in our
minds, waiting for the time when we will take our place
as sons, that is, the salvation of our bodies. For our 24
salvation is by hope: but hope which is seen is not hope:
for who is hoping for what he sees? But if we have hope 25
for that which we see not, then we will be able to go on
waiting for it.

And in the same way the Spirit is a help to our feeble 26
hearts: for we are not able to make prayer to God in the
right way; but the Spirit puts our desires into words
which are not in our power to say; and he who is the 27
searcher of hearts has knowledge of the mind of the
Spirit, because he is making prayers for the saints in
agreement with the mind of God. And we are conscious 28
that all things are working together for good to those
who have love for God, and have been marked out by
his purpose. Because those of whom he had knowledge 29
before they came into existence, were marked out by
him to be made like his Son, so that he might be the first
among a band of brothers: and those who were marked 30
out by him were named; and those who were named
were given righteousness; and to those to whom he gave
righteousness, in the same way he gave glory.

What may we say about these things? If God is for 31
us, who is against us? He who did not keep back his 32
only Son, but gave him up for us all, will he not with him
freely give us all things? Who will say anything against 33
the saints of God? It is God who makes us clear from
evil; who will give a decision against us? It is Christ 34
Jesus who not only was put to death, but came again
from the dead, who is now at the right hand of God,
taking our part. Who will come between us and the 35
love of Christ? Will trouble, or pain, or cruel acts, or
the need of food, or of clothing, or danger, or the sword?
As it is said in the holy Writings, 36

Because of you we are put to death every day;
We are like sheep ready for destruction.

But we are able to overcome all these things and more 37
through his love. For I am certain that not death, or 38
life, or angels, or rulers, or things present, or things to
come, or powers, or things on high, or things under the 39
earth, or anything which is made, will be able to come
between us and the love of God which is in Christ Jesus
our Lord.

9 I SAY what is true in Christ, and not what is false, my 1
mind giving witness with me in the Holy Spirit, that 2
I am full of sorrow and pain without end. For I have 3
a desire to take on myself the curse for my brothers, my
family in the flesh: who are Israelites: who have the 4
place of sons, and the glory, and the agreements with
God, and the giving of the law, and the worship, and
the hope offered by God; whose are the fathers, and of 5
whom came Christ in the flesh, who is over all, God, to
whom be blessing for ever. So be it. But it is not as if 6
the word of God was of no effect. For they are not all
Israel, who are of Israel: and they are not all children 7
because they are the seed of Abraham; but, "In Isaac
will your seed be named". That is, it is not the children 8
of the flesh, but the children of God's undertaking who
are named as the seed. For this is the word of God's 9
undertaking, "At this time will I come, and Sarah will
have a son". And not only so, but Rebecca being about 10
to have a child by our father Isaac—before the children 11
had come into existence, or had done anything good or
bad, in order that God's purpose and his selection might
be effected, not by works, but by him whose purpose it is,
it was said to her, "The older will be the servant of the 12
younger". Even as it is said, "I had love for Jacob, 13
but for Esau I had hate".

What may we say then? Is God not upright? Let it 14
not be said. For he says to Moses, "I will have mercy 15
on whom I will have mercy, and pity on whom I will
have pity". So then, it is not by the desire or by the 16
attempt of man, but by the mercy of God. For the holy 17
Writings say to Pharaoh, "For this same purpose did
I put you on high, so that I might make my power seen
in you, and that there might be knowledge of my name
through all the earth". So then, at his pleasure he has 18
mercy on a man, and at his pleasure he makes the heart
hard.

But you will say to me, "Why does he still make us 19
responsible? Who is able to go against his purpose?"
But, O man, who are you, to make answer against God? 20
May the thing which is made say to him who made it,
"Why did you make me so?" Or has not the potter 21
the right to make out of one part of his earth a vessel for
honour, and out of another a vessel for shame? What 22
if God, desiring to let his wrath and his power be seen,
for a long time put up with the vessels of wrath which
were ready for destruction: and that he might make 23
clear the wealth of his glory to vessels of mercy, which
he had before made ready for glory, even us, who were 24
marked out by him, not only from the Jews, but from
the Gentiles? As he says in Hosea, 25

They will be named my people who were not my people,
And she will be loved who was not loved.
And in the place where it was said to them, 'You are 26
not my people,'
There they will be named the sons of the living God.

And Isaiah says about Israel, "Even if the number of 27
the children of Israel is as the sand of the sea, only a
small part will get salvation: for the Lord will give effect 28
to his word on the earth, putting an end to it and cutting
it short". And, as Isaiah had said before, 29

If the Lord of armies had not given us a seed,
We would have been like Sodom and Gomorrah.

What then may we say? That the nations who did 30
not go after righteousness have got righteousness, even
the righteousness which is of faith: but Israel, going 31
after a law of righteousness, did not get it. Why? 32
Because they were not searching for it by faith, but by
works. They came up against the stone which was in
the way; as it is said, 33

See, I am putting in Zion a stone causing a fall, and
a rock in the way:
But he who has faith in him will not be put to shame.

10 BROTHERS, my heart's desire and my prayer to God 1
for them is, that they may get salvation. For I give 2
witness of them that they have a strong desire
for God, but not with knowledge. Because, not having 3
knowledge of God's righteousness, and desiring to give
effect to their righteousness, they have not put them-
selves under the righteousness of God. For Christ is the 4
end of the law for righteousness to everyone who has
faith. For Moses says that the man who does the 5
righteousness which is of the law will get life by it.
But the righteousness which is of faith says these words, 6
"Say not in your heart, 'Who will go up to heaven?'
(that is, to make Christ come down:) or, 'Who will go 7
down into the deep?' (that is, to make Christ come again
from the dead:)" but what does it say? "The word is 8
near you, in your mouth and in your heart": that is, the
word of faith of which we are the preachers: because, if 9
you say with your mouth that Jesus is Lord, and have
faith in your heart that God has made him come back
from the dead, you will have salvation: for with the 10
heart man has faith to get righteousness, and with the
mouth he says that Jesus is Lord to get salvation.
Because it is said in the holy Writings, "Whoever has 11
faith in him will not be shamed". And the Jew is not 12
different from the Greek: for there is the same Lord of
all, who is good to all who have hope in his name:
because, "Whoever will give worship to the name of 13
the Lord will get salvation". But how will they give 14
worship to him in whom they have no faith? and how
will they have faith in him of whom they have not had
news? and how will they have news without a preacher?
And how will there be preachers if they are not sent? 15
as it is said, "How beautiful are the feet of those who
give the glad news of good things".

But they have not all given ear to the good news. For 16
Isaiah says, "Lord, who has had faith in our word?"

So faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of 17
Christ. But I say, Did not the word come to their ears? 18
Yes, certainly:

Their sound has gone out into all the earth,
And their words to the ends of the world.

But I say, Had Israel no knowledge? First Moses says, 19

You will be moved to envy by that which is not a nation,
And by a foolish people I will make you angry.

And Isaiah says without fear, 20

Those who were not searching for me made discovery of me;
And I was seen by those whose hearts were turned away from me.

But about Israel he says, "All the day my hands have 21
been stretched out to a people whose hearts were turned away, and who put themselves against my word".

11 So I say, Has God put his people on one side? Let 1
there be no such thought. For I am of Israel, of the
seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God has 2
not put away the people of his selection. Or have you no knowledge of what is said about Elijah in the holy Writings? how he says words to God against Israel,
"Lord, they have put your prophets to death, and made 3
waste your altars, and now I am the last, and they are searching for me to take away my life". But what 4
answer does God make to him? "I have still seven thousand men whose knees have not been bent to Baal."
In the same way, there are at this present time some 5
who are marked out by the selection of grace. But if it 6
is of grace, then it is no longer of works: or grace would not be grace. What then? That which Israel was 7
searching for he did not get, but those of the selection got it and the rest were made hard. As it was said in 8

the holy Writings, "God gave them a spirit of sleep,
eyes which might not see, and ears which have no
hearing," to this day. And David says, 9

Let their table be made a net for taking them,
And a stone in their way, and a punishment:
Let their eyes be made dark so that they may not see, 10
And let their back be bent down at all times.

So I say, Were their steps made hard in order that they 11
might have a fall? In no way: but by their fall salvation
has come to the Gentiles, so that they might be moved
to envy. Now, if their fall is the wealth of the world, 12
and their loss the wealth of the Gentiles, how much
greater will be the glory when they are made full?

THE APOSTLE OF THE GENTILES

But I say to you, Gentiles, in so far as I am the 13
Apostle of the Gentiles, I make much of my position:
if in any way those who are of my flesh may be moved 14
to envy, so that some of them may get salvation by me.
For, if by their putting away, the rest of men have been 15
made friends with God, what will their coming back
again be, but life from the dead? And if the first fruit 16
is holy, so is the mass: and if the root is holy, so are the
branches. But if some of the branches were broken off, 17
and you, an olive-tree of the fields, were put in among
them, and were given a part with them in the root by
which the olive-tree is made fertile; do not be uplifted 18
in pride over the branches: because it is not you who are
the support of the root, but it is by the root that you are
supported. You will say, "Branches were broken off so 19
that I might be put in". Truly, because they had no 20
faith they were broken off, and you have your place by
reason of your faith. Do not be high-minded, but have
fear; for, if God did not have mercy on the natural 21
branches, he will not have mercy on you. See then that 22
God is good, but his rules are fixed: to those who were

put away he was hard, but to you he has been good, on the condition that you keep in his mercy; if not, you will be cut off as they were. And they, if they do not go on 23
without faith, will be united to the tree again, because God is able to put them in again. For if you were cut 24
out of a field olive-tree, and against the natural use were united to a good olive-tree, how much more will these, the natural branches, be united again with the olive-tree which was theirs?

For it is my desire, brothers, that this secret may be 25
clear to you, so that you may not have pride in your knowledge, that Israel has been made hard in part, till all the Gentiles have come in; and so all Israel will get 26
salvation: as it is said in the holy Writings,

> There will come out of Zion the One who makes free;
> By him wrongdoing will be taken away from Jacob:
> And this is my agreement with them, 27
> When I will take away their sins.

As far as the good news is in question, they are cut off 28
from God on account of you, but as far as the selection is in question, they are loved on account of the fathers. Because God's selection and his mercies may not be 29
changed. For as you, in time past, were not under the 30
rule of God, but now have got mercy through their turning away, so in the same way these have gone 31
against the orders of God, so that by the mercy given to you they may now get mercy. For God has let them 32
all go against his orders, so that he might have mercy on them all.

O how deep is the wealth of the wisdom and know- 33
ledge of God! no one is able to make discovery of his decisions, and his ways may not be searched out. Who 34
has knowledge of the mind of the Lord? or who has taken part in his purposes? Or who has first given to 35
him, and it will be given back to him again? For of him, 36
and through him, and to him, are all things. To him be the glory for ever. So be it.

12 FOR this reason I make request to you, brothers, by 1
the mercies of God, that you will give your bodies
as a living offering, holy, pleasing to God, which is
the worship it is right for you to give him. And let not 2
your behaviour be like that of this world, but be changed
and made new in mind, so that by experience you may
have knowledge of the good and pleasing and complete
purpose of God.

LOVE AND KINDNESS

But I say to every one of you, through the grace given 3
to me, not to have an over-high opinion of himself, but
to have wise thoughts, as God has given to every one
a measure of faith. For, as we have a number of parts 4
in one body, but all the parts have not the same use,
so we, though we are a number of persons, are one body 5
in Christ, and are dependent on one another; and having 6
different qualities by reason of the grace given to us,
such as the quality of a prophet, let it be made use of in
relation to the measure of our faith; or the position of 7
a Deacon of the church, let a man give himself to it; or
he who has the power of teaching, let him make use of
it; he who has the power of comforting, let him do so; 8
he who gives, let him give freely; he who has the power
of ruling, let him do it with a serious mind; he who has
mercy on others, let it be with joy. Let love be without 9
deceit. Be haters of what is evil; keep your minds fixed
on what is good. Be kind to one another with a brother's 10
love, putting others before yourselves in honour; be not 11
slow in your work, but be quick in spirit, as the Lord's
servants; being glad in hope; quiet in trouble; at all 12
times given to prayer; giving to the needs of the saints; 13
ready to take people into your houses. Give blessing 14
and not curses to those who are cruel to you. Take part 15
in the joy of those who are glad, and in the grief of those
who are sorrowing. Be in agreement with one another. 16
Do not have high thoughts, but keep company with those

of low position. Do not have a high opinion of yourselves. Do not give evil for evil to any man. Let all 17
your business be well ordered in the eyes of all men.
As far as is possible for you, be at peace with all men. 18
Do not give punishment for wrongs done to you, dear 19
brothers, but give way to the wrath of God; for it is said
in the holy Writings, "Punishment is mine, I will give
reward, says the Lord". But if one who has hate for 20
you is in need of food, or of drink, give it to him, for in
so doing you will put coals of fire on his head. Do not 21
let evil overcome you, but overcome evil by good.

THE HIGHER POWERS

13 LET everyone put himself under the authority of the 1
higher powers, because there is no power which
is not of God, and all powers are ordered by God.
For which reason everyone who puts himself against the 2
authority puts himself against the order of God: and those
who are against it will get punishment for themselves.
For rulers are not a cause of fear to the good work but 3
to the evil. If you would have no fear of the authority,
do good and you will have praise; for he is the servant 4
of God to you for good. But if you do evil, have
fear; for the sword is not in his hand for nothing: he is
God's servant, making God's punishment come on the
evil-doer. So put yourselves under the authority, not 5
for fear of wrath, but because you have the knowledge
of what is right. For the same reason, make payment of 6
taxes; because the authority is God's servant, to take
care of such things at all times. Give to all what is 7
their right: taxes to him whose they are, payment to
him whose right it is, fear to whom fear, honour to
whom honour is to be given.

Be in debt for nothing, but to have love for one 8
another: for he who has love for his neighbour has kept
all the law. And this, "Do not be untrue in married 9
life, Do not put to death, Do not take what is another's,

Do not have desire for what is another's," and if there is any other order, it is covered by this word, "Have love for your neighbour as for yourself". Love does no wrong to his neighbour: so love makes the law complete.

See then that the time has come for you to be awake from sleep: for now is your salvation nearer than when you first had faith. The night is far gone, and the day is near: so let us put off the works of the dark, arming ourselves with light; with right behaviour as in the day; not in pleasure-making and drinking, not in bad company and unclean behaviour, not in fighting and envy. But put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and do not take thought for the flesh to do its desires.

14 Do not put on one side him who is feeble in faith, and do not put him in doubt by your reasonings. One man has faith to take all things as food: another who is feeble in faith takes only green food. Let not him who takes food have a low opinion of him who does not: and let not him who does not take food be a judge of him who does; for he has God's approval. Who are you to make yourself a judge of another man's servant? it is to his master that he is responsible for good or bad. Yes, his place will be safe, because the Lord is able to keep him from falling. This man puts one day before another: to that man they are the same. Let every man be certain in his mind. He who keeps the day, keeps it to the Lord: and he who takes food, takes it as to the Lord, for he gives praise to God; and he who does not take food, to the Lord he takes it not, and gives praise to God. For every man's life and every man's death has a relation to others as well as to himself. As long as we have life we are living to the Lord; or if we give up our life it is to the Lord; so if we are living, or if our life comes to an end, we are the Lord's. And for this purpose Christ went into death and came back again, that he might be the Lord of the dead and of the living. But you, why do you make yourself your brother's judge?

or again, why have you no respect for your brother? because we will all have to take our place before God as our judge. For it is said in the holy Writings, 11

By my life, says the Lord, to me every knee will be bent,
And every tongue will give worship to God.

So every one of us will have to give an account of himself 12 to God.

NOTHING UNCLEAN IN ITSELF

Then let us not be judges of one another any longer: 13 but keep this in mind, that no man is to make it hard for his brother, or give him cause for doubting. I am 14 conscious of this, and am certain in the Lord Jesus, that nothing is unclean in itself; but for the man in whose opinion it is unclean, for him it is unclean. And if 15 because of food your brother is troubled, then you are no longer going on in the way of love. Do not let your food be destruction to him for whom Christ went into death. Let it not be possible for men to say evil about 16 your good: for the kingdom of God is not food and drink, 17 but righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. And he who in these things is Christ's servant, is 18 pleasing to God and has the approval of men. So then, 19 let us go after the things which make peace, and the things by which we may be a help to one another. Do 20 not let the work of God come to nothing on account of food. All things are certainly clean; but it is evil for that man who by taking food makes it hard for another. It is better not to take meat, or wine, or to do anything 21 which might be a cause of trouble to your brother. The 22 faith which you have, have it to yourself before God. Happy is the man who is not judged by that to which he gives approval. But he who is in doubt is judged if he 23 takes food, because he does it not in faith; and whatever is not of faith is sin.

"TAKE ONE ANOTHER TO YOUR HEARTS"

15 WE who are strong have to be a support to the 1
feeble, and not give pleasure to ourselves. Let 2
every one of us give pleasure to his neighbour
for his good, to make him strong. For Christ did not 3
give pleasure to himself, but, as it is said, "The bitter
words of those who were angry with you came on me".
Now those things which were put down in writing 4
before our time were for our learning, so that through
quiet waiting and through the comfort of the holy
Writings we might have hope. Now may the God who 5
gives comfort and strength in waiting make you of the
same mind with one another in harmony with Christ
Jesus: so that with one mouth you may give glory to 6
the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. So then, 7
take one another to your hearts, as Christ took us, to
the glory of God. Now I say that Christ has been made 8
a servant of the circumcision to give effect to the under-
takings given by God to the fathers, and so that the 9
Gentiles might give glory to God for his mercy; as it is
said,

For this reason I will give praise to you among the
Gentiles,
And I will make a song to your name.

And again he says, 10

Take part, you Gentiles, in the joy of his people.

And again, 11

Give praise to the Lord, all you Gentiles;
And let all the nations give praise to him.

And again Isaiah says, 12

There will be the root of Jesse,
And he who comes to be the ruler over the Gentiles;
In him will the Gentiles put their hope.

Now may the God of hope make you full of joy and 13

peace through faith, so that all hope may be yours in the power of the Holy Spirit.

And I myself am certain of you, brothers, that you 14
are full of what is good, complete in all knowledge, able
to give direction to one another. But I have, in some 15
measure, less fear in writing to you to put these things
before you again, because of the grace which was given
to me by God, to be a servant of Christ Jesus to the 16
Gentiles, doing the work of a priest in the good news
of God, so that the offering of the Gentiles might be
pleasing to God, being made holy by the Holy Spirit.
So I have pride in Christ Jesus in the things which are 17
God's. And I will keep myself from talking of anything 18
but those things which Christ has done by me to put the
Gentiles under his rule in word and in act, by signs and 19
wonders, in the power of the Holy Spirit; so that from
Jerusalem and round about as far as Illyricum I have
given all the good news of Christ; making it my purpose 20
not to take the good news where Christ was named, so
that my work might not be resting on that of others;
but as it is said in the holy Writings, 21

They will see, to whom the news of him had not been
given, [knowledge.
And those to whose ears it had not come will have

For which reason I was frequently kept from coming to 22
you: but now, having no longer any place in these parts 23
and having had for a number of years a great desire to
come to you, whenever I go to Spain (for it is my hope 24
to see you on my way, and to be sent on there by you,
if first I may in some measure have been comforted by
your company)—but now I go to Jerusalem, taking help 25
for the saints. For it has been the good pleasure of those 26
of Macedonia and Achaia to send a certain amount of
money for the poor among the saints at Jerusalem. Yes, 27
it has been their good pleasure; and they are in their
debt. For if the Gentiles have had a part in the things
of the Spirit which were theirs, it is right for them, in

the same way, to give them help in the things of the flesh. So when I have done this, and have given them 28
this fruit of love, I will go on by you into Spain. And 29
I am certain that when I come, I will be full of the blessing of Christ.

Now I make request to you, brothers, by our Lord 30
Jesus Christ, and by the love of the Spirit, that you will be working together with me in your prayers to God for me; so that I may be kept safe from those in Judaea 31
who have not put themselves under the rule of God, and that the help which I am taking for Jerusalem may be pleasing to the saints; so that I may come to you in joy 32
by the good pleasure of God, and have rest with you. Now may the God of peace be with you all. So be it. 33

16 IT is my desire to say a good word for Phoebe, who 1
is a servant of the church in Cenchreae: that you will 2
take her in kindly, after the way of the saints, as one who is the Lord's, and give her help in anything in which she may have need of you: because she has been a help to a great number and to myself.

Give my love to Prisca and Aquila, workers with 3
me in Christ Jesus, who for my life put their necks in 4
danger; to whom not only I but all the churches of the Gentiles are in debt: and say a kind word to the church 5
which is in their house. Give my love to my dear Epaenetus, who is the first fruit of Asia to Christ. Give 6
my love to Mary, who gave much care to you. Give 7
my love to Andronicus and Junia, my relations, who were in prison with me, who are noted among the Apostles, and who were in Christ before me. Give my 8
love to Ampliatus, who is dear to me in the Lord. Give 9
my love to Urbanus, a worker in Christ with us, and to my dear Stachys. Give my love to Apelles, who has the 10
approval of Christ. Say a kind word to those who are of the house of Aristobulus. Give my love to Herodion, 11
my relation. Say a kind word to those of the house of Narcissus, who are in the Lord. Give my love to 12

Tryphaena and Tryphosa, workers in the Lord. Give my love to my dear Persis, who did much work in the Lord. Give my love to Rufus, one of the Lord's selection, 13
and to his mother and mine. Give my love to Asyncritus, 14
Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brothers who are with them. Give my love to Philologus and 15
Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints who are with them. Give one another a holy kiss. 16
All the churches of Christ send their love to you.

Now, it is my desire, brothers, that you will take note 17
of those who are causing division and trouble among you, quite against the teaching which was given to you: and keep away from them. For such people are not servants 18
of the Lord Christ, but of their stomachs; and by their smooth and well-said words the hearts of those who have no knowledge of evil are tricked. For all have 19
knowledge of how you do what you are ordered. For this reason I have joy in you, but it is my desire that you may be wise in what is good, and without knowledge of evil. And the God of peace will be crushing 20
Satan under your feet before long.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

Timothy, who is working with me, sends his love to 21
you, so do Lucius and Jason and Sosipater, my relations.
I, Tertius, who have done the writing of this letter, send 22
love in the Lord. Gaius, with whom I am living, whose 23
house is open to all the church, sends his love, so does Erastus, the manager of the accounts of the town, and Quartus, the brother.

Now to him who is able to make you strong in agree- 25
ment with the good news which I gave you and the preaching of Jesus Christ, in the light of the revelation of that secret which has been kept through times eternal, but 26
is now made clear; and by the writings of the prophets, by the order of the eternal God, the knowledge of it has been given to all the nations, so that they may come under the rule of the faith; to the only wise God, through 27
Jesus Christ, be the glory for ever. So be it.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the purpose 1
of God, and Sosthenes the brother, to the church 2
of God which is in Corinth, to those who have
been made holy in Christ Jesus, saints by the selection
of God, with all those who in every place give honour
to the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord and
ours: Grace to you and peace from God our Father and 3
the Lord Jesus Christ.

I give praise to my God for you at all times, because 4
of the grace of God which has been given to you in Christ
Jesus; so that in him you have wealth in all things, in 5
word and in knowledge of every sort; even as the witness 6
of the Christ has been made certain among you: so that 7
having every grace you are living in the hope of the
revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ; who will give you 8
strength to the end, to be free from all sin in the day of
our Lord Jesus Christ. God is true, through whom you 9
have been given a part with his son, Jesus Christ our
Lord.

DIVISIONS IN THE CHURCH

Now I make request to you, my brothers, in the name 10
of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you will all say the same
thing, and that there may be no divisions among you,
so that you may be in complete agreement, in the same
mind and in the same opinion. Because it has come to 11
my knowledge through those of the house of Chloe, that
there are divisions among you, my brothers. That is, 12
that some of you say, "I am of Paul"; some say, "I am
of Apollos"; some say, "I am of Cephas"; and some

say, "I am Christ's". Is there a division in Christ? 13
was Paul nailed to the cross for you? or were you given
baptism in the name of Paul? I give praise to God that 14
not one of you had baptism from me, but Crispus and
Gaius; so that no one may be able to say that you had 15
baptism in my name. And I gave baptism to the house 16
of Stephanas; but I am not certain that any others had
baptism from me. For Christ sent me, not to give 17
baptism, but to be a preacher of the good news: not
with wise words, for fear that the cross of Christ might
be made of no value.

For the word of the cross seems foolish to those who 18
are on the way to destruction; but to us who are on the
way to salvation it is the power of God. As it says in 19
the holy Writings,

I will put an end to the wisdom of the wise,
And will put on one side the designs of those who
have knowledge.

Where is the wise? where is he who has knowledge of 20
the law? where is the man of this world who has a love
of discussion? has not God made foolish the wisdom of
this world? For because, by the purpose of God, the 21
world, with all its wisdom, had not the knowledge of
God, it was God's pleasure, by so foolish a thing as
preaching, to give salvation to those who had faith in
him. Seeing that the Jews make request for signs, and 22
the Greeks are looking for knowledge: but we give the 23
good news of Christ on the cross, a hard thing to the
Jews, and a foolish thing to the Gentiles; but to those 24
of God's selection, Jews and Greeks, Christ is the power
and the wisdom of God. Because what seems foolish in 25
God is wiser than men; and what seems feeble in God
is stronger than men.

For you see God's design for you, my brothers, that 26
he has not taken a great number of the wise after the
flesh, not the strong, not the noble: but God made 27
selection of the foolish things of this world so that he

might put the wise to shame; and the feeble things that
he might put to shame the strong; and the low things 28
of the world, and the things without honour, did God
make selection of, yes, even the things which are not,
so that he might make as nothing the things which
are: so that no flesh might have glory before God. 29
But God has given you a place in Christ Jesus, through 30
whom God has given us wisdom and righteousness and
salvation, and made us holy: so that, as it is said in the 31
holy Writings, "Whoever has a desire for glory, let
his glory be in the Lord".

THE POWER AND WISDOM OF GOD

2 AND when I came to you, my brothers, I did not 1
come with wise words of knowledge, putting
before you the secret of God. For I had made the 2
decision to have knowledge of nothing among you but
only of Jesus Christ on the cross. And I was with you 3
without strength, in fear and in doubt. And in my 4
preaching there were no honeyed words of wisdom, but
I was dependent on the power of the Spirit to make it
clear to you: so that your faith might be based not on 5
man's wisdom but on the power of God.

But still we have wisdom for those who are complete 6
in knowledge, though not the wisdom of this world,
and not of the rulers of this world, who are coming to
nothing: but we give the news of the secret wisdom of 7
God, which he had kept in store before the world came
into existence, for our glory; of which not one of the 8
rulers of this world had knowledge: for if they had, they
would not have put the Lord of glory on the cross: but 9
as it says in the holy Writings,

Things which the eye saw not,
And which had not come to the ears or into the heart
of man,
Such things as God has made ready for those who have
love for him.

But God has given us the revelation of these things 10
through his Spirit, for the Spirit makes search into
all things, even the deep things of God. For who has 11
knowledge of the things of a man but the spirit of the
man which is in him? in the same way, no one has
knowledge of the things of God but the Spirit of God.
But we have not the spirit of the world, but the spirit 12
which comes from God, so that we may have knowledge
of the things which are freely given to us by God. And 13
these are the things which we say, not in the language
of man's wisdom, but in words given to us by the Spirit,
judging the things of the spirit by the help of the Spirit.
For the natural man is not able to take in the things of 14
the Spirit of God: for they seem foolish to him, and he
is not able to have knowledge of them, because such
knowledge comes only through the Spirit. But he who 15
has the Spirit, though judging all things, is himself
judged by no one. For who has knowledge of the mind 16
of the Lord, so as to be his teacher? But we have the
mind of Christ.

WORKERS WITH GOD

3 AND the teaching I gave you, my brothers, was such 1
as I was able to give, not to those who have the
Spirit, but to those who are still in the flesh, even
to children in Christ. I gave you milk and not meat, 2
because you were, then, unable to take it, and even now
you are not able; because you are still in the flesh: for 3
when there is envy and division among you, are you not
still walking after the way of the flesh, even as natural
men? For when one says, "I am of Paul"; and another 4
says, "I am of Apollos"; are you not talking like natural
men? What then is Apollos? and what is Paul? They 5
are but servants who gave you the good news as God
gave it to them. I did the planting, Apollos did the 6
watering, but God gave the increase. So then the 7
planter is nothing, and the waterer is nothing; but God

who gives the increase. Now the planter and the waterer 8
are working for the same end: but they will have their
separate rewards in the measure of their work. For we 9
are workers with God: you are God's planting, God's
building.

In the measure of the grace given to me, I, as a wise 10
master-builder, have put the base in position, and another
goes on building on it. But let every man take care what
he puts on it. For there is no other base for the building 11
but that which has been put down, which is Jesus Christ.
But on the base a man may put gold, silver, stones of 12
great price, wood, dry grass, cut stems; every man's 13
work will be made clear in that day, because it will be
tested by fire; and the fire itself will make clear the
quality of every man's work. If any man's work comes 14
through the test, he will have a reward. If the fire puts 15
an end to any man's work, it will be his loss: but he will
get salvation himself, though as by fire.

Do you not see that you are God's holy house, and 16
that the Spirit of God has his place in you? If anyone 17
makes the house of God unclean, God will put an end
to him; for the house of God is holy, and you are his
house.

Let no man have a false idea. If any man seems to 18
himself to be wise among you, let him become foolish,
so that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world 19
is foolish before God. As it is said in the holy Writings,
"He who takes the wise in their secret designs": and 20
again, "The Lord has knowledge of the reasonings of
the wise, that they are nothing". So let no one take 21
pride in men. For all things are yours; Paul, or Apollos, 22
or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things
present, or things to come; all are yours; and you are 23
Christ's; and Christ is God's.

4 LET us be judged as servants of Christ, and as those 1
who are responsible for the secret things of God.
And it is right for such servants to be safe persons. 2
But it is a small thing to me that I am judged by you or 3
by man's judging; I am not even a judge of myself. For 4
I am not conscious of any wrong in myself; but this does
not make me clear, for it is the Lord who is my judge.
For this reason let there be no judging before the time, 5
till the Lord comes, who will make clear the secret
things of the dark, and the designs of the heart; and then
will every man have his praise from God.

My brothers, it is because of you that I have taken 6
Apollos and myself as examples of these things, so that
in us you might see that it is not wise to go farther than
what is in the holy Writings, so that no one of you may
be lifted up against his brother. For who made you 7
better than your brother? or what have you that has not
been given to you? but if it has been given to you, what
cause have you for pride, as if it had not been given to
you? For even now you are full, even now you have 8
wealth, you have been made kings without us: truly,
I would be glad if you were kings, so that we might be
kings with you. For it seems to me that God has put 9
us the Apostles last of all, as men whose fate is death:
for we are put on view to the world, and to angels, and
to men. We are made to seem foolish for Christ, but 10
you are wise in Christ; we are feeble, but you are strong;
you have glory, but we have shame. Even to this hour 11
we are without food, drink, and clothing, we are given
blows and have no certain resting-place; and with our 12
hands we do the hardest work: when they give us curses
we give blessings, when we undergo punishment we take
it quietly; when evil things are said about us we give 13
gentle answers: we are made as the unclean things of the
world, as that for which no one has any use, even till now.

I am not saying these things to put you to shame, but 14

so that, as my dear children, you may see what is right.
For even if you had ten thousand teachers in Christ, you 15
have not more than one father: for in Christ Jesus I have
given birth to you through the good news. So my desire 16
is that you take me as your example. For this cause 17
I have sent Timothy to you, who is my dear and true
child in the Lord; he will make clear to you my ways
in Christ, even as I am teaching everywhere in every
church. Now some are full of pride, as if I was not 18
coming to you. But I will come to you in a short time, 19
if it is pleasing to the Lord, and I will take note, not of
the word of those who are full of pride, but of the power.
For the kingdom of God is not in word but in power. 20
What is your desire? is my coming to be with punish- 21
ment, or is it to be in love and a gentle spirit?

SIN OF THE FLESH

5 It is said, in fact, that there is among you a sin of the 1
flesh, such as is not seen even among the Gentiles,
that one of you has his father's wife. And in place of 2
feeling sorrow, you are pleased with yourselves, so that
he who has done this thing has not been sent away from
among you. For I myself, being present in spirit though 3
not in body, have come to a decision about him who has
done this thing, in the name of our Lord Jesus, when you 4
have come together with my spirit, with the power of
our Lord Jesus, that this man is to be handed over to 5
Satan for the destruction of the flesh, so that his spirit
may have forgiveness in the day of the Lord Jesus. This 6
pride of yours is not good. Do you not see that a little
leaven makes a change in all the mass? Take away, then, 7
the old leaven, so that you may be a new mass, even
as you are without leaven. For Christ has been put to
death as our Passover. Let us then keep the feast, not 8
with old leaven, and not with the leaven of evil thoughts
and acts, but with the unleavened bread of true thoughts
and right feelings.

In my letter I said to you that you were not to keep 9
company with those who go after the desires of the
flesh; but I had not in mind the sinners who are outside 10
the church, or those who have a desire for and take the
property of others, or those who give worship to images;
for it is not possible to keep away from such people
without going out of the world completely: but the 11
sense of my letter was that if a brother had the name of
being one who went after the desires of the flesh, or had
the desire for other people's property, or was in the way
of using violent language, or being the worse for drink,
or took by force what was not his, you might not keep
company with such a one, or take food with him. For 12
it is no business of mine to be judging those who are
outside; but it is yours to be judging those who are
among you; as for those who are outside, God is their 13
judge. So put away the evil man from among you.

CAUSES AT LAW

6 How is it, that if any one of you has a cause at law 1
against another, he takes it before a Gentile judge
and not before the saints? Have you not know- 2
ledge that the saints will be the judges of the world?
if then the world will be judged by you, are you unable
to give a decision about the smallest things? Have you 3
not knowledge that we are to be the judges of angels?
how much more then of the things of this life? If then 4
there are questions to be judged in connection with the
things of this life, why do you put them in the hands of
those who have no position in the church? I say this to 5
put you to shame. Is there not among you one wise man
who may be able to give a decision between his brothers?
But a brother who has a cause at law against another 6
takes it before Gentile judges. More than this, it is not 7
to your credit to have causes at law with one another at
all. Why not put up with wrong? why not undergo loss?
So far from doing this, you yourselves do wrong and 8

take your brothers' property. Have you not knowledge 9
that evil-doers will have no part in the kingdom of God?
Have no false ideas about this: no one who goes after
the desires of the flesh, or gives worship to images, or
is untrue when married, or is less than a man, or makes
a wrong use of men, or is a thief, or the worse for drink, 10
or makes use of strong language, or takes by force what
is not his, will have any part in the kingdom of God.
And such were some of you; but you have been washed, 11
you have been made holy, you have been given righteous-
ness in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the
Spirit of our God.

DESIRES OF THE FLESH

I am free to do all things; but not all things are wise. 12
I am free to do all things; but I will not let myself come
under the power of any. Food is for the stomach and 13
the stomach for food, and God will put an end to them
together. But the body is not for the desires of the flesh,
but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body: and God 14
who made the Lord Jesus come back from the dead will
do the same for us by his power. Do you not see that 15
your bodies are part of the body of Christ? how then
may I take what is a part of the body of Christ and make
it a part of the body of a loose woman? such a thing may
not be. Or do you not see that he who is joined to a 16
loose woman is one body with her? for God has said,
"The two of them will become one flesh". But he who 17
is united to the Lord is one spirit. Keep away from the 18
desires of the flesh. Every sin which a man does is
outside of the body; but he who goes after the desires
of the flesh does evil to his body. Or are you not 19
conscious that your body is a house for the Holy Spirit
which is in you, and which has been given to you by
God? and you are not the owners of yourselves; for a 20
payment has been made for you: let God be honoured
in your body.

SELF-CONTROL

7 Now, as to the things in your letter to me: It is 1
good for a man to have nothing to do with a
woman. But because of the desires of the flesh, 2
let every man have his wife, and every woman her
husband. Let the husband give to the wife what is right; 3
and let the wife do the same to the husband. The wife 4
has not power over her body, but the husband; and in
the same way the husband has not power over his body,
but the wife. Do not keep back from one another what 5
is right, but only for a short time, and by agreement,
so that you may give yourselves to prayer, and come
together again; so that Satan may not get the better of
you through your loss of self-control. But this I say as 6
my opinion, and not as an order of the Lord. It is my 7
desire that all men might be even as I am. But every
man has the power of his special way of life given him
by God, one in this way and one in that.

But I say to the unmarried and to the widows, It is 8
good for them to be even as I am. But if they have not 9
self-control let them get married; for married life is
better than the burning of desire. But to the married 10
I give orders, though not I but the Lord, that the wife
may not go away from her husband (or if she goes away 11
from him, let her keep unmarried, or be united to her
husband again); and that the husband may not go away
from his wife. But to the rest I say, and not the Lord: 12
If a brother has a wife who is not a Christian, and it is
her desire to go on living with him, let him not go away
from her. And if a woman has a husband who is not a 13
Christian, and it is his desire to go on living with her,
let her not go away from her husband. For the husband 14
who has not faith is made holy through his Christian
wife, and the wife who is not a Christian is made holy
through the brother: if not, your children would be
unholy, but now are they holy. But if the one who is not 15
a Christian has a desire to go away, let it be so: the

brother or the sister in such a position is not forced to do one thing or the other: but it is God's pleasure that we may be at peace with one another. For how may 16
you be certain, O wife, that you will not be the cause of salvation to your husband? or you, O husband, that you may not do the same for your wife? Only, as the Lord 17
has given to a man, and as is the purpose of God for him, so let him go on living. And these are my orders for all the churches. If any man who is a Christian has had 18
circumcision, let him keep so; and if any man who is a Christian has not had circumcision, let him make no change. Circumcision is nothing, and its opposite is 19
nothing, but only keeping the orders of God is of value. Let every man keep the position in which he has been 20
placed by God. If you were a servant when you became 21
a Christian, let it not be a grief to you; but if you have a chance to become free, make use of it. For he who 22
was a servant when he became a Christian is the Lord's free man; and he who was free when he became a Christian is the Lord's servant. It is the Lord who has 23
made payment for you; be not servants of men. My 24
brothers, let every man keep in that condition which is the purpose of God for him.

THE MARRIED AND THE UNMARRIED

Now about unmarried women I have no orders from 25
the Lord: but I give my opinion as one to whom the Lord has given mercy to be true to him. In my opinion 26
then, because of the present trouble, it is good for a man to keep as he is. If you are married to a wife, 27
make no attempt to get free from her: if you are free from a wife, do not take a wife. If you get married it is 28
not a sin; and if an unmarried woman gets married it is not a sin. But those who do so will have trouble in the flesh. But I will not be hard on you. But I say this, my 29
brothers, the time is short; and from now it will be wise for those who have wives to be as if they had them not;

and for those who are in sorrow, to give no signs of it; 30
and for those who are glad, to give no signs of joy; and
for those who are getting property, to be as if they had
nothing; and for those who make use of the world, not 31
to be using it fully; for this world's way of life will
quickly come to an end. But it is my desire for you to 32
be free from cares. The unmarried man gives his mind
to the things of the Lord, how he may give pleasure to
the Lord: but the married man gives his attention to the 33
things of this world, how he may give pleasure to his
wife. And the wife is not the same as the unmarried 34
woman. The unmarried woman gives her mind to the
things of the Lord, so that she may be holy in body and
in spirit: but the married woman takes thought for the
things of the world, how she may give pleasure to her
husband. Now I say this for your profit; not to make 35
things hard for you, but because of what is right, and
so that you may be able to give all your attention to the
things of the Lord. But if, in any man's opinion, he is 36
not doing what is right for his bride, if she is past her
best years, and there is need for it, let him do what seems
right to him; it is no sin; let them be married. But the 37
man who is strong in mind and purpose, who is not
forced but has control over his desires, does well if he
comes to the decision to keep his bride untouched. So 38
then, he who lets his bride get married does well, and
he who keeps her unmarried does better. It is right for 39
a wife to be with her husband as long as he is living;
but when her husband is dead, she is free to be married
to another; but only to a Christian. But it will be better 40
for her to keep as she is, in my opinion: and it seems to
me that I have the Spirit of God.

THINGS OFFERED TO IMAGES

8 Now about things offered to images: we all seem 1
to ourselves to have knowledge. Knowledge
gives pride, but love gives true strength. If 2
anyone seems to himself to have knowledge, so far he

has not the right sort of knowledge about anything;
but if anyone has love for God, God has knowledge of 3
him. So, then, as to the question of taking food offered 4
to images, we are certain that an image is nothing in
the world, and that there is no God but one. For though 5
there are those who have the name of gods, in heaven
or on earth, as there are a number of gods and a number
of lords, there is for us only one God, the Father, of 6
whom are all things, and we are for him; and one Lord,
Jesus Christ, through whom are all things, and we have
our being through him. Still, all men have not that 7
knowledge: but some, being used till now to the image,
are conscious that they are taking food which has been
offered to the image; and because they are not strong
in the faith, their minds are troubled. But God's approval 8
of us is not based on the food we take: if we do not take
it we are no worse for it; and if we take it we are no
better. But take care that this power of yours does not 9
give cause for trouble to the feeble. For if a man sees 10
you, who have knowledge, taking food as a guest in the
house of an image, will it not give him, if he is feeble,
the idea that he may take food offered to images? And 11
so, through your knowledge, you are the cause of de-
struction to your brother, for whom Christ underwent
death. And in this way, doing evil to the brothers, and 12
causing trouble to those whose faith is feeble, you are
sinning against Christ. For this reason, if food is a 13
cause of trouble to my brother, I will give up taking
meat for ever, so that I may not be a cause of trouble to
my brother.

THE RIGHTS OF CHRISTIANS

9 Am I not free? am I not an Apostle? have I not seen 1
Jesus our Lord? are you not my work in the Lord?
If to others I am not an Apostle, at least I am one 2
to you: for the fact that you are Christians is the sign
that I am an Apostle. My answer to those who are 3

judging me is this. Have we no right to take food and 4
drink? Have we no right to take about with us a Christian 5
wife, like the rest of the Apostles, and the brothers of
the Lord, and Cephas? Or I only and Barnabas, have 6
we no right to take a rest from work? Who ever goes 7
to war without looking to someone to be responsible for
his payment? who puts in vines and does not take the
fruit of them? or who takes care of sheep without
drinking of their milk? Am I talking as a man? does 8
not the law say the same? For it says in the law of 9
Moses, "It is not right to keep the ox from taking the
grain when he is crushing it". Is it for the oxen that
God is giving orders? or has he us in mind? Yes, it 10
was said for us; because it is right for the ploughman to
do his ploughing in hope, and for him who is crushing
the grain to do his work hoping for a part in the fruits
of it. If we have been planting the things of the Spirit 11
for you, does it seem a great thing for you to give us a
part in your things of this world? If others have a part 12
in this right over you, have we not even more? But we
did not make use of our right, so that we might put
nothing in the way of the good news of Christ. Do you 13
not see that the servants of the holy things get their
living from the Temple, and the servants of the altar
have their part in the food which is offered on the altar?
Even so did the Lord give orders that the preachers of 14
the good news might get their living from the good
news. But I have not made use of any of these things: 15
and I am not writing this in the hope that it may be so
for me: for it would be better for me to undergo death,
than for any man to make this pride of mine of no effect.
For if I am a preacher of the good news, I have no cause 16
for pride in this; because I am forced to do so, for a
curse is on me if I do not. But if I do it gladly, I have 17
a reward; and if not, I am under orders to do it. What 18
then is my reward? This, that when I am giving the
good news, I may give it without payment, not making
use of my rights as a preacher of the good news. For 19

though I was free from all men, I made myself a servant
to all, so that more might have salvation. And to the 20
Jews I was as a Jew, so that I might give the good news
to them; to those under the law I was the same, not as
being myself under the law, but so that I might give the
good news to those under the law. To those without the 21
law I was as one without the law, not as being without
law to God, but as under law to Christ, so that I might
give the good news to those without the law. To the 22
feeble I was as one who is feeble, so that they might
have salvation: I have been all things to all men, so that
some at least might have salvation. And I do all things 23
for the cause of the good news, so that I may have a part
in it. Do you not see that in a running competition all 24
take part, but only one gets the reward? So let your
minds be fixed on the reward. And every man who takes 25
part in the sports has self-control in all things. Now
they do it to get a crown which is of this world, but we
for an eternal crown. So then I am running, not uncer- 26
tainly; so I am fighting, not as one who gives blows in
the air: but I give blows to my body, and keep it under 27
control, for fear that, after having given the good news
to others, I myself might not have God's approval.

RIGHT AND WRONG

10 FOR it is my desire, my brothers, that you may keep 1
in mind how all our fathers were under the cloud,
and they all went through the sea; and they all had 2
baptism from Moses in the cloud and in the sea; and they 3
all took the same holy food; and the same holy drink: 4
for they all took of the water from the holy rock which
came after them: and the rock was Christ. But with 5
most of them God was not pleased: for they came to
their end in the waste land. Now these things were for 6
an example to us, so that our hearts might not go after
evil things, as they did. Then do not go after false gods, 7
as some of them did; as it is said in the holy Writings,

"After resting and feasting, the people got up to take
their pleasure". Again, let us not give way to the 8
desires of the flesh, as some of them did, of whom
twenty-three thousand came to their end in one day.
And let us not put the Lord to the test, as some of them 9
did, and came to their death by snakes. And do not say 10
evil things against the Lord, as some of them did, and
destruction overtook them. Now these things were done 11
as an example; and were put down in writing for our
teaching, on whom the last days have come. So let him 12
who seems to himself to be safe go in fear of a fall. You 13
have been put to no test but such as is common to man:
and God is true, who will not let any test come on you
which you are not able to undergo; but he will make
with the test a way out of it, so that you may be able
to go through it.

For this cause, my dear brothers, give no worship to 14
false gods. What I am saying is for wise men, do you 15
be the judges of it. The cup of blessing which we take, 16
does it not give us a part in the blood of Christ? And is
not the broken bread a taking part in the body of Christ?
because we, being a number of persons, are one bread, 17
we are one body: for we all take part in the one bread.
See Israel after the flesh: do not those who take as food 18
the offerings of the altar take a part in the altar? Do 19
I say, then, that what is offered to images is anything,
or that the image is anything? What I say is that the 20
things offered by the Gentiles are offered to evil spirits
and not to God; and it is not my desire for you to have
any part with evil spirits. It is not possible for you, at 21
the same time, to take the cup of the Lord and the cup
of evil spirits; you may not take part in the table of the
Lord and the table of evil spirits. Or may we be the 22
cause of envy to the Lord? are we stronger than he?

We are free to do all things, but there are things which 23
it is not wise to do. We are free to do all things, but
not all things are for the common good. Let a man give 24
attention not only to what is good for himself, but

equally to his neighbour's good. Whatever meat may 25
be had at the public market, take as food without
question of right or wrong; for the earth is the Lord's 26
and all things in it. If a Gentile makes a feast for you, 27
and you are pleased to go as a guest, take whatever is
put before you, without question of right or wrong. But 28
if anyone says to you, "This food has been used as an
offering," do not take it, on account of him who said it,
and on account of his sense of right and wrong: right 29
and wrong, I say, not for you, but for the other man;
for the fact that I am free is not dependent on another
man's sense of right or wrong. But if I give praise to 30
God for the food which I take, let no man say evil of
me for that reason. So then, if it is a question of food 31
or drink, or any other thing, whatever you do, do all to
the glory of God. Give no cause of trouble to Jews, or 32
to Greeks, or to the church of God. Even as I give way 33
to all men in all things, not looking for profit for myself,
but for the good of others, that they may get salvation.
11 So take me for your example, even as I take Christ for 1
mine.

COVERING FOR THE HEAD

Now I am pleased to see that you keep me in 2
memory in all things, and that you give attention
to the teaching which was handed down from me
to you. But it is important for you to keep this fact in 3
mind, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head
of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.
Every man who takes part in prayer, or gives teaching 4
as a prophet, with his head covered, puts shame on his
head. But every woman who does so with her head 5
unveiled, puts shame on her head: for it is the same as
if her hair was cut off. For if a woman is not veiled, let 6
her hair be cut off; but if it is a shame to a woman to
have her hair cut off, let her be veiled. For it is not 7
right for a man to have his head covered, because he is
the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory

of the man. For the man did not come from the woman, 8
but the woman from the man. And the man was not 9
made for the woman, but the woman for the man. For 10
this reason it is right for the woman to have a sign of
authority on her head, because of the angels. But the 11
woman is not separate from the man, and the man is not
separate from the woman in the Lord. For as the woman 12
is from the man, so the man is through the woman; but
all things are from God. Be judges yourselves of the 13
question: does it seem right for a woman to take part in
prayer unveiled? Does it not seem natural to you that 14
if a man has long hair, it is a cause of shame to him?
But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her: for her 15
hair is given to her for a covering. But if any man will 16
not be ruled in this question, this is not our way of
doing things, and it is not done in the churches of God.

THE HOLY MEAL OF THE LORD

But in giving you this order, there is one thing about 17
which I am not pleased: it is that when you come together
it is not for the better but for the worse. For first of all, 18
it has come to my ears that when you come together in
the church, there are divisions among you, and I take
the statement to be true in part. For divisions are 19
necessary among you, in order that those who have
God's approval may be clearly seen among you. But 20
now, when you come together, it is not possible to take
the holy meal of the Lord: for when you take your food, 21
everyone takes his meal before the other; and one has
not enough food, and another is the worse for drink.
What? have you not houses to take your meals in? or 22
have you no respect for the church of God, putting the
poor to shame? What am I to say to you? am I to give
you praise? certainly not. For it was handed down to 23
me from the Lord, as I gave it to you, that the Lord
Jesus, on the night when Judas was false to him, took
bread, and when it had been broken with an act of praise, 24

he said, "This is my body which is for you: do this in memory of me". In the same way, with the cup, after 25
the meal, he said, "This cup is the new testament in my blood: do this, whenever you take it, in memory of me".
For whenever you take the bread and the cup, you give 26
witness to the Lord's death, till he comes. If, then, 27
anyone takes the bread or the cup of the Lord in the wrong spirit, he will be responsible for the body and blood of the Lord. But let no man take of the bread 28
and the cup without testing himself. For a man gives 29
decision against himself, if he takes part in the holy meal without being conscious that it is the Lord's body. For 30
this cause a number of you are feeble and ill, and a number are dead. But if we were true judges of ourselves, 31
punishment would not come on us. But if punishment 32
does come, it is sent by the Lord, so that we may be safe when the world is judged. So then, my brothers, 33
when you come together to the holy meal of the Lord, let there be waiting for one another. If any man is in 34
need of food, let him take his meal in his house; so that you may not come together to your damage. And the rest I will put in order when I come.

THE OPERATIONS OF THE SPIRIT

12 BUT about the things of the spirit, my brothers, it 1
is not right for you to be without teaching. You 2
are conscious that when you were Gentiles, in whatever way you were guided, you went after images without voice or power. So it is my desire for you to 3
be clear about this; that no one is able to say by the Spirit of God that Jesus is cursed; and no one is able to say that Jesus is Lord, but by the Holy Spirit.

Now there are different qualities given to men, but 4
the same Spirit. And there are different sorts of servants, 5
but the same Lord. And there are different operations, 6
but the same God, who is working all things in all. But 7
to every man some form of the Spirit's working is given

for the common good. For to one are given words of 8
wisdom through the Spirit; and to another words of
knowledge through the same Spirit: to another faith in 9
the same Spirit, and to another the power of taking away
disease, by the one Spirit; and to another the power of 10
working wonders; and to another the prophet's word;
and to another the power of testing spirits; to another
different sorts of tongues; and to another the power of
making clear the sense of the tongues: but all these are 11
the operations of the one and the same Spirit, giving to
every man separately as his pleasure is.

DIFFERENT PARTS, BUT ONE BODY

For as the body is one, and has a number of parts, 12
and all the parts make one body, so is Christ. For 13
through the baptism of the one Spirit we were all formed
into one body, Jews or Greeks, servants or free men,
and were all made full of the same Spirit. For the body 14
is not one part, but a number of parts. If the foot says, 15
"Because I am not the hand, I am not a part of the
body"; it is no less a part of the body. And if the ear 16
says, "Because I am not the eye, I am not a part of the
body"; it is a part of the body all the same. If all the 17
body was an eye, where would be the hearing? if all was
hearing, where would be the smelling? But now God 18
has put every one of the parts in the body as it was
pleasing to him. And if they were all one part, where 19
would the body be? But now they are all different parts, 20
but one body. And the eye may not say to the hand, 21
"I have no need of you": or again the head to the feet,
"I have no need of you". No, those parts which seem 22
to be feeble are the more necessary: and to those parts 23
of the body which seem to have less honour we give all
the more honour; and to those parts of the body which
are a cause of shame to us we give the greater respect;
but those parts of the body which are beautiful have no 24
need of such care: and so the body has been joined

together by God in such a way as to give more honour
to those parts which had need of it; so that there might 25
be no division in the body; but all the parts might have
the same care for one another. And if there is pain in 26
one part of the body, all the parts will be feeling it; or
if one part is honoured, all the parts will be glad. Now 27
you are the body of Christ, and every one of you the
separate parts of it. And God has put some in the 28
church: first, Apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers;
then those with wonder-working powers, then those
with the power of taking away disease, helpers, wise
guides, users of strange tongues. Are all Apostles? are 29
all prophets? are all teachers? have all the power of
working wonders? are all able to take away disease? 30
have all the power of tongues? are all able to give their
sense? But let your desires be turned to the more im- 31
portant things given by the Spirit. And now I am
pointing out to you an even better way.

FAITH, HOPE, LOVE

13 IF I make use of the tongues of men and of angels, and 1
have not love, I am like sounding brass, or a loud-
tongued bell. And if I have a prophet's power, and 2
have knowledge of all secret things; and if I have all
faith, by which mountains may be moved from their
place, but have not love, I am nothing. And if I give 3
all my goods to the poor, and if I give my body to be
burned, but have not love, it is of no profit to me. Love 4
is never tired of waiting; love is kind; love has no envy;
love has no high opinion of itself, love has no pride;
love's ways are ever fair, it takes no thought for itself; 5
it is not quickly made angry, it has no thought of evil;
it takes no pleasure in wrongdoing, but has joy in what 6
is true; love has the power of undergoing all things, 7
having faith in all things, hoping all things. Though the 8
prophet's word may come to an end, tongues come to
nothing, and knowledge have no more value, love has

no end. For our knowledge is only in part, and the 9
prophet's word gives only a part of what is true: but 10
when that which is complete is come, then that which
is in part will be no longer necessary. When I was a 11
child, I made use of a child's language, I had a child's
feelings and a child's thoughts: now that I am a man,
I have put away the things of a child. For now we see 12
things in a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now my
knowledge is in part; then it will be complete, even as
God's knowledge of me. But now we still have faith, 13
hope, love, these three; and the greatest of these is love.

THE POWER OF TONGUES

14 Go after love; still desiring to have the things 1
which the Spirit gives, but most of all that you
may have the prophet's power. For he who 2
makes use of tongues is not talking to men but to God;
because no one has the sense of what he is saying; but
in the spirit he is talking of secret things. But the word 3
of the prophet gives men knowledge and comfort and
strength. He who makes use of tongues may do good 4
to himself; but he who gives the prophet's word does
good to the church. Now though it is my desire for you 5
all to have the power of tongues, it would give me more
pleasure to be hearing the prophet's word from you;
for this is a greater thing than using tongues, if the sense
is not given at the same time, for the good of the church.
But, now, my brothers, if I come to you using tongues, 6
what profit will it be to you, if I do not give you a
revelation, or knowledge, or the word of the prophet,
or teaching? Even things without life, having a voice, 7
such as a music-pipe or other instrument, if they do not
give out different sounds, who may be certain what is
being played? For if the war-horn gives out an uncertain 8
note, who will get ready for the fight? So if you, in 9
using a strange tongue, say words which have no sense,
how will anyone take in what you are saying? for you

will be talking to the air. There are, it may be, a number 10
of different voices in the world, and no voice is without
sense. But if the sense of the voice is not clear to me, 11
I am like a man from a strange country to him who is
talking, and he will be the same to me. So if you are 12
desiring the things which the Spirit gives, let your minds
be turned first to the things which are for the good of
the church. For this reason, let the man who has the 13
power of using tongues make request that he may, at
the same time, be able to give the sense. For if I make 14
use of tongues in my prayers, my spirit makes the prayer,
but not my mind. What then? let my prayer be from the 15
spirit, and equally from the mind; let my song be from
the spirit, and equally from the mind. For if you give 16
a blessing with the spirit, how will the man who has no
knowledge say, "So be it," after your prayer, seeing
that he has not taken in what you are saying? For your 17
giving of the blessing is certainly well done, but of no
profit to the man without knowledge. I give praise to 18
God that I am able to make use of tongues more than you
all: but in the church it would be better for me to make 19
use of five words of which the sense was clear, so that
others might have profit, than ten thousand words in a
strange tongue.

My brothers, do not be children in mind: in evil be as 20
little children, but in mind be of full growth. In the law 21
it is said, "By men of other tongues and by strange lips
will my words come to this people; and not even so will
they give ear to me, says the Lord". For this reason 22
tongues are for a sign, not to those who have faith, but
to those who have not: but the prophet's word is for
those who have faith, and not for the rest who have not.
If, then, the church has come together, and all are using 23
tongues, and there come in men without knowledge or
faith, will they not say that you are unbalanced? But if 24
all are teaching as prophets, and a man without faith or
knowledge comes in, he is tested by all, he is judged by
all; the secrets of his heart are made clear; and he will 25

go down on his face and give worship to God, saying that God is truly among you.

EVERYTHING FOR THE COMMON GOOD

What is it then, my brothers? when you come together 26
everyone has a holy song, or a revelation, or a tongue, or is giving the sense of it. Let everything be done for the common good. If any man makes use of a tongue, 27
let it not be more than two, or at the most three, and in turn; and let someone give the sense: but if there is 28
no one to give the sense, let him keep quiet in the church; and let his words be to himself and to God. And let the 29
prophets give their words, but not more than two or three, and let the others be judges of what they say. But if a revelation is given to another who is seated near, 30
let the first be quiet. For you may all be prophets in 31
turn so that all may get knowledge and comfort; and the 32
spirits of the prophets are controlled by the prophets; for God is not a God whose ways are without order, 33
but a God of peace; as in all the churches of the saints.

THE RIGHT AND ORDERED WAY

Let women keep quiet in the churches: for it is not 34
right for them to be talking; but let them be under control, as it says in the law. And if they have a desire 35
for knowledge about anything, let them put questions to their husbands privately: for talking in the church puts shame on a woman. What? was it from you that 36
the word of God went out? or did it only come in to you?

If any man seems to himself to be a prophet or to have 37
the Spirit, let him take note of the things which I am writing to you, as being the word of the Lord. But if 38
any man is without knowledge, let him be so.

So then, my brothers, let it be your chief desire to be 39
prophets; but let no one be stopped from using tongues. Let all things be done in the right and ordered way. 40

THE COMING BACK FROM THE DEAD

15 Now I am going to make clear to you, my brothers, 1
what the good news was which I gave to you,
and which you took, and on which your faith is
based, by which you have salvation; that is to say, the 2
form in which it was given to you, if it is fixed in your
minds, and if your faith in it is not without effect. For 3
I gave to you first of all what was handed down to me,
how Christ underwent death for our sins, as it says in
the Writings; and he was put in the place of the dead; 4
and on the third day he came back from the dead, as it
says in the Writings; and he was seen by Cephas; then 5
by the twelve; then by more than five hundred brothers 6
at the same time, most of whom are still living, but some
are sleeping; then he was seen by James; then by all the 7
Apostles. And last of all, as by one whose birth was 8
out of the right time, he was seen by me. For I am the 9
least of the Apostles, having no right to be named an
Apostle, because of my cruel attacks on the church of
God. But by the grace of God, I am what I am: and his 10
grace which was given to me has not been for nothing;
for I did more work than all of them; though not I, but
the grace of God which was with me. If then it is I who 11
am the preacher, or they, this is our word, and to this
you have given your faith.

Now if the good news says that Christ came back 12
from the dead, how do some of you say that there is no
coming back from the dead? But if there is no coming 13
back from the dead, then Christ has not come back from
the dead: and if Christ did not come again from the dead, 14
then our good news and your faith in it are of no effect.
Yes, and we are seen to be false witnesses of God; 15
because we gave witness of God that by his power Christ
came again from the dead: which is not true if there is
no coming back from the dead. For if it is not possible 16
for the dead to come to life again, then Christ has not
come to life again: and if that is so, your faith is of no 17

effect; you are still in your sins. And, in addition, the 18
dead in Christ have gone to destruction. If in this life 19
only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most
unhappy.

But now Christ has truly come back from the dead, 20
the first fruits of those who are sleeping. For as by man 21
came death, so by man is there a coming back from the
dead. For as in Adam death comes to all, so in Christ 22
will all come back to life. But every man in his right 23
order: Christ the first fruits; then those who are Christ's
at his coming. Then comes the end, when he will give 24
up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he will
have put an end to all rule and to all authority and
power. For his rule will go on till he has put all those 25
who are against him under his feet. The last power to 26
come to an end is death. For, as it says, "He has put 27
all things under his feet". But when he says, "All
things are put under him," it is clear that it is not said
about him who put all things under him. And when all 28
things have been put under him, then will the Son him-
self be under him who put all things under him, so that
God may be all in all.

ALL WILL BE CHANGED

Again, what will they do who take baptism for the 29
dead? if the dead do not come back at all, why do
people take baptism for them? and why are we in 30
danger every hour? Yes, truly, by your pride in me, my 31
brothers, in Christ Jesus our Lord, my life is one long
death. If, after the way of men, I was fighting with 32
beasts at Ephesus, what profit is it to me? If the dead
do not come to life again, let us take our pleasure in
feasting, for tomorrow we come to an end. Do not be 33
tricked by false words: evil company does damage to
good behaviour. Be awake to righteousness and keep 34
yourselves from sin; for some have no knowledge of
God: I say this to put you to shame.

But someone will say, "How do the dead come back? 35
and with what sort of body do they come?" Foolish 36
man, it is necessary for the seed which you put into the
earth to undergo death in order that it may come to life
again: and when you put it into the earth, you do not 37
put in the body which it will be, but only the seed, of
grain or some other sort of plant; but God gives it 38
a body, as it is pleasing to him, and to every seed its
special body. All flesh is not the same flesh: but there 39
is one flesh of men, another of beasts, another of birds,
and another of fishes. And there are bodies of heaven 40
and bodies of earth, but the glory of the one is different
from that of the other. There is one glory of the sun, 41
and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the
stars; for the glory of one star is different from that of
another. So is it when the dead come back again. It is 42
planted in death; it comes again in life: it is planted in 43
shame; it comes again in glory: feeble when it is planted,
it comes again in power: it is planted a natural body; 44
it comes again as a body of the spirit. If there is a natural
body, there is equally a body of the spirit. And so it is 45
said, "The first man Adam was a living soul. The last
Adam is a life-giving spirit." But that which is natural 46
comes before that which is of the spirit. The first man 47
is from the earth, and of the earth: the second man is
from heaven. Those who are of the earth are like the 48
man who was from the earth: and those who are of
heaven are like the one from heaven. And in the same 49
way as we have taken on us the image of the man from
the earth, so we will take on us the image of the one
from heaven.

Now I say this, my brothers, that it is not possible 50
for flesh and blood to have a part in the kingdom of God;
and death may not have a part in life. See, I am giving 51
you the revelation of a secret: We will not all come to
the sleep of death, but we will all be changed. In a 52
second, in the shutting of an eye, at the sound of the last
horn: for at that sound the dead will come again, free

for ever from the power of death, and we will be changed.
For this body which comes to destruction will be made 53
free from the power of death, and the man who is under
the power of death will put on eternal life. But when 54
this has taken place, then that which was said in the
Writings will come true, "Death is overcome by life".
O death, where is your power? O death, where are your 55
pains? The pain of death is sin; and the power of sin 56
is the law: but praise be to God who gives us strength 57
to overcome through our Lord Jesus Christ. For this 58
cause, my dear brothers, be strong in purpose and
unmoved, ever giving yourselves to the work of the
Lord, because you are certain that your work is not
without effect in the Lord.

"BE STRONG LIKE MEN"

16 Now about the giving of money for the saints, as 1
I gave orders to the churches of Galatia, so do
you. On the first day of the week, let every one 2
of you put by him in store, in measure as he has done
well in business, so that it may not be necessary to get
money together when I come. And when I come, I will 3
send the men of your selection with letters to take the
money you have got together to Jerusalem. And if it is 4
possible for me to go there, they will go with me. But 5
I will come to you after I have gone through Macedonia,
for that is my purpose; but I may be with you for a time, 6
or even for the winter, so that you may see me on my
way, wherever I go. For it is not my desire to see you 7
now, on my way; because it is my hope to be with you
for some time, if that is the Lord's pleasure. But I will 8
be at Ephesus till Pentecost; for a great and important 9
door there is open to me, and there are a number of
people against me.

Now if Timothy comes, see that he is with you without 10
fear; because he is doing the Lord's work, even as I am:
see then that he has the honour which is right. But send 11

him on his way in peace, so that he may come to me:
for I am looking for him with the brothers. But as for 12
Apollos, the brother, I had a great desire for him to
come to you with the brothers, but it was not his pleasure
to come now; but he will come when he has a chance.

Be on the watch, unmoved in the faith, and be strong 13
like men. Let all you do be done in love. 14

Now I make my request to you, my brothers, for you 15
have knowledge that the house of Stephanas is the first
fruits of Achaia, and that they have made themselves the
servants of the saints, that you put yourselves under 16
such, and under everyone who is helping the Lord's
work. And I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and 17
Fortunatus and Achaicus: for they have done what was
needed to make your work complete. For they gave 18
comfort to my spirit and to yours: for which cause give
respect to such people.

The churches of Asia send their love to you. So do 19
Aquila and Prisca, with the church which is in their
house. All the brothers send their love to you. Give 20
one another a holy kiss.

I, Paul, send you these words of love in my writing. 21
If any man has not love for the Lord, let him be cursed. 22
Maran atha (our Lord comes). The grace of our Lord 23
Jesus Christ be with you. My love be with you all in 24
Christ Jesus. So be it.

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CORINTHIANS

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the purpose 1
of God, and Timothy the brother, to the church
of God which is in Corinth, with all the saints
who are in all Achaia: Grace to you and peace from God 2
our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE TROUBLE AT EPHESUS

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus 3
Christ, the Father of mercies and the God of all comfort;
who gives us comfort in all our troubles, so that we may 4
be able to give comfort to others who are in trouble,
through the comfort with which we ourselves are com-
forted by God. For as we undergo more of the pain 5
which Christ underwent, so through Christ does our
comfort become greater. But if we are troubled, it is 6
for your comfort and salvation; or if we are comforted,
it is for your comfort, which takes effect through your
quiet undergoing of the same troubles which we undergo:
and our hope for you is certain; in the knowledge that 7
as you take part in the troubles, so you will take part
in the comfort. For it is our desire that you may not 8
be without knowledge of our trouble which came on us
in Asia, that the weight of it was very great, more than
our power, so that it seemed that we had no hope even
of life: yes, we ourselves have had the answer of death 9
in ourselves, so that our hope might not be in ourselves,
but in God who is able to give life to the dead: who gave 10
us salvation from so great a death: on whom we have
put our hope that he will still go on to give us salvation;
you at the same time helping together by your prayer 11

for us; so that for what has been given to us through a number of persons, praise may go up to God for us from all of them.

For our glory is in this, in the knowledge which we 12
have that our way of life in the world, and most of all in relation to you, has been holy and true in the eyes of God; not in the wisdom of the flesh, but in the grace of God. For in our letters we say no other things to 13
you, but those which you are reading, and to which you give agreement, and, it is my hope, will go on doing so to the end: even as you have been ready, in part, to say 14
that we are your glory, in the same way that you are ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.

And being certain of this, it was my purpose to come 15
to you before, so that you might have a second grace; and by way of Corinth to go into Macedonia, and from 16
there to come back again to you, so that you might send me on my way to Judaea. If then I had such a purpose, 17
did I seem to be changing suddenly? or am I guided in my purposes by the flesh, saying, Yes, today, and, No, tomorrow? As God is true, our word to you is not Yes 18
and No. For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, whom we 19
were preaching among you, even I and Silvanus and Timothy, was not Yes and No, but in him is Yes. For 20
he is the Yes to all the undertakings of God: and by him all the words of God are made certain and put into effect, to the glory of God through us. Now he who makes 21
our faith strong together with you, in Christ, and has given us of his grace, is God; and it is he who has put 22
his stamp on us, even the Spirit, as the sign in our hearts of the coming glory.

PUNISHMENT AND FORGIVENESS

But God is my witness that it was in pity for you 23
that I did not come to Corinth at that time. Not 24
that we have authority over your faith, but we are helpers of your joy: for it is faith which is your support.

2 But it was my decision for myself, not to come again to 1
you with sorrow. For if I give you sorrow, who then 2
will make me glad, but he who is made sad by me? And 3
I said this very thing in my letter, for fear that when
I came I might have sorrow from those from whom it
was right for me to have joy; being certain of this, that
my joy is the joy of you all. For out of much trouble 4
and pain of heart and much weeping I sent my letter to
you; not to give you sorrow, but so that you might see
how great is the love which I have to you.

But if anyone has been a cause of sorrow, he has been 5
so, not to me only, but in some measure to all of you
(I say this that I may not be over-hard on you). Let it 6
be enough for such a man to have undergone the punish-
ment which the church put on him; so that now, on the 7
other hand, it is right for him to have forgiveness and
comfort from you, for fear that his sorrow may be over-
great. For which cause my desire is that you will make 8
your love to him clear by your acts. And for the same 9
reason I sent you a letter so that I might be certain of
your desire to do my orders in all things. But if you 10
give forgiveness to anyone, I do the same: for if I have
given forgiveness for anything, I have done it because
of you, in the person of Christ; so that Satan may not 11
get the better of us: for we are not without knowledge
of his designs.

Now when I came to Troas for the good news of 12
Christ, and there was an open door for me in the Lord,
I had no rest in my spirit because Titus my brother was 13
not there: so I went away from them, and came into
Macedonia. But praise be to God who makes us strong 14
to overcome in Christ, and makes clear through us in
every place the value of the knowledge of him. For we 15
are a sweet perfume of Christ to God in those who are
getting salvation and in those who are going to de-
struction; to the one it is a perfume of death to death; 16
to the other a perfume of life to life. And who is enough
for such things? For we are not like the great number 17

who make use of the word of God for profit: but our words are true, as from God, being said as before God in Christ.

THE LAW AND THE SPIRIT

3 Do we seem to be again attempting to put ourselves 1
in the right? or have we need, as some have, of
letters of approval to you or from you? You 2
yourselves are our letter, whose writing is in our heart,
open for every man's reading and knowledge; for you 3
are clearly a letter of Christ, the fruit of our work,
recorded not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living
God; not in stone, but in hearts of flesh. And this is the 4
certain faith which we have in God through Christ: not 5
as if we were able by ourselves to do anything for which
we might take the credit; but our power comes from
God; who has made us able to be servants of a new 6
agreement; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the
letter gives death, but the spirit gives life. For if the 7
operation of the law giving death, recorded in letters on
stone, came with glory, so that the eyes of the children
of Israel had to be turned away from the face of Moses
because of its glory, a glory which was only for a time:
will not the operation of the Spirit have a much greater 8
glory? For if the operation of the law, producing punish- 9
ment, had its glory, how much greater will be the
operation of the Spirit causing righteousness? For the 10
glory of the first no longer seems to be glory, because
of the greater glory of that which comes after. For if 11
the order which was for a time had its glory, much more
will the eternal order have its glory.

Having then such a hope, we keep nothing back, 12
and are not like Moses, who put a veil on his face, so 13
that the children of Israel might not see clearly to the
end of the present order of things; but their minds were 14
made hard, for to this very day at the reading of the
old agreement the same veil is still unlifted, though it
is taken away in Christ. But to this day at the reading 15

of the law of Moses a veil is over their heart. But when 16
it is turned to the Lord, the veil will be taken away.
Now the Lord is the Spirit: and where the Spirit of the 17
Lord is, there the heart is free. But we all with unveiled 18
face, giving back as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are
changed into the same image from glory to glory, even
as from the Lord who is the Spirit.

THE LIGHT OF THE GOOD NEWS

4 FOR this reason, because we have been made servants 1
of this new order, through the mercy given to us,
we are strong: and we have given up the secret 2
things of shame, not walking in false ways, and not
making use of the word of God with deceit; but by the
revelation of what is true, as before God, we have the
approval of every man's sense of right and wrong. But 3
if our good news is veiled, it is veiled from those who
are on the way to destruction: because the god of this 4
world has made blind the minds of those who have not
faith, so that the light of the good news of the glory of
Christ, who is the image of God, might not be shining
on them. For our preaching is not about ourselves, 5
but about Christ Jesus as Lord, and ourselves as your
servants through Jesus. Seeing that it is God who said, 6
"Let light be shining out of the dark," who has put in
our hearts the light of the knowledge of the glory of
God in the face of Jesus Christ.

But we have this wealth in vessels of earth, so that 7
it may be seen that the power comes not from us but
from God; troubles are round us on every side, but we 8
are not shut in; things are hard for us, but we see a way
out of them; we are cruelly attacked, but not without 9
hope; we are made low, but we are not without help;
in our bodies there is ever the mark of the death of Jesus, 10
so that the life of Jesus may be seen in our bodies. For 11
while living, we are still being given up to death because
of Jesus, so that the life of Jesus may be seen in our flesh,

though it is under the power of death. So then, death 12
is working in us, but life in you. But having the same 13
spirit of faith, as it is said in the Writings, "The words
of my mouth came from the faith in my heart"; in the
same way, our words are the outcome of our faith;
because we are certain that he who made the Lord Jesus 14
come back from the dead, will do the same for us, and
will give us a place in his glory with you. For we go 15
through all things on account of you, because the greater
the number to whom the grace is given, the greater is
the praise to the glory of God.

For which cause we do not give way to weariness; 16
but though our outer man is getting feebler, our inner
man is made new day by day. For our present trouble, 17
which is only for a short time, is working out for us a
much greater weight of glory; while our minds are not 18
on the things which are seen, but on the things which
are not seen: for the things which are seen are for a
time; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

5 FOR we are conscious that if this our tent of flesh is 1
taken down, we have a building from God, a house
not made with hands, eternal, in heaven. For in 2
this we are crying in weariness, greatly desiring to be
clothed with our house from heaven: so that our spirits 3
may not be unclothed. For truly, we who are in this 4
tent do give out cries of weariness, for the weight of
care which is on us; not because we are desiring to be
free from the body, but so that we may have our new
body, and death may be overcome by life. Now he who 5
has made us for this very thing is God, who has given
us the Spirit as a witness of what is to come. So, then, 6
we are ever without fear, and though conscious that
while we are in the body we are away from the Lord, (for 7
we are walking by faith, not by seeming) we are without 8
fear, desiring to be free from the body, and to be with
the Lord. For this reason we make it our purpose, in 9
the body or away from it, to be well-pleasing to him.

For we all have to come before Christ to be judged; so 10
that every one of us may get his reward for the things
done in the body, good or bad.

THE WORK OF MAKING PEACE

Having in mind, then, the fear of the Lord, we put 11
these things before men, but God sees our hearts; and
it is my hope that we may seem right in your eyes.
We are not again requesting your approval, but we are 12
giving you the chance of taking pride in us, so that you
may be able to give an answer to those whose glory is
in seeming, and not in the heart. For if we are foolish, 13
it is to God; or if we are serious, it is for you. For it is 14
the love of Christ which is moving us; because we are
of the opinion that if one was put to death for all, then
all have undergone death; and that he underwent death 15
for all, so that the living might no longer be living to
themselves, but to him who underwent death for them
and came back from the dead. For this reason, from this 16
time forward we have knowledge of no man after the
flesh: even if we have had knowledge of Christ after the
flesh, we have no longer any such knowledge. So if any 17
man is in Christ, he is in a new world: the old things
have come to an end; they have truly become new. But 18
all things are of God, who has made us at peace with
himself through Christ, and has given to us the work of
making peace; that is, that God was in Christ making 19
peace between the world and himself, not putting their
sins to their account, and having given to us the preaching
of this news of peace.

SERVANTS OF GOD

So we are the representatives of Christ, as if God was 20
making a request to you through us: we make our
request to you, in the name of Christ, be at peace
with God. For him who had no knowledge of sin God 21
made to be sin for us; so that we might become the

6 righteousness of God in him. We then, working together 1
with God, make our request to you not to take the grace
of God to no purpose (for he says, 2

I have given ear to you at a good time,
And I have been your helper in a day of salvation:

see, now is the good time; now is the day of salvation):
giving no cause for trouble in anything, so that no one 3
may be able to say anything against our work; but in 4
everything making it clear that we are the servants of
God, in quiet strength, in troubles, in need, in sorrow, in 5
blows, in prisons, in attacks, in hard work, in watchings,
in going without food; in a clean heart, in knowledge, 6
in long waiting, in being kind, in the Holy Spirit, in true
love, in the true word, in the power of God; with the 7
arms of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,
by glory and by shame, by an evil name and a good 8
name; as untrue, and still true; as strange, but still in 9
the public eye; as near to death, but still living; as
undergoing punishment, but not put to death; as full of 10
sorrow, but ever glad; as poor, but giving wealth to
others; as having nothing, but still having all things.

Our mouth is open to you, O Corinthians, our heart 11
is wide. It is not our feelings to you which are narrow, 12
but yours to us. Now to give me back payment of the 13
same sort (I am talking as to my children), let your
hearts be wide open to me.

Do not keep company with those who have not faith: 14
for what is there in common between righteousness and
evil, or between light and dark? And what agreement 15
is there between Christ and the Evil One? or what part
has one who has faith with one who has not? And what 16
agreement has the house of God with images? for we
are a house of the living God; even as God has said,
"I will be living among them, and walking with them;
and I will be their God, and they will be my people".
For which cause, 17

Come out from among them, and be separate,

says the Lord,

And let no unclean thing come near you;
And I will take you for myself,
And will be a Father to you; 18
And you will be my sons and daughters,

7 says the Lord, the Ruler of all. Because God, then, will 1
give us such rewards, dear brothers, let us make ourselves clean from all evil of flesh and spirit, and become completely holy in the fear of God.

FOR LIFE AND DEATH

LET your hearts be open to us: we have done no 2
man wrong, no man has been offered rewards by
us, we have made no profit out of any man. It is 3
not with the purpose of judging you that I say this: for I have said before that you are in our hearts for life and death together. My words to you are without fear, I am 4
full of pride on account of you: I have great comfort and joy in all our troubles.

For even when we had come into Macedonia our flesh 5
had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; there were fightings outside and fears inside. But God who 6
gives comfort to the poor in spirit gave us comfort by the coming of Titus; and not by his coming only, but 7
by the comfort which he had in you, while he gave us word of your desire, your sorrow, your care for me; so that I was still more glad. For though my letter gave 8
you pain, I have no regret for it now, though I had before; for I see that the letter gave you pain, but only for a time. Now I am glad, not that you had sorrow, but 9
that your sorrow was the cause of a change of heart; for yours was a holy sorrow that you might undergo no loss by us in anything. For the sorrow which God gives 10
is the cause of salvation through a change of heart, in which there is no reason for grief: but the sorrow of the world is a cause of death. For you see what care was 11

produced in you by this very sorrow of yours before God, what clearing of yourselves, what wrath against sin, what fear, what desire, what serious purpose, what punishment. In everything you have made it clear that you are free from sin in this business. So though I sent 12
you a letter, it was not only because of the man who did the wrong, or because of him to whom the wrong was done, but so that your true care for us might be made clear in the eyes of God. So we have been comforted: 13
and we had the greater joy in our comfort because of the joy of Titus, for his spirit had been made glad by you all. For I was not put to shame in anything in which 14
I may have made clear to him my pride in you; but as we said nothing to you but what was true, so the good things which I said to Titus about you were seen by him to be true. And his love to you is the more increased 15
by his memory of you all, how you gave way to his authority, and how you took him to your hearts with fear and honour. It gives me great joy to see you 16
answering to my good opinion of you in every way.

GOOD NEWS OF THE CHURCHES

8 AND now we give you news, brothers, about the grace 1
of God which has been given to the churches of Macedonia; how while they were undergoing 2
every sort of trouble, and were in the greatest need, they took all the greater joy in being able to give freely to the needs of others. For I give them witness, that as 3
they were able, and even more than they were able, they gave from the impulse of their hearts, seriously 4
requesting us that they might have a part in this grace of being servants to the needs of the saints: and going 5
even farther than our hope, they first gave themselves to the Lord and to us after the purpose of God. So that 6
we made a request to Titus that, as he had made a start before, so he might make this grace complete in you. And that as you are full of every good thing, of faith, 7

of the word, of knowledge, of a ready mind, and of love
to us, so you may be full of this grace in the same way.
I am not giving you an order, but using the ready mind 8
of others as a test of the quality of your love. For you 9
see the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, how though he
had wealth, he became poor on your account, so that
through his need you might have wealth. And in this 10
I give my opinion: for it is to your profit, who were the
first to make a start a year before, not only to do this,
but to make clear that your minds were more than ready
to do it. Then make the doing of it complete; so that 11
as you had a ready mind, you may give effect to it as
you are able. For if there is a ready mind, a man will 12
have God's approval in the measure of what he has, and
not of what he has not. And I am not saying this so that 13
others may get off free, while the weight comes on you:
but so that things may be equal; that from those things 14
of which you have more than enough at the present time
their need may be helped, and that if you are in any need
they may be a help to you in the same way, making
things equal. As it says in the Writings, "He who had 15
taken up much had nothing over and he who had little
had enough".

But praise be to God, who puts the same care for you 16
into the heart of Titus. For while he gladly gave ear 17
to our request, he was interested enough to go to you
from the impulse of his heart. And with him we have 18
sent a brother whose praise in the good news has gone
through all the churches; and not only so, but he was 19
marked out by the churches to go with us in the grace
of this giving which we have undertaken to the glory of
the Lord and to make clear that our mind was ready:
and so that no man might be able to say anything against 20
us in the business of this giving which has been put into
our hands: for the business has been so ordered by us 21
as to have the approval, not only of the Lord, but of
men. And we have sent with them our brother, whose 22
care has been made clear to us at times and in ways

without number, but it is now all the greater because of the certain faith which he has in you. If any question comes up about Titus, he is my brother-worker, working with me for you; or about the others, they are the representatives of the churches to the glory of Christ. Make clear then to them, as representatives of the churches, the quality of your love, and that the things which we have said about you are true.

23 24

THE SPIRIT OF GIVING

9 But there is no need for me to say anything in my letter about the giving to the saints: for I have before made clear to those of Macedonia, my pride in your ready mind, saying to them that Achaia has been ready for a year back; and a great number have been moved to do the same by your example. But I have sent the brothers, so that the good things we said about you may be seen to be true, and that, as I said, you may be ready: for fear that, if any from Macedonia come with me, and you are not ready, we (not to say, you) might be put to shame in this thing. So it seemed to me wise for the brothers to go before, and see that the amount which you had undertaken to give was ready, so that it might be a cause for praise, and not as if we were making profit out of you.

1 2 3 4 5

But in the Writings it says, "He who puts in only a small number of seeds, will get in the same; and he who puts them in from a full hand, will have produce in full measure from them" Let every man do after the purpose of his heart; not giving with grief, or by force: for God takes pleasure in a ready giver. And God is able to give you all grace in full measure; so that ever having enough of all things, you may be full of every good work: as it is said in the Writings,

6 7 8 9

He has sent out far and wide, he has given to the poor;
His righteousness is for ever.

And he who gives seed for putting into the field and 10
bread for food, will take care of the growth of your seed,
at the same time increasing the fruits of your righteous-
ness; your wealth being increased in everything, with 11
a simple mind, causing praise to God through us. For 12
this work of giving not only takes care of the needs of
the saints, but is the cause of much praise to God; for 13
when, through this work of giving, they see what you
are, they give glory to God for the way in which you
have given yourselves to the good news of Christ, and
for the wealth of your giving to them and to all; while 14
their hearts go out to you in love and in prayer for
you, because of the great grace of God which is in you.
Praise be to God for what he has given, which words 15
have no power to say.

PAUL AND HIS AUTHORITY

10 Now I Paul myself make request to you by the 1
quiet and gentle behaviour of Christ, I who am
poor in spirit when with you, but who say what
is in my mind to you without fear when I am away from
you: yes, I make my request to you, so that when I am 2
with you I may not have to make use of the authority
which may be needed against some to whom we seem
to be walking after the flesh. For though we may be 3
living in the flesh, we are not fighting after the way of
the flesh (for the arms with which we are fighting are 4
not those of the flesh, but are strong before God for the
destruction of high places); putting an end to reasonings, 5
and every high thing which is lifted up against the
knowledge of God, and causing every thought to come
under the authority of Christ; being ready to give 6
punishment to whatever is against his authority, after
you have made it clear that you are completely under
his control. Give attention to the things which are 7
before you. If any man seems to himself to be Christ's,
let him keep in mind that we are as much Christ's as

he is. For though I might take pride in our authority 8
(which the Lord gave for building you up, and not for
your destruction), it will not be a cause of shame to me:
that I may not seem to have the desire of causing you 9
fear by my letters. "For his letters", they say, "have 10
weight and are strong; but in body he is feeble, and his
way of talking has little force." Let those who say this 11
keep in mind that, what we are in word by letters when
we are away, so will we be in act when we are present.
For we will not make comparison of ourselves with 12
some of those who say good things about themselves:
but these, measuring themselves by themselves, and
making comparison of themselves with themselves, are
not wise. We will not give glory to ourselves in over- 13
great measure, but after the measure of the rule which
God has given us, a measure which comes even to you.
For we have no need to make ourselves seem more than 14
we are, as if our authority did not come as far as to you:
for we came even as far as you with the good news of
Christ: not taking credit to ourselves for what is not our 15
business, that is, for the work of others; but having hope
that, with the growth of your faith, we may get the
credit for an increase which is the effect of our work,
so that we may be able to go on and take the good news 16
to countries still farther away than you are, and not take
credit for another man's work in making things ready
to our hand. But whoever has a desire for glory, let his 17
glory be in the Lord. For the Lord's approval of a man 18
is not dependent on his opinion of himself, but on the
Lord's opinion of him.

FALSE APOSTLES

11 PUT up with me if I am a little foolish: but, truly, 1
you do put up with me. For I have a very great 2
care for you: because you have been married by
me to one husband, and it is my desire to give you
completely holy to Christ. But I have a fear, that in 3

some way, as Eve was tricked by the deceit of the snake,
your minds may be turned away from their simple and
holy love for Christ. For if anyone comes preaching 4
another Jesus from the one whose preachers we are, or
if you have got a different spirit, or a different sort of
good news from those which came to you, how well you
put up with these things. For in my opinion, I am in no 5
way less than the most important of the Apostles. But 6
though I am rough in my way of talking, I am not so
in knowledge, as we have made clear to all by our acts
among you. Or did I do wrong in making myself low 7
so that you might be lifted up, because I gave you the
good news of God without reward? I took money from 8
other churches as payment for my work, so that I might
be your servant; and when I was present with you, and 9
was in need, I let no man be responsible for me; for the
brothers, when they came from Macedonia, gave me
whatever was needed; and in everything I kept myself
from being a trouble to you, and I will go on doing so.
As the true word of Christ is in me, I will let no man 10
take from me this my cause of pride in the country of
Achaia. Why? because I have no love for you? let God 11
be judge. But what I do, that I will go on doing, so that 12
I may give no chance to those who are looking for one;
so that, in the cause of their pride, they may be seen to
be the same as we are. For such men are false Apostles, 13
workers of deceit, making themselves seem like Apostles
of Christ. And it is no wonder; for even Satan himself 14
is able to take the form of an angel of light. So it is no 15
great thing if his servants make themselves seem to be
servants of righteousness; whose end will be the reward
of their works.

I say again, Let me not seem foolish to anyone; but 16
if I do, put up with me as such, so that I may take a little
glory to myself. What I am now saying is not by the 17
order of the Lord, but as a foolish person, taking credit
to myself, as it seems. Seeing that there are those who 18
take credit to themselves after the flesh, I will do the

same. For you put up with the foolish gladly, being 19
wise yourselves. You put up with a man if he makes 20
servants of you, if he makes profit out of you, if he takes
you prisoner, if he puts himself in a high place, if he
gives you blows on the face. I say this by way of 21
shaming ourselves, as if we had been feeble. But if
anyone puts himself forward (I am talking like a foolish
person), I will do the same. Are they Hebrews? so am I. 22
Are they of Israel? so am I. Are they the seed of
Abraham? so am I. Are they servants of Christ? (I am 23
talking foolishly) I am more so; I have had more ex-
perience of hard work, of prisons, of blows more than
measure, of death. Five times the Jews gave me forty 24
blows but one. Three times I was whipped with rods, 25
once I was stoned, three times the ship I was in came
to destruction at sea, a night and a day I have been in
the water; in frequent travels, in dangers on rivers, in 26
dangers from outlaws, in dangers from my countrymen,
in dangers from the Gentiles, in dangers in the town,
in dangers in the waste land, in dangers at sea, in
dangers among false brothers; in hard work and weari- 27
ness, in frequent watchings, going without food and
drink, cold and in need of clothing. In addition to all 28
the other things, there is that which comes on me every
day, the care of all the churches. Who is feeble and I am 29
not feeble? who is in danger of falling, and I am not
angry? If I have to take credit to myself, I will do so 30
in the things in which I am feeble. The God and Father 31
of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be praise for ever,
is witness that the things which I say are true. In 32
Damascus, the ruler under Aretas the king kept watch
over the town of the people of Damascus, in order to
take me: and being let down in a basket from the wall 33
through a window, I got free from his hands.

12 As it is necessary for me to take glory to myself, 1
though it is not a good thing, I will come to
visions and revelations of the Lord. I have know- 2
ledge of a man in Christ, fourteen years back (if he was
in the body, or out of the body, I am not able to say,
but God only), who was taken up to the third heaven.
And I have knowledge of such a man (if he was in the 3
body, or out of the body, I am not able to say, but God
only), how he was taken up into Paradise, and words 4
came to his ears which may not be said, and which man
is not able to say. On account of such a one I will have 5
glory: for myself I will take no glory, but only in my
feeble body. For if I had a desire to take credit to myself, 6
it would not be foolish, for I would be saying what is
true: but I will not, for fear that I might seem to any
man more than he sees me to be, or has word from me
that I am. And because the revelations were so very 7
great, in order that I might not be overmuch lifted up,
there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, one sent from
Satan to give me pain. And about this thing I made 8
request to the Lord three times that it might be taken
away from me. And he said to me, "My grace is 9
enough for you, for my power is made complete in what
is feeble". Most gladly, then, will I take pride in my
feeble body, so that the power of Christ may be on me.
So I take pleasure in being feeble, in unkind words, in 10
needs, in cruel attacks, in troubles, on account of Christ:
for when I am feeble, then am I strong.

I have been forced by you to become foolish, though 11
it was right for my praise to have come from you: for
in no way was I less than the chief of the Apostles,
though I am nothing. Truly the signs of an Apostle 12
were done among you in quiet strength, with wonders
and acts of power. For what is there in which you were 13
made less than the other churches, but in the one thing

that I was not a trouble to you? Let me have forgiveness for this wrong.

This is now the third time that I am ready to come to 14
you; and I will not be a trouble to you: my desire is for you, not for your property: for it is not the children's business to make store for their fathers, but the fathers' for the children. And I will gladly give all I have for 15
your souls. If I have the more love for you, am I to be loved the less? But let it be so, that I was not a trouble 16
to you myself; but (someone may say) being false, I took you with deceit. Did I make a profit out of you by any 17
of those whom I sent to you? I gave orders to Titus, 18
and I sent the brother with him. Did Titus make any profit out of you? were we not guided by the same Spirit, in the same ways?

It may seem to you that all this time we have been 19
attempting to put ourselves in the right; but we are saying these things before God in Christ. For all things, dear brothers, are for your profit. For I have a fear 20
that, when I come, you may not be answering to my desire, and that I may not be answering to yours; that there may be fighting, hate, angry feeling, divisions, evil talk about others, secrets, high thoughts, outbursts against authority; and that when I come again, my God 21
may put me to shame among you, and I may have grief for those who have done wrong before, and have had no regret for their unclean ways, and for the evil desires of the flesh to which they have given way.

A SIGN OF CHRIST

13 THIS is the third time that I am coming to you. 1
From the mouth of two or three witnesses will every word be made certain. I said before, and 2
still say it before I come, as being present for the second time, though I am still away from you, to those who have done wrong before, and to all the others, that if I come again I will not have pity; seeing that you are 3

looking for a sign of Christ giving out his word in me;
who is not feeble in relation to you, but is strong in you:
for he was feeble in that he was put to death on the cross, 4
but he is living by the power of God. And we are feeble
in him, but we will be living with him through the
power of God in relation to you. Make a test of your- 5
selves, if you are in the faith; make certain of yourselves.
Or are you not conscious in yourselves that Jesus Christ
is in you, if you are truly Christ's? But it is my hope 6
that you will have no doubt that we are truly Christ's.
Now our prayer to God is that you may do no evil; not 7
in order that it may be put to our credit, but so that you
may do what is right, whatever we may seem. Because 8
we are able to do nothing against what is true, but only
for it. For we are glad when we are feeble and you are 9
strong: and this is our prayer, even that you may be
made complete. For this cause I am writing these things 10
while I am away, so that there may be no need for me,
when I am present, to make use of sharp measures, by
the authority which the Lord has given me for building
up and not for destruction.

Let this be my last word, brothers; be glad; be com- 11
plete; be comforted; be of the same mind; be at peace
with one another: and the God of love and peace will
be with you. Give one another a holy kiss. 12

All the saints send their love to you. 13

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of 14
God, and the harmony of the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE GALATIANS

1 PAUL, an Apostle (not from men, and not through man, but through Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who made him come back from the dead), and all the brothers who are with me, to the churches of Galatia: Grace to you and peace from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, who gave himself for our sins, so that he might make us free from this present evil world, after the purpose of our God and Father: to whom be the glory for ever and ever. So be it.

TURNED AWAY FROM CHRIST

I am surprised that you are being so quickly turned away from him whose word came to you in the grace of Christ, to good news of a different sort; which is not another sort: only there are some who give you trouble, desiring to make changes in the good news of Christ. But even if we, or an angel from heaven, were to be a preacher to you of good news other than that which we have given you, let there be a curse on him. As we have said before, so say I now again, If any man is a preacher to you of any good news other than that which has been given to you, let there be a curse on him. Am I now using arguments to men, or God? or is it my desire to give men pleasure? if I was still pleasing men, I would not be a servant of Christ.

THE PAST LIFE OF PAUL

Because I say to you, my brothers, that the good news of which I was the preacher is not man's. For I did not get it from man, and I was not given teaching in it, but

it came to me through revelation of Jesus Christ. For 13
news has come to you of my way of life in the past in
the Jews' religion, how I was cruel without measure
to the church of God, and did great damage to it: and 14
I went farther in the Jews' religion than a number of
my generation among my countrymen, having a more
burning interest in the beliefs handed down from my
fathers. But when it was the good pleasure of God, by 15
whom I was marked out even from my mother's body,
through his grace, to give the revelation of his Son in 16
me, so that I might give the news of him to the Gentiles;
then I did not take the opinion of flesh and blood, and 17
I went not up to Jerusalem to those who were Apostles
before me; but I went away into Arabia, and again I
came back to Damascus.

Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see 18
Cephas, and was there with him fifteen days. But of the 19
other Apostles I saw only James the Lord's brother.
Now God is witness that the things which I am writing 20
to you are true. Then I came to the parts of Syria and 21
Cilicia. And the churches of Judaea which were in Christ 22
still had no knowledge of my face or person: only it 23
came to their ears that he who at one time was cruel to
us is now preaching the faith which before had been
attacked by him; and they gave glory to God in me. 24

PREACHING AMONG THE GENTILES

2 THEN after the space of fourteen years I went up 1
again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus
with me. And I went up by revelation; and I put 2
before them the good news which I was preaching among
the Gentiles, but privately before those who were of
good name, so that the work which I was or had been
doing might not be without effect. But not even Titus 3
who was with me, being a Greek, was made to undergo
circumcision: and that because of the false brothers let 4
in secretly, who came searching out our free condition

which we have in Christ Jesus, so that they might make servants of us; to whom we gave way not even for an 5
hour; so that the true words of the good news might still be with you. But from those who seemed to be 6
important (whatever they were has no weight with me: God does not take man's person into account): those who seemed to be important gave nothing new to me; but, quite the opposite, when they saw that I had been 7
made responsible for preaching the good news to those without circumcision, even as Peter had been for those of the circumcision (because he who was working in 8
Peter as the Apostle of the circumcision was working no less in me among the Gentiles); when they saw the 9
grace which was given to me, James and Cephas and John, who had the name of being pillars, gave to me and Barnabas their right hands as friends so that we might go to the Gentiles, and they to the circumcision; only it 10
was their desire that we would give thought to the poor; which very thing I had much in mind to do.

But when Cephas came to Antioch, I made a protest 11
against him to his face, because he was clearly in the wrong. For before certain men came from James, he 12
did take food with the Gentiles: but when they came, he went back and made himself separate, fearing those who were of the circumcision. And the rest of the Jews 13
went after him, so that even Barnabas was overcome by their false ways. But when I saw that they were not 14
living uprightly in agreement with the true words of the good news, I said to Cephas before them all, If you, being a Jew, are living like the Gentiles, and not like the Jews, how will you make the Gentiles do the same as the Jews? We being Jews by birth, and not sinners 15
of the Gentiles, being conscious that a man does not get 16
righteousness by the works of the law, but through faith in Jesus Christ, we had faith in Christ Jesus, so that we might get righteousness by faith in Christ, and not by the works of the law: because by the works of the law will no flesh get righteousness. But if, while we were 17

desiring to get righteousness through Christ, we ourselves were seen to be sinners, is Christ a servant of sin? In no way! For if I put up again those things which 18
I gave to destruction, I am seen to be a wrongdoer. For I, through the law, have become dead to the law, 19
so that I might be living to God. I have been put to 20
death on the cross with Christ; still I am living; no longer I, but Christ is living in me; and that life which I now am living in the flesh I am living by faith, the faith of the Son of God, who in love for me, gave himself up for me. I do not make the grace of God of no effect: 21
because if righteousness is through the law, then Christ was put to death for nothing.

RIGHTEOUSNESS BY FAITH

3 O FOOLISH Galatians, by what strange powers 1
have you been tricked, to whom it was made clear that Jesus Christ was put to death on the cross? Give me an answer to this one question, Did the Spirit 2
come to you through the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are you so foolish? having made a 3
start in the Spirit, will you now be made complete in the flesh? Did you undergo such a number of things to 4
no purpose? if it is in fact to no purpose. He who gives 5
you the Spirit, and does works of power among you, is it by the works of law, or by the hearing of faith? Even 6
as Abraham had faith in God, and it was put to his account as righteousness. Be certain, then, that those 7
who are of faith, the same are sons of Abraham. And 8
the holy Writings, seeing before the event that God would give the Gentiles righteousness by faith, gave the good news before to Abraham, saying, "In you will all the nations have a blessing". So then those who are 9
of faith have a part in the blessing of Abraham who was full of faith. For all who are of the works of the law are 10
under a curse: because it is said in the Writings, "A curse is on everyone who does not keep on doing all the things

which are ordered in the book of the law". Now that 11
no man gets righteousness by the law in the eyes of God,
is clear; because, "The upright will be living by faith".
And the law is not of faith; but, "He who does them 12
will have life by them". Christ has made us free from 13
the curse of the law, having become a curse for us:
because it is said in the Writings, "A curse on everyone
who is put to death by hanging on a tree": so that on 14
the Gentiles might come the blessing of Abraham in
Christ Jesus; in order that we through faith might have
the Spirit which God had undertaken to give.

"WHAT THEN IS THE LAW?"

Brothers, as men would say, even a man's agreement, 15
when it has been made certain, may not be put on one
side, or have additions made to it. Now to Abraham 16
were the undertakings given, and to his seed. He says
not, "And to seeds," as of a great number; but as of
one, he says, "And to your seed," which is Christ. Now 17
this I say: The law, which came four hundred and thirty
years after, does not put an end to the agreement made
before by God, so as to make the undertaking of no
effect. Because if the heritage is by the law, it is no 18
longer dependent on the word of God; but God gave it
to Abraham by his word. What then is the law? It was 19
an addition made because of sin, till the coming of the
seed to whom the undertaking had been given; and it
was ordered through angels by the hand of a go-between.
Now a go-between is not a go-between of one; but God 20
is one. Is the law then against the words of God? in no 21
way; because if there had been a law which was able to
give life, truly righteousness would have been by the
law. However, the holy Writings have put all things 22
under sin, so that that for which God gave the under-
taking, based on faith in Jesus Christ, might be given
to those who have such faith.

But before faith came, we were kept in prison under 23

the law, waiting for the revelation of the faith which was
to come. So the law has been a servant to take us to 24
Christ, so that we might have righteousness by faith.
But now that faith is come, we are no longer under a 25
servant. Because you are all sons of God through faith 26
in Christ Jesus. For all those of you who were given 27
baptism into Christ did put on Christ. There is no Jew 28
or Greek, servant or free, male or female: because you
are all one in Jesus Christ. And if you are Christ's, then 29
are you Abraham's seed, and yours is the heritage by
the right of God's undertaking given to Abraham.

THE SPIRIT OF THE SON OF GOD

4 But I say that as long as the son is a child, he is in 1
no way different from a servant, though he is lord
of all; but is under keepers and managers till the 2
time fixed by the father. So we, when we were young, 3
were kept under the first rules of the world; but when 4
the time had come, God sent out his Son, made of a
woman, made under the law, that he might make them 5
free who were under the law, and that we might be given
the place of sons. And because you are sons, God has 6
sent out the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, saying,
"*Abba*, Father". So that you are no longer a servant, 7
but a son; and if a son, then the heritage of God is yours.

But at that time, having no knowledge of God, you 8
were servants to those who by right are no gods: but 9
now that you have come to have knowledge of God, or
more truly, God has knowledge of you, how is it that
you go back again to the poor and feeble first things,
desiring to be servants to them again? You keep days, 10
and months, and fixed times, and years. I am in fear of 11
you, that I may have been working for you to no purpose.

My desire for you, brothers, is that you may be as 12
I am, because I am as you are. You have done me no
wrong; but you have knowledge that with a feeble body 13
I was preaching the good news to you the first time;

and you did not have a poor opinion of me because of 14
the trouble in my flesh, or put shame on it; but you took
me to your hearts as an angel of God, even as Christ
Jesus. Where then is that happy condition of yours? 15
because I give you witness, that, if possible, you would
have taken out your eyes and given them to me. So then 16
am I no longer your friend, because I give you true
words? Their interest in you is not good; but their 17
desire is that you may be shut out, so that you may go
after them. But it is good to have an interest in a good 18
cause at all times, and not only when I am present with
you. My children, of whom I am again in birth-pains 19
till Christ is formed in you, truly my desire is to be 20
present with you now, using a changed voice; for I am
troubled about you.

Say, you whose desire it is to be under the law, do 21
you not give ear to the law? Because it is in the Writings, 22
that Abraham had two sons, one by the servant-woman,
and one by the free woman. Now the son by the servant- 23
woman has his birth after the flesh; but the son by the
free woman has his birth through the undertaking of
God. Which things have a secret sense; because these 24
women are the two agreements; one from the mountain
of Sinai, giving birth to servants, which is Hagar. Now 25
this Hagar is the mountain Sinai in Arabia, and is the
image of the Jerusalem which now is: which is a servant
with her children. But the Jerusalem on high is free, 26
which is our mother. For it is in the Writings, 27

> You who have never given birth, be glad;
> Give cries of joy, you who have had no birth-pains;
> For more are the children of her who has been given
> up by her husband than those of the woman who has
> a husband.

Now we, brothers, as Isaac was, are the children of 28
the undertaking of God. But as in those days he who 29
had birth after the flesh was cruel to him who had birth
after the Spirit, even so it is now. What then do the 30

Writings say? "Send away the servant-woman and her son; for the son of the servant-woman will not have a part in the heritage with the son of the free woman."
So, brothers, we are not children of the servant-woman, 31
5 but of the free woman. Christ has truly made us free: 1
then keep your free condition and let no man put a yoke on you again.

CIRCUMCISION AND FAITH

SEE, I Paul say to you, that if you take circumcision, 2
Christ will be of no use to you. Yes, I give witness 3
again to every man who takes circumcision, that he will have to keep all the law. You are cut off from Christ, 4
you who would have righteousness by the law; you are turned away from grace. For we through the Spirit by 5
faith are waiting for the hope of righteousness. Because 6
in Christ Jesus, having circumcision or not having circumcision are equally of no profit; but only faith working through love. You were going on well; who was the 7
cause of your not giving ear to what is true? This 8
ready belief did not come from him who had made you his. A little leaven makes a change in all the mass. 9
I am certain about you in the Lord, that you will be 10
of no other mind; but he who is troubling you will have his punishment, whoever he is. But I, brothers, if I 11
am still preaching circumcision, why am I still attacked? then has the shame of the cross been taken away. My 12
desire is that they who give you trouble might even be cut off themselves.

THE FLESH AND THE SPIRIT

Because you, brothers, were marked out to be free; 13
only do not make use of your free condition to give the flesh its chance, but through love be servants one to another. For all the law is made complete in one word, 14
even in this, "Have love for your neighbour as for yourself". But if you are given to fighting with one 15

another, take care that you are not the cause of destruction one to another.

But I say, Go on in the Spirit, and you will not come 16
under the rule of the evil desires of the flesh. For the 17
flesh has desires against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; because these are opposite the one to the other; so that you may not do the things which you have a mind to do. But if you are guided by the Spirit, you 18
are not under the law. Now the works of the flesh are 19
clear, which are these; evil desire, unclean things, wrong use of the senses, worship of images, use of strange 20
powers, hates, fighting, desire for what another has, angry feelings, love of competition, divisions, false teachings, envy, uncontrolled drinking and feasting, and 21
such things: of which I give you word clearly, even as I did in the past, that they who do such things will have no part in the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the 22
Spirit is love, joy, peace, a quiet mind, kind acts, well-doing, faith, gentle behaviour, control over desires: 23
against such there is no law. And those who are Christ's 24
have put to death on the cross the flesh with its passions and its evil desires.

If we are living by the Spirit, by the Spirit let us be 25
guided. Let us not be full of self-glory, making one 26
another angry, having envy of one another.

THE SPIRIT OF LOVE

6 BROTHERS, if a man is taken in any wrongdoing, you 1
who are of the Spirit will put such a one right in a spirit of love; keeping watch on yourself, for fear that you yourself may be tested. Take on yourselves one 2
another's troubles, and so keep the law of Christ. For if 3
a man has an idea that he is something when he is nothing, he is tricked by himself. But let every man 4
make test of his work, and then will his cause for glory be in himself only, and not in his neighbour. Because 5
every man is responsible for his part of the work.

But let him who gets teaching in the word give a part 6
in all good things to his teacher. Be not tricked; God is 7
not made sport of: for whatever seed a man puts in, that
will he get back as grain. Because he who puts in the 8
seed of the flesh will of the flesh get the reward of death;
but he who puts in the seed of the Spirit will of the Spirit
get the reward of eternal life. And let us not get tired 9
of well-doing; for at the right time we will get in the
grain, if we do not give way to weariness. So then, as 10
we have the chance, let us do good to all men, and
specially to those who are of the family of the faith.

See the size of the handwriting which I myself have 11
made use of in writing to you. Those who have the 12
desire to seem important in the flesh, put force on you
to undergo circumcision; only that they may not be
attacked because of the cross of Christ. Because even 13
those who undergo circumcision do not themselves keep
the law; but they would have you undergo circumcision,
so that they may have glory in your flesh. But far be it 14
from me to have glory in anything, but only in the cross
of our Lord Jesus Christ, through which this world has
come to an end on the cross for me, and I for it. For 15
having circumcision is nothing, and not having circum-
cision is nothing, but only a new order of existence.
And on all who are guided by this rule be peace and 16
mercy, and on the Israel of God.

From this time on let no man be a trouble to me; 17
because my body is marked with the marks of Jesus.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, 18
brothers. So be it.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE EPHESIANS

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Christ Jesus by the purpose 1
of God, to the saints who are at Ephesus, and
those who have faith in Christ Jesus: Grace to 2
you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus
Christ.

THE FIRST FRUIT OF OUR HERITAGE

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus 3
Christ, who has given us every blessing of the Spirit in
the heavens in Christ: even as he made selection of us 4
in him from the first, so that we might be holy and free
from all evil before him in love: as we were designed 5
before by him for the position of sons to himself through
Jesus Christ, in the good pleasure of his purpose, to the 6
praise of the glory of his grace which he freely gave to
us in the Loved One: in whom we have salvation through 7
his blood, the forgiveness of our sins, through the wealth
of his grace, which he gave us in full measure in all 8
wisdom and care; having made clear to us the secret of 9
his purpose, in agreement with the design which he had
in mind, to put into his hands the ordering of the times 10
when they are complete, so that all things might come
to a head in Christ, the things in heaven, and the things
on the earth; in him, I say, in whom we have a heritage, 11
being marked out from the first in his purpose who does
all things in agreement with his designs; so that his 12
glory might have praise through us who first had hope
in Christ: in whom you, having been given the true 13
word, the good news of your salvation, and through
your faith in him, were given the sign of the Holy Spirit
of hope, which is the first fruit of our heritage, till God 14
gets back that which is his, to the praise of his glory.

For this cause I, having had news of the faith in the 15
Lord Jesus which is among you, and which you make
clear to all the saints, give praise without end for you, 16
keeping you in mind in my prayers; that the God of our 17
Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you
a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of
him; and that having the eyes of your heart full of light, 18
you may have knowledge of what is the hope of his
purpose, what is the wealth of the glory of his heritage
in the saints, and how unlimited is his power to us who 19
have faith, as is seen in the working of the strength of
his power, by which he made Christ come back from the 20
dead, and gave him a place at his right hand in heaven,
far over all rule, and authority, and power, and every 21
name which is named, not only in the present order, but
in that which is to come: and he has put all things under 22
his feet, and has made him to be head over all things to
the church, which is his body, the full measure of him 23
in whom all things are made complete.

2 AND to you did he give life, when you were dead 1
through your wrongdoing and sins, in which you 2
were living in the past after the ways of this
present world, doing the pleasure of the lord of the
power of the air, the spirit who is now working in those
who go against the purpose of God; among whom we 3
all at one time were living in the pleasures of our flesh,
giving way to the desires of the flesh and of the mind,
and the punishment of God was waiting for us even as
for the rest. But God, being full of mercy, through the 4
great love which he had for us, even when we were dead 5
through our sins, gave us life together with Christ (by
grace you have salvation), so that we came back from 6
death with him, and are seated with him in the heavens,
in Christ Jesus; that in the time to come he might make 7
clear the full wealth of his grace in his mercy to us in
Jesus Christ: because by grace you have salvation 8
through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is given by

God: not by works, so that no man may take glory to 9
himself. For by his act we were given existence in 10
Christ Jesus to do those good works which God before
made ready for us so that we might do them.

UNITED IN THE SPIRIT

For this reason keep it in mind that in the past you, 11
the Gentiles in the flesh, who are looked on as being
outside the circumcision by those who have circum-
cision, in the flesh, made by hands; that you were at that 12
time without Christ, being cut off from any part in
Israel's rights as a nation, having no part in God's
agreement, having no hope, and without God in the
world. But now in Christ Jesus you who at one time 13
were far off are made near in the blood of Christ. For 14
he is our peace, who has made the two into one, and by
whom the middle wall of division has been broken down,
having in his flesh put an end to that which made the 15
division between us, even the law with its rules and
orders, so that he might make in himself, of the two,
one new man, so making peace; and that the two might 16
come into agreement with God in one body through the
cross, so putting an end to that division. And he came 17
preaching peace to you who were far off, and to those
who were near; because through him the two of us are 18
able to come near in one Spirit to the Father. So then 19
you are no more as those who have no part or place in
the kingdom of God, but you are numbered among the
saints, and of the family of God, resting on the base of 20
the Apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being
the chief keystone, in whom all the building, rightly 21
joined together, comes to be a holy house of God in the
Lord; in whom you, with the rest, are united together 22
as a living-place of God in the Spirit.

THE SECRET OF CHRIST

3 FOR this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Christ Jesus 1
for you Gentiles, if that ordering of the grace of 2
God has come to your knowledge, which was given
to me for you, how by revelation the secret was made 3
clear to me, as I said before in a short letter, by the 4
reading of which you will be clear about my knowledge
of the secret of Christ; which in other generations was 5
not given to the sons of men, but the revelation of it
has now been made to his holy Apostles and prophets
in the Spirit; which is that the Gentiles have a part in 6
the heritage, and in the same body, and in the same hope
in Christ through the good news, of which I was made 7
a preacher, through that grace of God which was given
to me in the measure of the working of his power. To 8
me, who am less than the least of all the saints, was this
grace given, so that I might make clear to the Gentiles
the good news of the unending wealth of Christ: and 9
make all men see what is the ordering of the secret which
from the first has been kept in God who made all things;
so that now to the rulers and the powers in the heavens 10
might be made clear through the church the wide-
shining wisdom of God, which is seen in his eternal 11
purpose in Christ Jesus our Lord: by whom we come 12
near to God without fear through faith in him. For this 13
reason it is my prayer that you may not become feeble
because of my troubles for you, which are your glory.

For this cause I go down on my knees before the 14
Father, from whom every family in heaven and on earth 15
is named, that in the wealth of his glory he would make 16
you strong with power through his Spirit in your hearts;
that Christ may have his place in your hearts through 17
faith; so that you, being rooted and based in love, may 18
have strength to see with all the saints how wide and
long and high and deep it is, and to have knowledge of 19
the love of Christ which is outside all knowledge, so that
you may be made complete as God himself is complete.

Now to him who is able to do in full measure more 20
than all our desires or thoughts, through the power
which is working in us, to him be the glory in the church 21
and in Christ Jesus to all generations for ever and ever.
So be it.

THE HARMONY OF THE SPIRIT

4 I THEN, the prisoner in the Lord, make this request 1
from my heart, that you will see that your behaviour
is a credit to the position which God's purpose has
given you, with all gentle and quiet behaviour, taking 2
whatever comes, putting up with one another in love;
taking care to keep the harmony of the Spirit in the yoke 3
of peace. There is one body and one Spirit, even as you 4
have been marked out by God in the one hope of his
purpose for you; one Lord, one faith, one baptism, 5
one God and Father of all, who is over all, and through 6
all, and in all. But to every one of us has grace been 7
given in the measure of the giving of Christ. For this 8
reason he says,

He went up on high, taking his prisoners with him,
And gave freely to men.

(Now this, "He went up," what is it but that he first 9
went down into the lower parts of the earth? He who 10
went down is the same who went up far over all the
heavens so that he might make all things complete.)
And he gave some as Apostles, and some, prophets; 11
and some, preachers of the good news; and some to give
care and teaching; for the training of the saints as 12
servants in the church, for the building up of the body
of Christ: till we all come to the harmony of the faith, 13
and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to full growth,
to the full measure of Christ: that we may be no longer 14
children, sent this way and that, turned about by every
wind of teaching, by the twisting and tricks of men, by
the deceits of error; but saying true words in love, may 15
come to full growth in him, who is the head, even Christ;

through whom all the body, being rightly formed and 16
united together, by the full working of every part, is
increased to the building up of itself in love.

PUTTING ON THE NEW MAN

This I say, then, and give witness in the Lord, that 17
you are to go no longer in the way of the Gentiles whose
minds are turned to that which has no profit, whose 18
thoughts are dark, to whom the life of God is strange
because they are without knowledge, and their hearts
have been made hard; who having no more power of 19
feeling, have given themselves up to evil passions, to do
all unclean things with overmuch desire. For this was 20
not the teaching of Christ which was given to you; if in 21
fact you gave ear to him, and were given teaching in
him, even as what is true is made clear in Jesus: that 22
you are to put away, in relation to your earlier way of
life, the old man, which has become evil by love of
deceit; and be made new in the spirit of your mind, 23
and put on the new man, to which God has given life, 24
in righteousness and a true and holy way of living.

And so, putting away false words, let everyone say 25
what is true to his neighbour: for we are parts one of
another. Be angry without doing wrong; let not the 26
sun go down on your wrath: and do not give way to the 27
Evil One. Let him who was a thief be so no more, but 28
let him do good work with his hands, so that he may
have something to give to him who is in need. Let no 29
evil talk come out of your mouth, but only what is good
for giving necessary teaching, and for grace to those
who give ear. And do not give grief to the Holy Spirit 30
of God, by whom you were marked for the day of
salvation. Let all bitter, sharp, and angry feeling, and 31
noise, and evil words, be put away from you, with all
unkind acts; and be kind to one another, full of pity, 32
having forgiveness for one another, even as God in
Christ had forgiveness for you.

THE EXAMPLE OF CHRIST

5 LET it then be your desire to be like God, as well- 1
loved children; and be living in love, even as 2
Christ had love for you, and gave himself up for
us, an offering to God for a perfume of a sweet smell.
But evil acts of the flesh, and all unclean things, or desire 3
for others' property, let it not even be named among
you, as is right for saints; and let there be no low 4
behaviour, or foolish talk, or words said in sport, which
are not right, but in place of them the giving of praise.
Being certain of this, that no man who gives way to the 5
passions of the flesh, no unclean person, or one who has
desire for the property of others, or who gives worship
to images, has any heritage in the kingdom of Christ
and God. Do not be turned from the right way by 6
foolish words; for because of these things the punish-
ment of God comes on those who do not put themselves
under him. Have no part with such men; for you at one 7 8
time were dark, but now are light in the Lord: let your
behaviour be that of children of light (because the fruit 9
of the light is in all righteousness and in everything
which is good and true), testing by experience what is 10
well-pleasing to the Lord; and have no company with 11
the works of the dark, which give no fruit, but make their
true quality clear; for the things which are done by them 12
in secret it is shame even to put into words. But all 13
things, when their true quality is seen, are made clear
by the light: because everything which is made clear is
light. For this reason he says, "Be awake, you who are 14
sleeping, and come up from among the dead, and Christ
will be your light".

Take care then how you are living, not as unwise, 15
but as wise; making good use of the time, because the 16
days are evil. For this reason, then, be not foolish, but 17
be conscious of the Lord's pleasure. And do not take 18
overmuch wine by which one may be overcome, but be
full of the Spirit; joining with one another in holy songs 19

of praise and of the Spirit, using your voice in songs and
making melody in your heart to the Lord; giving praise 20
at all times for all things in the name of our Lord Jesus
Christ, to God, even the Father; letting yourselves be 21
ruled by one another in the fear of Christ.

Wives, be under the authority of your husbands, as 22
of the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife, 23
as Christ is the head of the church, being himself the
saviour of the body. And as the church is under Christ's 24
authority, so let wives be under the rule of their husbands
in all things. Husbands, have love for your wives, even 25
as Christ had love for the church, and gave himself for
it; so that he might make it holy, having made it clean 26
with the washing of water by the word, that he might 27
take it for himself, a church full of glory, not having one
mark or fold or any such thing; but that it might be holy
and complete. Even so it is right for husbands to have 28
love for their wives as for their bodies. He who has
love for his wife has love for himself: for no man ever 29
had hate for his flesh; but he gives it food and takes care
of it, even as Christ does for the church; because we are 30
parts of his body. For this cause will a man go away 31
from his father and mother, and be joined to his wife;
and the two will become one flesh. This is a great secret: 32
but my words are about Christ and the church. But do 33
you, everyone, have love for his wife, even as for him-
self; and let the wife see that she has respect for her
husband.

6 CHILDREN, do what is ordered by your fathers and 1
mothers in the Lord: for this is right. Give honour 2
to your father and mother (which is the first rule
having a reward), so that all may be well for you, and 3
your life may be long on the earth. And, you fathers, 4
do not make your children angry: but give them training
in the teaching and fear of the Lord.

Servants, do what is ordered by those who are your 5
natural masters, having respect and fear for them, with

all your heart, as to Christ; not only under your master's 6
eye, as pleasers of men; but as servants of Christ, doing
the pleasure of God from the heart; doing your work 7
readily, as to the Lord, and not to men: in the knowledge 8
that for every good thing anyone does, he will have his
reward from the Lord, if he is a servant or if he is free.
And, you masters, do the same things to them, not 9
making use of violent words: in the knowledge that their
Master and yours is in heaven, and he has no respect
for a man's position.

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

Lastly, be strong in the Lord, and in the strength of 10
his power. Take up God's instruments of war, so that 11
you may be able to keep your position against all the
deceits of the Evil One. For our fight is not against flesh 12
and blood, but against authorities and powers, against
the world-rulers of this dark night, against the spirits
of evil in the heavens. For this reason take up all the 13
arms of God, so that you may be able to be strong in the
evil day, and, having done all, to keep your place. Take 14
your place, then, having your body clothed with the true
word, and having put on the breastplate of righteous-
ness; be ready with the good news of peace as shoes on 15
your feet; and most of all, using faith as a cover to keep 16
off all the flaming arrows of the Evil One. And take 17
salvation for your head-dress and the sword of the Spirit,
which is the word of God: with prayers and deep desires, 18
making requests at all times in the Spirit, and keeping
watch, with strong purpose, in prayer for all the saints,
and for me, that words may be given to me in the 19
opening of my mouth, to make clear without fear the
secret of the good news, for which I am a representative 20
in chains, and that I may say without fear the things
which it is right for me to say.

But so that you may have knowledge of my business, 21
and how I am, Tychicus, the well-loved brother and

tested servant in the Lord, will give you news of all
things: whom I have sent to you for this very purpose, 22
so that you may have knowledge of our position, and
that he may give comfort to your hearts.

Peace be to the brothers, and love with faith, from 23
God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be 24
with all those who have true love for our Lord Jesus
Christ.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE PHILIPPIANS

1 PAUL and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ, to all 1
the saints in Christ Jesus at Philippi, with the
Bishops and Deacons of the church: Grace to you 2
and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus
Christ.

I give praise to my God at every memory of you, 3
and in all my prayers for you all, making my request 4
with joy, because of your help in giving the good news 5
from the first day till now; for I am certain of this very 6
thing, that he by whom the good work was started in
you will make it complete till the day of Jesus Christ:
so it is right for me to take thought for you all in this 7
way, because I have you in my heart; for in my chains,
and in my arguments before the judges in support of the
good news, making clear that it is true, you all have
your part with me in grace. For God is my witness, how 8
my love goes out to you all in the loving mercies of
Christ Jesus. And my prayer is that you may be increased 9
more and more in knowledge and experience; so that 10
you may give your approval to the best things; that
you may be true and without wrongdoing till the day of
Christ; being full of the fruits of righteousness, which 11
are through Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God.

TROUBLE TURNED TO JOY

Now it is my purpose to make clear to you, brothers, 12
that the cause of the good news has been helped by my
experiences; so that it became clear through all the 13
Praetorium, and to all the rest, that I was a prisoner on
account of Christ; and most of the brothers in the Lord, 14
taking heart because of my chains, are all the stronger

to give the word of God without fear. Though some are 15
preaching Christ out of envy and competition, others do
it out of a good heart: these do it from love, conscious 16
that I am responsible for the cause of the good news:
but those are preaching Christ in a spirit of competition, 17
not from their hearts, but with the purpose of giving me
pain in my prison. What then? only that in every way, 18
falsely or truly, the preaching of Christ goes on; and in
this I am glad, and will be glad. For I am conscious 19
that this will be for my salvation, through your prayer
and the giving out of the stored wealth of the Spirit of
Jesus Christ, in the measure of my strong hope and 20
belief that in nothing will I be put to shame, but that
without fear, as at all times, so now will Christ have
glory in my body, by life or by death. For to me life 21
is Christ and death is profit. But if I go on living in the 22
flesh—if this is the fruit of my work—then I do not see
what decision to make. I am in a hard position between 23
the two, having a desire to go away and be with Christ,
which is very much better: still, to go on in the flesh is 24
more necessary because of you. And being certain of 25
this, I am conscious that I will go on, yes, and go on
with you all, for your growth and joy in the faith; so 26
that your pride in me may be increased in Christ Jesus
through my being present with you again. Only let 27
your behaviour do credit to the good news of Christ, so
that if I come and see you or if I am away from you,
I may have news of you that you are strong in one spirit,
working together with one soul for the faith of the good
news; having no fear of those who are against you; 28
which is a clear sign of their destruction, but of your
salvation, and that from God; because to you it has been 29
given in the cause of Christ not only to have faith in him,
but to undergo pain on his account: fighting the same 30
fight which you saw in me, and now have word of in me.

UNITING OF HEARTS

2 If then there is any comfort in Christ, any help given 1
by love, any uniting of hearts in the Spirit, any loving
mercies and pity, make my joy complete by being of 2
the same mind, having the same love, being in harmony
and of one mind; doing nothing through envy or through 3
pride, but with low thoughts of self let everyone take
others to be better than himself; not looking everyone 4
to his private good, but keeping in mind the things of
others. Let this mind be in you which was in Christ 5
Jesus, to whom, being in the form of God, it did not 6
seem that to be equal with God was a thing to be taken
by force, but he made himself as nothing, taking the form 7
of a servant, being made like men; and being seen in 8
form as a man, he took the lowest place, and let himself
be put to death, even the death of the cross. For this 9
reason God has put him in the highest place and has
given to him the name which is greater than every name;
so that at the name of Jesus every knee may be bent, of 10
things in heaven and things on earth and things under
the earth, and that every tongue may give witness that 11
Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

WITHOUT PROTESTS AND ARGUMENTS

So then, my loved ones, as you have at all times done 12
what I say, not only when I am present, but now much
more when I am not with you, give yourselves to working
out your salvation with fear in your hearts; for it is God 13
who is the cause of your desires and of your acts, for his
good pleasure. Do all things without protests and argu- 14
ments; so that you may be holy and gentle, children of 15
God without sin, in a twisted and foolish generation,
among whom you are seen as lights in the world,
offering the word of life; so that I may have glory in 16
you in the day of Christ, because my running was not
for nothing and my work was not without effect. And 17

even if I am offered like a drink-offering, giving myself for the cause and work of your faith, I am glad and have joy with you all: and in the same way do you be glad 18
and have a part in my joy.

But I am hoping in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy 19
to you before long, so that I may be comforted when I have news of you. For I have no man of like mind who 20
will truly have care for you. For they all go after what 21
is theirs, not after the things of Christ. But his quality 22
is clear to you; how, as a child is to its father, so he was a help to me in the work of the good news. Him then 23
I am hoping to send as quickly as possible, when I am able to see how things will go for me: but I have faith 24
in the Lord that I myself will come before long. But it 25
seemed to me necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, who has taken part with me in the work and in the fight, and your servant, sent by you for help in my need; because his heart was with you all, and he 26
was greatly troubled because you had news that he was ill: for in fact he was ill almost to death: but God had 27
mercy on him; and not only on him but on me, so that I might not have grief on grief. I have sent him, then, 28
the more gladly, so that when you see him again, you may be happy and I may have the less sorrow. So take 29
him to your hearts in the Lord with all joy, and give honour to such as he is: because for the work of Christ 30
he was near to death, putting his life in danger to make your care for me complete.

THE REWARD OF LIFE FROM THE DEAD

3 FOR the rest, my brothers, be glad in the Lord. 1
Writing the same things to you is no trouble to me, and for you it is safe. Be on the watch against 2
dogs, against the workers of evil, against those of the circumcision: for we are the circumcision, who give 3
worship to God and have glory in Jesus Christ, and have no faith in the flesh: even though I myself might have 4

faith in the flesh: if any other man has reason to have
faith in the flesh, I have more: being given circumcision 5
on the eighth day, of the nation of Israel, of the tribe of
Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; in relation to the law,
a Pharisee: in bitter hate I was cruel to the church; 6
I kept all the righteousness of the law to the last detail.
But those things which were profit to me, I gave up for 7
Christ. Yes truly, and I am ready to give up all things 8
for the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, which is
more than all: for whom I have undergone the loss of
all things, and to me they are less than nothing, so that
I may have Christ as my reward, and be seen in him, 9
not having my righteousness which is of the law, but
that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness
which is of God by faith: that I may have knowledge of 10
him, and of the power by which he came again from the
dead, and a part with him in his pains, becoming like
him in his death; if in any way I may have the reward of 11
life from the dead. Not as if I had even now got the 12
reward or been made complete: but I go on in the hope
that I may come to the knowledge of that for which I
was made the servant of Christ Jesus. Brothers, it is 13
clear to me that I have not come to that knowledge; but
one thing I do, letting go those things which are past,
and stretching out to the things which are before, I go 14
forward to the mark, even the reward of the high purpose
of God in Christ Jesus. Then let us all, who have come 15
to full growth, be of this mind: and if in anything you
are of a different mind, even this will God make clear to
you: only, as far as we have got, let us be guided by the 16
same rule.

Brothers, take me as your example, and take note of 17
those who are walking after the example we have given.
For there are those, of whom I have given you word 18
before, and do so now with sorrow, who are haters of
the cross of Christ; whose end is destruction, whose god 19
is the stomach, and whose glory is in their shame, whose
minds are fixed on the things of the earth. For our 20

country is in heaven; from where the Saviour for whom we are waiting will come, even the Lord Jesus Christ: by whom this poor body of ours will be changed into the 21
image of the body of his glory, in the measure of the working by which he is able to put all things under himself.

BE GLAD IN THE LORD

4 So my brothers, well-loved and very dear to me, my 1
joy and crown, be strong in the Lord, my loved ones.

I make request to Euodias and Syntyche to be of the 2
same mind in the Lord. And I make request to you, 3
true helper in my work, to see to the needs of those women who took part with me in the good news, with Clement and the rest of my brother-workers whose names are in the book of life.

Be glad in the Lord at all times: again I say, Be glad. 4
Let your gentle behaviour be clear to all men. The Lord 5
is near. Have no cares; but in everything with prayer 6
and praise put your requests before God. And the peace 7
of God, which is deeper than all knowledge, will keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.

For the rest, my brothers, whatever things are true, 8
whatever things have honour, whatever things are upright, whatever things are holy, whatever things are beautiful, whatever things are of value, if there is any virtue and if there is any praise, give thought to these things. The things which came to you by my teaching 9
and preaching, and which you saw in me, these things do, and the God of peace will be with you.

But I am very glad in the Lord that your care for 10
me has come to life again; though you did in fact take thought for me, but you were not able to give effect to it. But I will not say anything about my needs, for I am 11
able, wherever I am, to be dependent on myself. It is 12
the same to me if I am looked down on or honoured; everywhere and in all things I have the secret of how

to be full and how to go without food; how to have
wealth and how to be in need. I am able to do all things 13
through him who gives me strength. But you did well 14
to have care for me in my need. And you have know- 15
ledge, Philippians, that when the good news first came
to you, when I went away from Macedonia, no church
took part with me in the business of giving to the saints,
but you only; because even in Thessalonica you sent 16
once and again to me in my need. Not that I am looking 17
for an offering, but for fruit which may be put to your
credit. I have all things and more than enough: I am 18
made full, having had from Epaphroditus the things
which came from you, a perfume of a sweet smell, an
offering well-pleasing to God. And my God will give 19
you all you have need of from the wealth of his glory in
Christ Jesus. Now to God our Father be glory for ever 20
and ever. So be it.

Give words of love to every saint in Christ Jesus. The 21
brothers who are with me send you their love. All the 22
saints send their love to you, specially those who are of
Caesar's house.

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. 23

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO THE COLOSSIANS

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the purpose of 1
God, and Timothy our brother, to the saints and 2
true brothers in Christ at Colossae: Grace to you
and peace from God our Father.

We give praise to God the Father of our Lord Jesus 3
Christ, making prayer for you at all times, after hearing 4
of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which you
have for all the saints, through the hope which is in store 5
for you in heaven; knowledge of which was given to you
before in the true word of the good news, which has 6
come to you; and which in all the world is giving fruit
and increase, as it has done in you from the day when it
came to your ears and you had true knowledge of the
grace of God; as it was given to you by Epaphras, our 7
well-loved helper, who is a true servant of Christ for
us, and who, himself, made clear to us your love in the 8
Spirit.

PRAYER AND PRAISE

For this reason, we, from the day when we had word 9
of it, keep on in prayer for you, that you may be full
of the knowledge of his purpose, with all wisdom and
experience of the Spirit, living uprightly in the approval 10
of the Lord, giving fruit in every good work, and in-
creasing in the knowledge of God; full of strength in 11
the measure of the great power of his glory, so that you
may undergo all troubles with joy; giving praise to the 12
Father who has given us a part in the heritage of the
saints in light; who has made us free from the power of 13
evil and given us a place in the kingdom of the Son of
his love; in whom we have our salvation, the forgiveness 14
of sins: who is the image of the unseen God, coming into 15
existence before all living things; for by him all things 16
were made, in heaven and on earth, things seen and

things unseen, authorities, lords, rulers, and powers; all
things were made by him and for him; he is before all 17
things, and in him all things have being. And he is the 18
head of the body, the church: the starting point of all
things, the first to come again from the dead; so that in
all things he might have the chief place. For God in 19
full measure was pleased to be in him; through him 20
uniting all things with himself, having made peace
through the blood of his cross; through him, I say,
uniting all things which are on earth or in heaven. And 21
you, who in the past were cut off and at war with God
in your minds through evil works, he has now made one
in the body of his flesh through death, so that you might 22
be holy and without sin and free from all evil before
him: if you go on fixed and safely based in the faith, not 23
moved from the hope of the good news which came to
you, and which was given to every living being under
heaven; of which I Paul was made a servant.

Now I have joy in my pain because of you, and in my 24
flesh I undergo whatever is still needed to make the
sorrows of Christ complete, for the salvation of his body,
the church; of which I became a servant by the purpose 25
of God which was given to me for you, to give effect to
the word of God, the secret which has been kept from all 26
times and generations, but has now been made clear to
his saints, to whom God was pleased to give knowledge 27
of the wealth of the glory of this secret among the
Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:
whom we are preaching; guiding and teaching every 28
man in all wisdom, so that every man may be complete
in Christ; and for this purpose I am working, using all 29
my strength by the help of his power which is working
in me strongly.

UNCHANGING FAITH IN CHRIST

2 FOR it is my desire to give you news of the great 1
fight I am making for you and for those at Laodicea,
and for all who have not seen my face in the flesh;
so that their hearts may be comforted, and that being 2

joined together in love, they may come to the full wealth
of the certain knowledge of the secret of God, even
Christ, in whom are all the secret stores of wisdom and 3
knowledge. I say this so that you may not be turned 4
away by any deceit of words. For though I am not 5
present in the flesh, still I am with you in the spirit,
seeing with joy your order, and your unchanging faith
in Christ.

As, then, you took Christ Jesus the Lord, so go on in 6
him, rooted and based together in him, strong in the 7
faith which the teaching gave you, giving praise to God
at all times.

Take care that no one takes you away by force, through 8
man's wisdom and deceit, going after the beliefs of men
and the theories of the world, and not after Christ: for 9
in him all the wealth of God's being has a living form,
and you are complete in him, who is the head of all rule 10
and authority: in whom you had a circumcision not made 11
with hands, in the putting off of the body of the flesh,
in the circumcision of Christ; having been put to death 12
with him in baptism, by which you came to life again
with him, through faith in the working of God, who
made him come back from the dead. And you, being 13
dead through your sins and the evil condition of your
flesh, to you, I say, he gave life together with him, and
forgiveness of all our sins; having put an end to the 14
handwriting of the law which was against us, taking it
out of the way by nailing it to his cross; having made 15
himself free from the rule of authorities and powers, he
put them openly to shame, glorying over them in it.

For this reason let no man be your judge in any 16
question of food or drink or feast days or new moons or
Sabbaths: for these are an image of the things which are 17
to come; but the body is Christ's. Let no man take your 18
reward from you by consciously making little of himself
and giving worship to angels; having his thoughts fixed
on the things which he has seen, being foolishly lifted
up in his natural mind, and not joined to the Head, from 19
whom all the body, being given strength and kept

together through its joins and bands, has its growth with the increase of God.

If you were made free, by your death with Christ, 20
from the rules of the world, why do you put yourselves
under the authority of orders which say there may be 21
no touching, tasting, or taking in your hands, (rules 22
which are all to come to an end with their use) after the
orders and teaching of men? These things seem to have 23
a sort of wisdom in self-ordered worship and making
little of oneself, and being cruel to the body, not honour-
ing it by giving it its natural use.

A NEW LIFE WITH CHRIST

3 If then you have a new life with Christ, give your 1
attention to the things of heaven, where Christ is
seated at the right hand of God. Keep your mind on 2
the higher things, not on the things of earth. For your 3
life on earth is done, and you have a secret life with
Christ in God. At the coming of Christ who is our life, 4
you will be seen with him in glory.

Then put to death your bodies which are of the earth; 5
wrong use of the flesh, unclean things, passion, evil
desires and envy, which is the worship of strange gods;
because of which the wrath of God comes on those who 6
go against his orders; among whom you were living in 7
the past, when you did such things. But now it is right 8
for you to put away all these things; wrath, passion, bad
feeling, curses, unclean talk; do not make false state- 9
ments to one another; because you have put away the
old man with all his doings, and have put on the new 10
man, which has become new in knowledge after the
image of his maker; where there is no Greek or Jew, 11
no one with circumcision or without circumcision, no
division between nations, no servant or free man: but
Christ is all and in all.

As saints of God, then, holy and dearly-loved, let 12
your behaviour be marked by pity and mercy, kind

feeling, a low opinion of yourselves, gentle ways, and
a power of undergoing all things; being gentle to one 13
another and having forgiveness for one another, if any-
one has done wrong to his brother, even as the Lord had
forgiveness for you: and more than all, have love; the 14
only way in which you may be completely joined together.
And let the peace of Christ be ruling in your hearts, as 15
it was the purpose of God for you to be one body; and
give praise to God at all times. Let the word of Christ 16
be in you in all wealth of wisdom; teaching and helping
one another with songs of praise and holy words, making
melody to God with grace in your hearts. And whatever 17
you do, in word or in act, do all in the name of the Lord
Jesus, giving praise to God the Father through him.

Wives, be under the authority of your husbands, as 18
is right in the Lord. Husbands, have love for your wives, 19
and be not bitter against them. Children, do the orders 20
of your fathers and mothers in all things, for this is
pleasing to the Lord. Fathers, do not be hard on your 21
children, so that their spirit may not be broken. Servants, 22
in all things do the orders of your natural masters; not
only when their eyes are on you, as pleasers of men, but
with all your heart, fearing the Lord: whatever you do, 23
do it readily, as to the Lord and not to men; being 24
certain that the Lord will give you the reward of the
heritage: for you are the servants of the Lord Christ.
For the wrongdoer will have punishment for the wrong 25
he has done, without respect for any man's position.
4 Masters, give your servants what is right and equal, 1
conscious that you have a Master in heaven.

WORD FROM THE BROTHER-WORKERS

GIVE yourselves to prayer at all times, keeping 2
watch with praise; and making prayer for us, that 3
God may give us an open door for the preaching
of the word, the secret of Christ, for which I am now in
chains; so that I may make it clear, as it is right for me 4

to do. Be wise in your behaviour to those who are 5
outside, making good use of the time. Let your talk be 6
with grace, mixed with salt, so that you may be able to
give an answer to everyone.

Tychicus will give you news of all my business: he is 7
a dear brother and true servant and helper in the word;
and I have sent him to you for this very purpose, so that 8
you may have news of how we are, and so that he may
give your hearts comfort; and with him I have sent 9
Onesimus, the true and well-loved brother, who is one
of you. They will give you word of everything which is
taking place here.

Aristarchus, my brother-prisoner, sends his love to 10
you, and Mark, a relation of Barnabas (about whom you
have been given orders: if he comes to you, be kind to
him), and Jesus, whose other name is Justus; these are 11
of the circumcision: they are my only brother-workers
for the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort to me.
Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ Jesus, 12
sends you his love, ever taking thought for you in his
prayers, that you may be complete and fully certain of
all the purpose of God. For I give witness of him that 13
he has undergone much trouble for you and for those in
Laodicea and in Hierapolis. Luke, our well-loved medical 14
friend, and Demas, send you their love. Give my love 15
to the brothers in Laodicea and to Nymphas and the
church in their house. And when this letter has been 16
made public among you, let the same be done in the
church of Laodicea; and see that you have the letter from
Laodicea. Say to Archippus, "See that you do the work 17
which the Lord has given you to do".

I, Paul, give you this word of love in my handwriting. 18
Keep in memory that I am a prisoner. Grace be with
you.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

1 PAUL and Silvanus and Timothy, to the church of 1
the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord
Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace.

MARKED OUT BY GOD'S PURPOSE

We give praise to God at all times for you, keeping 2
you in memory in our prayers; having ever in mind your 3
work of faith and acts of love and the strength of your
hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, before our God and
Father; being conscious, my brothers, dear to God, that 4
you have been marked out by God's purpose; because 5
our good news came to you, not in word only, but in
power, and in the Holy Spirit, so that you were com-
pletely certain of it; even as you saw what our behaviour
to you was like from our love to you. And you took us 6
and the Lord as your example, after the word had come
to you in much trouble, with joy in the Holy Spirit; so 7
that you became an example to all those who have faith
in Christ in Macedonia and Achaia. For not only was 8
the word of the Lord sounding out from you in Mace-
donia and Achaia, but in every place your faith in God
is made clear; so that we have no need to say anything.
For they themselves give the news of how we came 9
among you; and how you were turned from images to
God, to the worship of a true and living God, waiting 10
for his Son from heaven, who came back from the dead,
even Jesus, our Saviour from the wrath to come.

MEMORIES OF THESSALONICA

2 FOR you yourselves, brothers, are conscious that our 1
coming among you was not without effect: but after 2
we had first undergone much pain and been cruelly
attacked as you saw, at Philippi, by the help of God we
gave you the good news without fear, though everything
was against us. For our witness does not come from 3
error or from an unclean heart or from deceit: but even 4
as the good news was given to us by the approval of
God, so we give it out; not as pleasing men, but God
by whom our hearts are tested. For it is common 5
knowledge among you that we never made use of smooth-
sounding false words, and God is witness that at no
time were we secretly desiring profit for ourselves; or 6
looking for glory from men, from you or from others,
when we might have made ourselves a care to you as
Apostles of Christ. But we were gentle among you, 7
like a woman caring for her little ones: even so, being 8
full of loving desire for you, we took delight in giving
you not only God's good news, but even our lives,
because you were dear to us. For you have the memory, 9
my brothers, of our trouble and care; how, working night
and day, so that we might not be a trouble to any of you,
we gave you the good news of God. You are witnesses, 10
with God, how holy and upright and free from all evil
was our way of life among you who have faith; even as 11
you saw how, like a father with his children, we were
teaching and comforting you all, and giving witness, so 12
that your lives might be pleasing to God, who has given
you a part in his kingdom and his glory.

And for this cause we still give praise to God, that, 13
when the word came to your ears through us, you took
it, not as the word of man, but, as it truly is, the word of
God, which has living power in you who have faith.
For you, my brothers, took as your examples the churches 14
of God which are in Judaea in Christ Jesus; because you
underwent the same things from your countrymen as

they did from the Jews; who put to death the Lord Jesus 15
and the prophets, violently driving us out; who are
unpleasing to God and against all men; who, to make 16
the measure of their sins complete, kept us from giving
the word of salvation to the Gentiles: but the wrath of
God is about to come on them in the fullest degree.

But we, my brothers, being away from you for a short 17
time, in body but not in heart, had all the more desire
to see your face; for which reason we made attempts to 18
come to you, even I, Paul, once and again; but Satan
kept us from coming. For what is our hope or joy or 19
crown of glory? Are not even you, before our Lord
Jesus, at his coming? For you are our glory and our 20
joy.

GOD'S PURPOSE

3 At last our desire to have news of you was so strong, 1
that while we ourselves were waiting at Athens,
we sent Timothy, our brother and God's servant 2
in the good news of Christ, to give you strength and
comfort in your faith; so that no man might be moved 3
by these troubles; because you see that these things are
part of God's purpose for us. And when we were with 4
you, we said to you that trouble was before us; and so
it came about, as you see. For this cause, when I was 5
no longer able to keep quiet, I sent to get news of your
faith, fearing that you might be tested by the Evil One
and that our work might come to nothing. But now 6
that Timothy has come to us from you, and given us
good news of your faith and love, and that you have
happy memories of us, desiring greatly to see us, even
as we do to see you; for this cause, brothers, in all our 7
trouble and grief we were comforted about you because
of your faith; for it is life to us if you keep your faith 8
in the Lord unchanged. For how great is the praise 9
which we give to God for you, and how great the joy
with which we are glad because of you before our God;

night and day requesting God again and again that we 10
may see your face and make your faith complete.

Now may our God and Father himself, and our Lord 11
Jesus, make a way for us to come to you; and the 12
Lord give you increase of love in fullest measure to one
another and to all men, even as our love to you; so that 13
your hearts may be strong and free from all sin before
our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus
with all his saints.

4 AND last of all, the prayer which we make to you 1
from our heart and in the name of the Lord Jesus,
is this: that as we made clear to you what sort of
behaviour is pleasing to God, as in fact you are doing
now, so you will go on in these ways, but more and
more. Because you have in mind the orders we gave 2
you through the Lord Jesus. For the purpose of God 3
for you is this: that you may be holy, and may keep
yourselves from the desires of the flesh; so that every 4
one of you may keep his body holy and in honour; not 5
in the passion of evil desires, like the Gentiles, who
have no knowledge of God; and that no man may make 6
attempts to get the better of his brother in business: for
the Lord is the judge in all these things, as we said to
you before and gave witness. Because it is God's purpose 7
that our way of life may be not unclean but holy.
Whoever, then, goes against this word, goes against not 8
man but God, who gives his Holy Spirit to you.

But about loving the brothers, there is no need for 9
me to say anything to you in this letter: for you have
the teaching of God that love for one another is right
and necessary; and, truly, you are lovers of all the 10
brothers in Macedonia; but it is our desire that your
love may be increased still more; and that you may take 11
pride in being quiet and doing your business, working
with your hands as we gave you orders; that you may 12
be respected by those who are outside, and may have
need of nothing.

AT THE LAST DAY

But it is our desire, brothers, that you may be certain 13
about those who are sleeping; so that you may have no
need for sorrow, as others have who are without hope.
For if we have faith that Jesus underwent death and 14
came back again, even so those who are sleeping will
come again with him by God's power. For this we say 15
to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are still
living at the coming of the Lord, will not go before those
who are sleeping. Because the Lord himself will come 16
down from heaven with a word of authority, with the
voice of the chief angel, with the sound of a horn: and
the dead in Christ will come to life first; then we who 17
are still living will be taken up together with them into
the clouds to see the Lord in the air: and so will we be
for ever with the Lord. So then, give comfort to one 18
another with these words.

LIKE A THIEF IN THE NIGHT

5 BUT about the times and their order, my brothers, 1
there is no need for me to say anything to you.
For you yourselves have the knowledge that the 2
day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night. When 3
they say, "There is peace and no danger," then sudden
destruction will come on them, as birth-pains on a woman
with child; and they will not be able to get away from it.
But you, my brothers, are not in the dark, for that day 4
to overtake you like a thief: for you are all sons of light 5
and of the day: we are not of the night or of the dark.
So then, let us not take our rest as the others do, but 6
let us be self-controlled and awake. For those who are 7
sleeping do so in the night; and those who are the worse
for drink are so in the night; but let us, who are of the 8
day, be serious, putting on the breastplate of faith and
love, and on our heads, the hope of salvation. For God's 9
purpose for us is not wrath, but salvation through our

Lord Jesus Christ, who was put to death for us, so that, 10
awake or sleeping, we may have a part in his life. So 11
then, go on comforting and building up one another, as
you have been doing.

CONTROL AND SUPPORT

But we make this request to you, my brothers: give 12
attention to those who are working among you, who
are over you in the Lord to keep order among you; and 13
have a high opinion of them in love because of their
work. Be at peace among yourselves. And our desire 14
is that you will keep control over those whose lives are
not well ordered, giving comfort to the feeble-hearted,
supporting those with little strength, and putting up
with much from all. Let no one give evil for evil; but 15
ever go after what is good, for one another and for all.
Have joy at all times. Keep on with your prayers. 16 17
In everything give praise: for this is the purpose of 18
God in Christ Jesus for you. Do not put out the light 19
of the Spirit; do not make little of the words of the 20
prophets; let all things be tested; keep to what is good; 21
keep from every form of evil. 22

And may the God of peace himself make you holy in 23
every way; and may your spirit and soul and body be
free from all sin at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
God, by whom you have been marked out in his purpose, 24
is unchanging and will make it complete.

Brothers, keep us in mind in your prayers. 25

Give all the brothers a holy kiss. I give orders in the 26 27
name of the Lord that all the brothers are to be present
at the reading of this letter.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. 28

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO THE THESSALONIANS

1 PAUL and Silvanus and Timothy, to the church of 1
the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord
Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace, from God the 2
Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is right for us to give praise to God at all times for 3
you, brothers, because of the great increase of your faith,
and the wealth of your love for one another; so that we 4
ourselves take pride in you in the churches of God for
your untroubled mind and your faith in all the troubles
and sorrows which you are going through; which is a 5
clear sign of the decision which God in his righteousness
has made; to give you a part in his kingdom, for which
you have undergone this pain; for it is an act of righteous- 6
ness on God's part to give trouble as their reward to
those who are troubling you, and to you who are 7
troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus comes from
heaven with the angels of his power in flames of fire,
to give punishment to those who have no knowledge of 8
God, and to those who do not give ear to the good news
of our Lord Jesus: whose reward will be eternal de- 9
struction from the face of the Lord and from the glory
of his strength, at his coming, when he will have glory 10
in his saints, and will be a cause of wonder in all those
who had faith (because our witness among you had
effect) in that day. For this reason, you are ever in our 11
prayers, that you may seem to our God such as may
have a part in his purpose and that by his power he will
make all his good purpose, and the work of faith, com-
plete; so that glory may be given to the name of our 12
Lord Jesus through you, and you may have glory in him,
by the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE COMING OF THE LORD

2 Now as to the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, 1
and our meeting with him, it is our desire, my
brothers, that you may not be moved in mind or 2
troubled by a spirit, or by a word, or by a letter as from
us, with the suggestion that the day of the Lord is even
now come; give no belief to false words: because there 3
will first be a falling away from the faith, and the revela-
tion of the man of sin, the son of destruction, who puts 4
himself against all authority, lifting himself up over all
which is named God or is given worship; so that he
takes his seat in the house of God, putting himself
forward as God. Have you no memory of what I said 5
when I was with you, giving you word of these things?
And now it is clear to you what is keeping back his 6
revelation till the time comes for him to be seen. For 7
the secret of evil is even now at work: but there is one
who is keeping back the evil till he is taken out of the
way. And then will come the revelation of that evil one, 8
whom the Lord Jesus will put to death with the breath
of his mouth, and give to destruction by the revelation
of his coming; even the one whose coming is marked 9
by the working of Satan, with all power and signs and
false wonders, and with every deceit of wrongdoing 10
among those whose fate is destruction; because they
were quite without that love of the true faith by which
they might have salvation. And for this cause, God will 11
give them up to the power of deceit and they will put
their faith in what is false: so that they all may be judged, 12
who had no faith in what is true, but took pleasure in
evil.

WORDS OF COMFORT AND PRAYER

But it is right for us to give praise to God at all times 13
for you, brothers, loved by the Lord, because it was the
purpose of God from the first that you might have
salvation, being made holy by the Spirit and by faith

in what is true: and in this purpose he gave you a part 14
through the good news of which we were the preachers,
even that you might have a part in the glory of our Lord
Jesus Christ. So then, brothers, be strong in purpose, 15
and keep the teaching which has been given to you by
word or by letter from us.

Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our 16
Father who had love for us and has given us eternal
comfort and good hope through grace, give you comfort 17
and strength in every good work and word.

3 FOR the rest, my brothers, let there be prayer for us 1
that the word of the Lord may go forward with
increasing glory, even as it does with you; and that 2
we may be made free from foolish and evil men; for not
all have faith. But the Lord is true, who will give you 3
strength and keep you safe from evil. And we have faith 4
in the Lord about you, that you are doing and will do
the things about which we give you orders. And may 5
your hearts be guided by the Lord into the love of God
and quiet waiting for Christ.

NO WORK, NO FOOD

Now we give you orders, brothers, in the name of our 6
Lord Jesus Christ, to keep away from all those whose
behaviour is not well ordered and in harmony with the
teaching which they had from us. For you yourselves 7
are used to taking us as your example, because our life
among you was ruled by order, and we did not take food 8
from any man for nothing, but were working hard night
and day not to be a trouble to any of you: not because 9
we have not the right, but to make ourselves an example
to you, so that you might do the same. For even when 10
we were with you we gave you orders, saying, If any
man does no work, let him not have food. For it has 11
come to our ears that there are some among you whose
behaviour is uncontrolled, who do no work at all, but

are over-interested in the business of others. Now to 12
such we give orders and make request in the Lord Jesus,
that, working quietly, they get their living. And you, 13
my brothers, do not get tired of well-doing. And if any 14
man does not give attention to what we have said in this
letter, take note of that man, and keep away from him,
so that he may be shamed. Have no feeling of hate for 15
him, but take him in hand seriously as a brother.

Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace at all 16
times and in every way. May the Lord be with you all.

These words of love to you at the end are in my 17
writing, Paul's writing, and this is the mark of every
letter from me. May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ 18
be with you all.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the order of 1
God our Saviour and Christ Jesus our hope; to 2
Timothy, my true child in the faith: Grace,
mercy, peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our
Lord.

A RIGHT USE OF THE LAW

It was my desire, when I went on into Macedonia, 3
that you might make a stop at Ephesus, to give orders
to certain men not to put forward a different teaching,
or to give attention to stories and long lists of genera- 4
tions, from which come questionings and doubts, in
place of God's ordered way of life which is in faith; but 5
the effect of the order is love coming from a clean heart,
and a knowledge of what is right, and true faith: from 6
which some have been turned away, giving themselves
to foolish talking; desiring to be teachers of the law, 7
though they have no knowledge of what they say or of
the statements which they make so certainly. We are 8
conscious that the law is good, if a man makes a right
use of it, with the knowledge that the law is made, not 9
for the upright man, but for those who have no respect
for law and order, for evil men and sinners, for the
unholy and those who have no religion, for those who
put their fathers or mothers to death, for takers of life,
for those who go after loose women, for those with 10
unnatural desires, for those who take men prisoners,
who make false statements and false oaths, and those
who do any other things against the right teaching,
which may be seen in the good news of the glory of the 11
great God, which was given into my care.

I give praise to him who gave me power, Christ Jesus 12

our Lord, because he took me to be true, making me his servant, though I had said violent words against God, 13
and done cruel acts, causing great trouble: but I was given mercy, because I did it without knowledge, not having faith; and the grace of our Lord was very great, 14
with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. It is a true 15
saying, in which all may put their faith, that Christ Jesus came into the world to give salvation to sinners; of whom I am the chief: but for this reason I was given 16
mercy, so that in me, the chief of sinners, Jesus Christ might make clear all his mercy, as an example to those who would in the future have faith in him to eternal life.
Now to the King eternal, ever-living, unseen, the only 17
God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. So be it.

This order I give to you, Timothy my son, in harmony 18
with the words of the prophets about you, so that by them you may be strong, fighting the good fight, keeping faith, and being conscious of well-doing; for 19
some, by not doing these things, have gone wrong in relation to the faith: such are Hymenaeus and Alexander, 20
whom I have given up to Satan, so that they may say no more evil words against God.

PRAYER FOR ALL MEN

2 My desire is, first of all, that you will make 1
requests and prayers and give praise for all men;
for kings and all those in authority; so that we 2
may have a calm and quiet life in all fear of God and serious behaviour. This is good and pleasing in the eyes 3
of God our Saviour; whose desire is that all men may 4
have salvation and come to the knowledge of what is true. For there is one God and one peacemaker between 5
God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave himself 6
as an offering for all; witness of which was to be given at the right time; and of this I became a preacher and 7
an Apostle (what I say is true, not false) and a teacher of the Gentiles in the true faith.

WOMEN TO DRESS IN SIMPLE CLOTHING

It is my desire, then, that in every place men may 8
give themselves to prayer, lifting up holy hands, without
wrath or argument. And that women may be dressed 9
in simple clothing, with a quiet and serious air; not with
twisted hair and gold or jewels or robes of great price;
but clothed with good works, as is right for women who 10
are living in the fear of God. Let a woman quietly take 11
the place of a learner and be under authority. In my 12
opinion it is right for a woman not to be a teacher, or
to have rule over a man, but to be quiet. For Adam was 13
first formed, then Eve; and Adam was not taken by 14
deceit, but the woman, being tricked, became a wrong-
doer. But if they go on in faith and love and holy 15
self-control, she will be kept safe at the time of child-
birth.

RULES FOR BISHOPS AND DEACONS

3 THIS is a true saying, "A man desiring the position 1
of a Bishop has a desire for a good work". The 2
Bishop, then, is to be a man of good name, the
husband of one wife, self-controlled, serious-minded,
having respect for order, opening his house freely to
guests, a ready teacher; not quickly moved to wrath or 3
blows, but gentle; no fighter, no lover of money; ruling 4
his house well, having his children under control with all
serious behaviour; (for if a man has not the art of ruling 5
his house, how will he take care of the church of God?)
not one newly taken into the church, for fear that, through 6
his high opinion of himself, he may come into the same
sin as the Evil One. And he is to have a good name 7
among those outside the church, so that nothing may be
said against him and he may not be taken by the designs
of the Evil One. Deacons, in the same way, are to be 8
serious in their behaviour, not false in word, not given
to taking much wine or greatly desiring the wealth of
this world; keeping the secret of the faith in a heart free 9

from sin. And let these first be put to the test; then let 10
them become Deacons if there is nothing against them.
Women are to be serious in behaviour, saying no evil 11
of others, controlling themselves, true in all things. Let 12
Deacons be husbands of one wife, ruling their children
and their houses well. For those who have done good 13
work as Deacons get for themselves a good position and
become free from fear in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

I am writing these things to you, though I am hoping 14
to come to you before long; but if I am long in coming, 15
this will make clear to you what behaviour is right for
men in the house of God, which is the church of the
living God, the pillar and base of what is true. And 16
without argument, great is the secret of religion:

He who was seen in the flesh,
Who was given God's approval in the spirit,
Was seen by the angels,
Of whom the good news was given among the nations,
In whom the world had faith,
Who was taken up in glory.

AGAINST FALSE TEACHING

4 BUT the Spirit says clearly that in later times some 1
will be turned away from the faith, giving their
minds to spirits of deceit, and the teachings of evil
spirits, through the false ways of men whose words 2
are untrue, whose hearts are burned as with a heated
iron; who keep men from being married and from 3
taking food which God made to be taken with praise
by those who have faith and true knowledge. Because 4
everything which God has made is good, and nothing
is evil, if it is taken with praise: for it is made holy by 5
the word of God and by prayer.

If you keep these things before the minds of the 6
brothers, you will be a good servant of Christ Jesus,
trained in the words of the faith, and of the right teaching
which has been your guide: but have nothing to do with 7
unclean and foolish stories. Give yourself training in

religion: for the training of the body is of profit for a 8
little, but religion is of profit in every way, giving hope
for the life which now is, and for that which is to come.
This is a true saying, in which all may put their faith. 9
And this is the purpose of all our work and our fighting, 10
because our hope is in the living God, who is the Saviour
of all men, and specially of those who have faith. Let 11
these be your orders and your teaching. Let no one 12
make little of you because you are young, but be an
example to the church in word, in behaviour, in love, in
faith, in holy living. Till I come, give attention to the 13
reading of the holy Writings, to comforting the saints,
and to teaching. Make use of that grace in you, which 14
was given to you by the word of the prophets, when the
rulers of the church put their hands on you. Have a care 15
for these things; give yourself to them with all your
heart, so that all may see how you go forward. Give 16
attention to yourself and your teaching. Go on in these
things; for in doing so you will get salvation for yourself
and for those who give hearing to you.

RELATIONS WITH OLD AND YOUNG

5 Do not say sharp words to one who has authority 1
in the church, but let your talk be as to a father,
and to the younger men as to brothers: to the 2
older women as to mothers, to the younger as to sisters,
with a clean heart. Give honour to widows who are 3
truly widows. But if any widow has children or children's 4
children, let these see that it is right to take care of their
family, and their fathers and mothers: for this is pleasing
in the eyes of God. Now she who is truly a widow and 5
without family puts her hope in God, giving herself to
prayer day and night. But she who gives herself to 6
pleasure is dead while she is living. Give orders to this 7
effect, so that no evil may be said of anyone. If anyone 8
has no care for his family and those in his house, he is
false to the faith, and is worse than one who has no faith.

Let no woman be numbered among the widows who is 9
under sixty years old, and only if she has been the wife
of one man, and if witness is given of her good works; 10
if she has had the care of children, if she has been kind
to travellers, washing the feet of the saints, helping those
who are in trouble, giving herself to good works. But 11
to the younger widows say "No": for when their love
is turned away from Christ, they have a desire to be
married; and they are judged because they have been 12
false to their first faith; and they get into the way of 13
doing no work, going about from house to house; and
not only doing no work, but talking foolishly, being
over-interested in the business of others, saying things
which they have no right to say. So it is my desire that 14
the younger widows may be married and have children,
controlling their families, and giving the Evil One no
chance to say anything against them, for even now some 15
are turned away to Satan. If any woman of the faith has 16
relations who are widows, let her give them help, so that
the care of them does not come on the church, and so it
may give help to those who are truly widowed.

GOOD RULERS TO BE HONOURED

Let rulers whose rule is good be honoured twice over, 17
specially those whose work is preaching and teaching.
For the Writings say, "It is not right to keep the ox 18
from taking the grain when he is crushing it". And,
"The worker has a right to his reward". Do not take 19
as true any statement made against one in authority, but
only if two or three give witness to it. Say sharp words 20
to sinners when all are present, so that the rest may be
in fear. I give you orders before God and Christ Jesus 21
and the angels of God's selection, to keep these orders
without giving thought to one side more than another.
Do not put hands on any man without thought, and have 22
no part in other men's sins: keep yourself clean. Do not 23
take only water as your drink, but take a little wine for

the good of your stomach, and because you are frequently ill. The sins of some men are clearly seen, going before them to be judged; but with others, their sins go after them. In the same way, there are good works which are clearly seen; and those which are not so, may not be kept secret.

24 25

6 LET all who are servants under the yoke give all honour to their masters, so that no evil may be said against the name of God and his teaching. And let those whose masters are of the faith have respect for them because they are brothers, working for them the more readily, because those who take part in the good work are of the faith and are dear. Give orders and teaching about these things.

1 2

AGAINST FALSE TEACHING

If any man gives different teaching, not in agreement with the true words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and with the teaching which is in agreement with true religion, he has an over-high opinion of himself; being without knowledge, having only an unhealthy love of questionings and wars of words, from which come envy, fighting, cruel words, evil thoughts, bitter talk of men who, being evil in mind, and dead to what is true, take the faith to be a way of making profit. But true faith, with peace of mind, is of great profit: for we came into the world with nothing, and we are not able to take anything out; but if we have food and a covering over us, let that be enough. But those who have a desire for wealth are falling into danger, and are taken as in a net by a number of foolish and damaging desires, through which men are overtaken by death and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all evil: and some whose hearts were fixed on it have been turned away from the faith, and been wounded with unnumbered sorrows.

3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10

But you, O man of God, take flight from these things, 11

and go after righteousness, religion, faith, love, a quiet
mind, gentle behaviour. Be fighting the good fight of 12
the faith; take for yourself the life eternal, for which you
were marked out, and of which you gave witness in the
eyes of all. I give you orders before God, the giver of 13
life, and Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate gave
witness to the faith; to keep the word, untouched by 14
evil, clear from all shame, till the revelation of our Lord
Jesus Christ: which at the right time he will make clear, 15
who is the eternal and only Ruler, King of kings, and
Lord of lords; who only has life for ever, living in light 16
to which no man may come near; whom no man has seen
or is able to see: to whom be honour and power for ever.
So be it.

TO THOSE WHO HAVE MONEY

Give orders to those who have money and goods in 17
this life, not to be lifted up in their minds, or to put their
hope in the uncertain chances of wealth, but in God who
gives us in full measure all things for our use; and to do 18
good, having wealth in good works, being quick to give,
taking part with one another; making ready for them- 19
selves a safe place for the time to come, so that the true
life may be theirs.

O Timothy, take good care of that which is given to 20
you, turning away from the wrong and foolish talk and
arguments of that knowledge which is falsely so named;
through which some, who gave their minds to it, have 21
been turned away from the faith.

Grace be with you.

THE SECOND LETTER OF PAUL TO TIMOTHY

1 PAUL, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the purpose of 1
God, in the hope of the life which is in Christ
Jesus, to Timothy, my well-loved child: Grace, 2
mercy, peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our
Lord.

THE SPIRIT OF LOVE AND SELF-CONTROL

I give praise to God, whose servant I have been, 3
with a heart free from sin, from the time of my fathers,
because in my prayers at all times the thought of you
is with me, night and day desiring to see you, keeping 4
in my memory your weeping, so that I may be full of
joy; having in mind your true faith; which first was in 5
your mother's mother Lois, and in your mother Eunice,
and, I am certain, is now in you. For this reason I say 6
to you, Let that grace of God which is in you, given to
you by my hands, have living power. For God did not 7
give us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of
self-control. Have no feeling of shame, then, for the 8
witness of our Lord or for me, his prisoner: but undergo
all things for the good news in the measure of the power
of God; who gave us salvation; marking us out for his 9
purpose, not on account of our works, but in the measure
of his purpose and his grace, which was given to us in
Christ Jesus before times eternal, but has now been 10
made clear by the revelation of our Saviour Christ Jesus,
who put an end to death and made life unending come
to light through the good news, of which I was made a 11
preacher and an Apostle and a teacher; and for which 12
I undergo these things: but I have no feeling of shame.
For I have knowledge of him in whom I have faith, and

I am certain that he is able to keep that which I have given into his care till that day. Keep the form of those 13
true words which you had from me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. That good thing which was 14
given to you keep safe, through the Holy Spirit which is in us.

You have had news that all those in Asia went away 15
from me; among whom are Phygelus and Hermogenes: may the Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus 16
because he frequently gave me help, and had no feeling of shame because I was in chains; but when he was in 17
Rome, he went in search of me everywhere, and came to me (may he have the Lord's mercy in that day); and 18
of all he did for me at Ephesus you have full knowledge.

THE ARMY OF CHRIST JESUS

2 So then, my child, be strong in the grace which is in 1
Christ Jesus. And the things which I have said to 2
you before a number of witnesses, give to those of the faith, so that they may be teachers of others. Be 3
ready to do without the comforts of life, as one of the army of Christ Jesus. A fighting man, when he is with 4
the army, keeps himself free from the business of this life so that he may be pleasing to him who has taken him into his army. And if a man takes part in a competition 5
he does not get the crown if he has not kept the rules. It is right for the worker in the fields to be the first to 6
take of the fruit. Give thought to what I say; for the 7
Lord will give you wisdom in all things. Keep in mind 8
Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, who came back from the dead, as my good news gives witness: in which I put 9
up with the hardest conditions, even prison chains, like one who has done a crime; but the word of God is not in chains. But I undergo all things for the saints, so that 10
they may have salvation in Jesus Christ with eternal glory. This is a true saying: "If we undergo death with 11
him, then will we be living with him: if we go on to the 12

end, then we will be ruling with him: if we say we have no knowledge of him, then he will say he has no knowledge of us: if we are without faith, still he keeps faith, 13
for he will never be untrue to himself"

MEN WITH FALSE IDEAS

Put these things before them, giving them orders in 14
the name of the Lord to keep themselves from fighting about words, which is of no profit, only causing error in their hearers. Let it be your care to get the approval of 15
God, as a workman who has no cause for shame, giving the true word in the right way. But take no part in 16
wrong and foolish talk, for those who do so will go farther into evil, and their words will be like poisoned 17
wounds in the flesh: such are Hymenaeus and Philetus; men whose ideas are all false, who say that the coming 18
back from the dead has even now taken place, overturning the faith of some. But God's strong base is 19
unchanging, having this sign, "The Lord has knowledge of those who are his": and, "Let everyone by whom the name of the Lord is named be turned away from evil". Now in a great house there are not only vessels of gold 20
and silver, but others of wood and earth, and some which are honoured and some without honour. If a man makes 21
himself clean from these, he will be a vessel for honour, made holy, ready for the master's use, ready for every good work. But take flight from those desires of the 22
flesh which are strong when the body is young, and go after righteousness, faith, love, peace, with those whose prayers go up to the Lord from a clean heart. And put 23
away foolish and uncontrolled questionings, seeing that they are a cause of trouble. For it is not right for the 24
Lord's servant to make trouble, but he is to be gentle to all, ready in teaching, putting up with wrong, gently 25
guiding those who go against the teaching; if by chance God may give them a change of heart, and true knowledge, and so they may get themselves free from the net 26

of the Evil One, being made the prisoners of the Lord's servant, for the purpose of God.

DANGERS FROM FALSE TEACHERS

3 BUT be certain of this, that in the last days times of trouble will come. For men will be lovers of self, lovers of money, uplifted in pride, given to bitter words, going against the authority of their fathers, never giving praise, having no religion, without natural love, bitter haters, saying evil of others, violent and uncontrolled, hating all good, false to their friends, acting without thought, lifted up in mind, loving pleasure more than God; having a form of religion, but turning their backs on the power of it: go not with these. For these are they who go secretly into houses, making prisoners of foolish women, weighted down with sin, turned from the way by their evil desires, ever learning, and never coming to the knowledge of what is true. And as Jannes and Jambres went against Moses, so do these go against what is true: men of evil minds, who, tested by faith, are seen to be false. But they will go no farther: for their foolish behaviour will be clear to all men, as theirs was in the end. But you took as your example my teaching, behaviour, purpose, and faith; my long waiting, my love, my quiet undergoing of trouble; my punishments and pain; the things which came to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; the cruel attacks made on me: and the Lord made me free from them all. Yes, and all whose purpose is to be living in the knowledge of God in Christ Jesus, will be cruelly attacked. Evil and false men will become worse and worse, using deceit and themselves overcome by deceit. But see that you keep to the teaching you have been given and the things of which you are certain, conscious of who has been your teacher; and that from the time when you were a child, you have had knowledge of the holy Writings, which are able to make you wise to salvation, through faith in Christ Jesus.

Every holy Writing which comes from God is of profit 16
for teaching, for training, for guiding, for education in
righteousness: so that the man of God may be complete, 17
trained and made ready for every good work.

PROTESTS AND SHARP WORDS

4 I GIVE you orders, before God and Jesus Christ, who 1
will be the judge of the living and the dead, and by
his revelation and his kingdom; be preaching the 2
word at all times, in every place; make protests, say
sharp words, give comfort, with long waiting and
teaching; for the time will come when they will not take 3
the true teaching; but, moved by their desires, they will
get for themselves a great number of teachers for the
pleasure of hearing them; and shutting their ears to 4
what is true, will be turned away to belief in foolish
stories. But be self-controlled in all things, do without 5
comfort, go on preaching the good news, completing the
work which has been given you to do. For I am even 6
now being offered, and my end is near. I have made a 7
good fight, I have come to the end of my journey, I have
kept the faith: from now on, the crown of righteousness 8
is made ready for me, which the Lord, the upright judge,
will give to me at that day: and not only to me, but to
all those who have had love for his revelation.

Do your best to come to me before long: for Demas 9 10
has gone away from me, for love of this present life, and
has gone to Thessalonica: Crescens has gone to Galatia,
Titus to Dalmatia. Only Luke is with me. Get Mark 11
and take him with you; for he is of use to me in the work.
Tychicus I sent to Ephesus. The coat which I did not 12 13
take from Troas and which is with Carpus, get when you
come, and the books, specially the papers. Alexander 14
the copper-worker did me much wrong: the Lord will
give him the reward of his works: but be on the watch 15
for him, for he was violent in his attacks on our teaching.
At my first meeting with my judges, no one took my 16

part, but all went away from me. May it not be put to
their account. But the Lord was by my side and gave 17
me strength; so that through me the news might be
given out in full measure, and all the Gentiles might
give ear: and I was taken out of the mouth of the lion.
The Lord will keep me safe from every evil work and 18
will give me salvation in his kingdom in heaven: to
whom be glory for ever and ever. So be it.

Give my love to Prisca and Aquila and those of the 19
house of Onesiphorus. Erastus was stopping at Corinth; 20
but Trophimus, when I last saw him, was at Miletus, ill.
Do your best to come before the winter. Eubulus sends 21
you his love, and Pudens and Linus and Claudia, and all
the brothers.

The Lord be with your spirit. Grace be with you. 22

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO TITUS

1 PAUL, a servant of God, and an Apostle of Jesus 1
Christ, in agreement with the faith of the saints
of God and the full knowledge of what is true in
harmony with religion, in the hope of eternal life, which 2
was made certain before eternal time, by the word of
God who is ever true; who, in his time, made clear his 3
word in the good news, of which, by the order of God
our Saviour, I became a preacher; to Titus, my true 4
child in our common faith: Grace and peace from God
the Father and Jesus Christ our Saviour.

AUTHORITY IN THE CHURCHES

I did not take you with me when I went away from 5
Crete, so that you might do what was necessary to put
things in order there, placing men in authority over the
churches in every town, as I said to you; men having a 6
good record, husbands of one wife, whose children are of
the faith, children of whom it may not be said that they
are given to loose living or are uncontrolled. For it is 7
necessary for a Bishop to be a man of virtue, as God's
servant; ready to give way to others, not quickly moved
to wrath or blows, not greatly desiring the wealth of 8
this world; but opening his house freely to guests; a
lover of what is good, serious-minded, upright, holy, self- 9
controlled; keeping to the true word of the teaching, so
that he may be able to give comfort by right teaching
and overcome the arguments of the doubters.

FALSE TEACHERS

For there are men who are not ruled by law; foolish 10
talkers, false teachers, specially those of the circumcision,

by whom some families have been completely over- 11
turned; who take money for teaching things which are
not right; these will have to be stopped. One of their 12
prophets has said, "The men of Crete are ever false,
evil beasts, lovers of food, hating work". This witness 13
is true. So say sharp words to them so that they may
come to the right faith, giving no attention to the fictions 14
of the Jews and the rules of men who have no true
knowledge. To the clean in heart all things are clean: 15
but to those who are unclean and without faith, nothing
is clean; they become unclean in mind and in thought.
They say that they have knowledge of God, while by 16
their acts they are turning their backs on him; they are
hated by all, hard-hearted, and judged to be without
value for any good work.

TRUE AND RIGHT TEACHING

2 But let your words be in agreement with true and 1
right teaching: that old men are to be simple in 2
their tastes, serious, wise, true in faith, in love,
and of a quiet mind. That old women are to be self- 3
respecting in behaviour, not saying evil of others, not
given to taking much wine, teachers of that which is
good, training the younger women to have love for their 4
husbands and children, to be wise in mind, clean in heart, 5
kind; working in their houses, living under the authority
of their husbands; so that no evil may be said of the word
of God. To the young men give orders to be wise and 6
serious-minded: in all things see that you are an example 7
of good works; holy in your teaching, serious in be-
haviour, saying true and right words, against which no 8
protest may be made, so that he who is not on our
side may be put to shame, unable to say any evil of us.
Servants are to be under the authority of their masters, 9
pleasing them in all things, without argument; not 10
taking what is not theirs, but giving clear signs of their
good faith, in all things doing credit to the teaching of

God our Saviour. For the grace of God has come, giving 11
salvation to all men, training us so that, turning away 12
from evil and the desires of this world, we may be living
wisely and uprightly in the knowledge of God in this
present life; looking for the glad hope, the revelation, 13
of the glory of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ;
who gave himself for us, so that he might make us free 14
from all wrongdoing, and make for himself a people
clean in heart and on fire with good works.

On all these points give teaching and help, and make 15
clear what is right with all authority. Let all men give
you honour.

THINGS GOOD AND OF PROFIT

3 MAKE clear to them that they are to put themselves 1
under the authority of rulers and powers, to do
what they are ordered, to be ready for every
good work, to say no evil of any man, not to be fighters, 2
to give way to others, to be gentle in behaviour to all
men. For in the past we were foolish, hard in heart, 3
turned from the true way, servants of evil desires and
pleasures, living in bad feeling and envy, hated, and
hating one another. But when the mercy of God our 4
Saviour, and his love to man was seen, not by works of 5
righteousness which we did ourselves, but in the measure
of his mercy, he gave us salvation, through the washing
of the new birth and the giving of new life in the Holy
Spirit, which he gave us freely through Jesus Christ our 6
Saviour; so that having been given righteousness through 7
grace, we might have a part in the heritage, the hope of
eternal life. This is a true saying; and it is my desire that 8
you may give certain witness about these things, so that
those who have had faith in God may give attention to
good works. These things are good and of profit to men;
but have nothing to do with foolish questionings, and 9
lists of generations, and fights and arguments about the
law; for they are of no profit and foolish. A man whose 10

opinions are not those of the church, after a first and second protest, is to be kept out of your society; clearly 11
he is in error and a sinner, being self-judged.

When I send Artemas or Tychicus to you, do your 12
best to come to me at Nicopolis: for it is my purpose to be there for the winter. Send Zenas, the man of law, and 13
Apollos on their journey with all care, so that they may be in need of nothing. And let our people go on with 14
good works for necessary purposes, so that they may not be without fruit.

All who are with me send you their love. Give our 15
love to our friends in the faith.

Grace be with you all.

THE LETTER OF PAUL TO PHILEMON

PAUL, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, to Philemon, our dear helper in the faith, and to Apphia our sister, and to Archippus our brother in God's army and to the church in your house: Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

I give praise to God at all times and make prayer for you, hearing of the love and the faith which you have to the Lord Jesus and to all the saints; that the faith which you have in common with them may be working with power, in the knowledge of every good thing in you, for Christ. For I had great joy and comfort in your love, because the hearts of the saints have been made strong again through you, brother.

A REQUEST FOR ONESIMUS

And so, though I might, in the name of Christ, give you orders to do what is right, still, because of love, in place of an order, I make a request to you, I Paul, an old man and now a prisoner of Christ Jesus: my request is for my child Onesimus, the child of my chains, who in the past was of no profit to you, but now is of profit to you and to me: whom I have sent back to you, him who is my very heart: though my desire was to keep him with me, to be my servant in the chains of the good news, in your place: but without your approval I would do nothing; so that your good works might not be forced, but done freely from your heart. For it is possible that for this reason he was parted from you for a time, so that you might have him for ever; no longer as a servant, but more than a servant, a brother, very dear to me specially,

but much more to you, in the flesh as well as in the Lord.
If then you take me to be your friend and brother, take 17
him in as myself. If he has done you any wrong or is in 18
debt to you for anything, put it to my account. I Paul, 19
writing this myself, say, I will make payment to you:
and I do not say to you that you are in debt to me even
for your life. So brother, let me have joy of you in the 20
Lord: give new life to my heart in Christ. Being certain 21
that you will do my desire, I am writing to you, in the
knowledge that you will do even more than I say. And 22
make a room ready for me; for I am hoping that through
your prayers I will be given to you.

Epaphras, my brother-prisoner in Christ Jesus, sends 23
you his love; and so do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas and 24
Luke, my brother-workers.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. 25
So be it.

THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

THE SON OF GOD

1 In times past the word of God came to our fathers 1
through the prophets, in different parts and in different
ways; but now, at the end of these days, it has come 2
to us through his Son, to whom he has given all things
for a heritage, and through whom he made the order of
the generations; who, being the outshining of his glory, 3
the true image of his substance, supporting all things by
the word of his power, having given himself as an offering
making clean from sins, took his seat at the right hand
of God in heaven; having become by so much better 4
than the angels, as the name which is his heritage is
more noble than theirs. To which of the angels did God 5
say at any time,

You are my Son,
This day I have given you being?

or,

I will be his Father,
And he will be my Son?

And again, when he is sending his only Son into the 6
world, he says, "Let all the angels of God give him
worship". And of the angels he says, 7

Who makes his angels winds,
And his servants flames of fire:

but of the Son he says, 8

Your seat of power, O God, is for ever and ever;
And the rod of your kingdom is a rod of righteousness.
You have been a lover of righteousness and a hater of 9
evil;

And so God, your God, has put the oil of joy on your
head
More than on the heads of those who are with you.

You, Lord, at the first did put the earth on its base, 10
And the heavens are the works of your hands:
They will come to their end; but you are for ever; 11
They will become old as a robe;
They will be rolled up like a cloth, 12
Even like a robe, and they will be changed:
But you are the same
And your years will have no end.

But of which of the angels has he said at any time, 13

Take your seat at my right hand
Till I put all those who are against you under your feet?

Are they not all helping spirits, who are sent out as 14
servants to those whose heritage will be salvation?

SALVATION THROUGH JESUS

2 FOR this reason there is the more need for us to give 1
attention to the things which have come to our ears,
for fear that by chance we might be slipping away.
Because if the word which came through the angels was 2
fixed, and in the past every evil act against God's orders
was given its full punishment; what will come on us, if 3
we do not give our minds to such a great salvation?
a salvation of which our fathers first had knowledge
through the words of the Lord, and which was made
certain to us by those to whom his words came; and 4
God was a witness with them, by signs and wonders,
and by more than natural powers, and by his distribution
of the Holy Spirit at his pleasure.

For he did not make the angels rulers over the world 5
to come, of which I am writing. But a certain writer has 6
given his witness, saying,

What is man, that you keep him in mind?
What is the son of man, that you take him into account?
You made him a little lower than the angels; 7
You gave him a crown of glory and honour,
And made him ruler over all the works of your hands:
You put all things under his feet. 8

For in making man the ruler over all things, God did not put anything outside his authority; though we do not see everything under him now. But we see him who 9 was made a little lower than the angels, even Jesus, crowned with glory and honour, because he let himself be put to death so that by the grace of God he might undergo death for all men. Because it was right for him, 10 for whom and through whom all things have being, in guiding his sons to glory, to make the captain of their salvation complete through pain. For he who makes 11 holy and those who are made holy are all of one family; and for this reason it is no shame for him to give them the name of brothers, saying, 12

I will give the knowledge of your name to my brothers,
I will make a song of praise to you before the church.

And again he says, "I will put my faith in him". And 13 again, "See, I am here, and the children which God has given to me". And because the children are flesh and 14 blood, he took a body himself and became like them; so that by his death he might put an end to him who had the power of death, that is to say, the Evil One; and let 15 those who all their lives were in chains because of their fear of death, go free. For truly he does not take on the 16 life of angels, but that of the seed of Abraham. Because 17 of this it was necessary for him to be made like his brothers in every way, so that he might be a high priest full of mercy and keeping faith in everything to do with God, making offerings for the sins of the people. For 18 having been put to the test himself, he is able to give help to others when they are tested.

JESUS THE HIGH PRIEST OF OUR FAITH

3 FOR this reason, holy brothers, marked out to have 1
a part in heaven, give thought to Jesus the repre-
sentative and High Priest of our faith; who kept faith 2
with God who gave him his place, even as Moses did in
all his house. And it was right for this man to have 3
more honour than Moses, even as the builder of a house
has more honour than the house. For every house has 4
a builder; but the builder of all things is God. And 5
Moses certainly kept faith as a servant, in all his house,
and as a witness of those things which were to be said
later; but Christ as a son, over his house; whose house 6
are we, if we keep our hearts fixed in the glad and
certain hope till the end. And so, as the Holy Spirit says, 7

Today if you let his voice come to your ears,
Be not hard of heart, as when you made me angry, 8
On the day of testing in the waste land,
When your fathers put me to the test, 9
And saw my works for forty years.
So that I was angry with this generation, 10
And I said, Their hearts are in error at all times,
And they have no knowledge of my ways;
And being angry I made an oath, saying, They may not 11
come into my rest.

My brothers, take care that there is not by chance in 12
any one of you an evil heart without belief, turning away
from the living God: but give comfort to one another 13
every day as long as it is still Today; so that no one
among you may be made hard by the deceit of sin: for 14
if we keep the substance of the faith which we had at
the start, even till the end, we have a part with Christ;
as it is said, 15

Today if you will let his voice come to your ears,
Be not hard of heart, as when you made him angry.

Who made him angry when his voice came to them? 16
was it not all those who came out of Egypt with Moses?

And with whom was he angry for forty years? was it 17
not with those who did evil, who came to their deaths
in the waste land? And to whom did he make an oath 18
that they might not come into his rest? was it not to
those who went against his orders? So we see that they 19
were not able to go in because they had no belief.

THE OFFER OF REST

4 LET us then, though we still have God's word that 1
we may come into his rest, go in fear that some
of you may be unable to do so. And truly the 2
good news came to us, even as it did to them; but the
hearing of the word did them no good, because they
were not united in faith with the true hearers. For those 3
of us who have belief come into his rest; even as he has
said,

> As I said in my oath when I was angry,
> They may not come into my rest:

though the works were done from the time of the making
of the world. For in one place he has said of the seventh 4
day, "And God had rest from all his works on the
seventh day"; and in the same place he says again, 5

> They will not come into my rest.

So that as it is clear that some have to go in, and that 6
the first hearers of the good news were not able to go
in because they went against God's orders, after a long 7
time, again naming a certain day, he says in David,
"Today" (as he had said before),

> Today if you will let his voice come to your ears,
> Be not hard of heart.

For if Joshua had given them rest, he would not have 8
said anything about another day. So that there is still 9
a Sabbath-keeping for the people of God. For the man 10
who comes into his rest has had rest from his works,

as God did from his. Because of this, let us have a strong 11
desire to come into that rest, and let no one go after the
example of those who went against God's orders. For 12
the word of God is living and full of power, and is
sharper than any two-edged sword, cutting through and
making a division even of the soul and the spirit, the
bones and the muscles, and quick to see the thoughts
and purposes of the heart. And there is nothing made 13
which is not completely clear to him; there is nothing
covered, but all things are open to the eyes of him with
whom we have to do.

Having then a great high priest, who has made his 14
way through the heavens, even Jesus the Son of God,
let us be strong in our faith. For we have not a high 15
priest who is not able to be touched by the feelings of
our feeble flesh; but we have one who has been tested
in all points as we ourselves are tested, but without sin.
Then let us come near to the seat of grace without fear, 16
so that mercy may be given to us, and we may get grace
for our help in time of need.

A PRIEST FOR EVER

5 EVERY high priest who is taken from among men is 1
given his position to take care of the interests of
men in those things which have to do with God,
so that he may make offerings for sins. He is able to 2
have feeling for those who have no knowledge and for
those who are wandering from the true way, because he
himself is feeble; and being feeble, he has to make sin- 3
offerings for himself as well as for the people. And no 4
man who is not given authority by God, as Aaron was,
takes this honour for himself. In the same way Christ 5
did not take for himself the glory of being made a high
priest, but was given it by him who said,

You are my Son,
This day I have given you being:

as he says in another place, 6

You are a priest for ever
After the order of Melchizedek.

Who in the days of his flesh, having sent up prayers 7
and requests with strong crying and weeping to him
who was able to give him salvation from death, had his
prayer answered because of his fear of God. And though 8
he was a Son, through the pain which he underwent, the
knowledge came to him of what it was to be under God's
orders; and when he had been made complete, he became 9
the giver of eternal salvation to all those who are under
his orders; being named by God a high priest of the 10
order of Melchizedek.

Of whom we have much to say which it is hard to make 11
clear, because you are slow of hearing. And though by 12
this time it would be right for you to be teachers, you
still have need of someone to give you teaching about
the first simple rules of God's revelation; you have
become like babies who have need of milk, and not of
solid food. For everyone who takes milk is without 13
experience of the word of righteousness: he is a child.
But solid food is for men of full growth, even for those 14
whose senses are trained by use to see what is good and
what is evil.

FULL GROWTH IN CHRIST

6 FOR this reason let us go on from the first things 1
about Christ to full growth; not building again that
on which it is based, that is, the turning of the heart
from dead works, and faith in God, the teaching of 2
baptisms, and of the putting on of hands, and of the
future life of the dead, and of the judging on the last
day. Now we will do this, if God lets us. As for those 3 4
who at one time saw the light, tasting the good things
from heaven, and having their part in the Holy Spirit,
with knowledge of the good word of God, and of the 5
powers of the coming time, and then let themselves be 6

turned away, it is not possible for their hearts to be made new a second time; because they themselves put the Son of God on the cross again, openly shaming him. For a land, drinking in the frequent rain and producing good plants for those for whom it is worked, has a blessing from God: but if it sends up thorns and evil plants, it is of no use and is ready to be cursed; its only end is to be burned.

But, my loved ones, though we say this, we are certain that you have better things in you, things which go with salvation; for God is true, and will not put away from him the memory of your work and of your love for his name, in the help which you gave and still give to the saints. And it is our desire that you may all keep the same high purpose in certain hope to the end: so that you may not be slow in heart, but may take as your example those to whom God has given their heritage, because of their faith and their long waiting.

For when God made his oath to Abraham, because there was no greater oath, he made it by himself, saying, "Be certain that I will give you my blessing, and make your numbers very great". And so, when he had been waiting calmly for a long time, God's word to him was put into effect. For men at all times make their oaths by what is greater; and any argument is ended by the decision of the oath. So that when it was God's desire to make it specially clear to those who by his word were to have the heritage, that his purpose was fixed, he made it more certain with an oath; so that we, who have taken flight from danger to the hope which has been put before us, may have a strong comfort in two unchanging things, in which it is not possible for God to be false; and this hope is like a strong band for our souls, fixed and certain, and going in to that which is inside the veil; where Jesus has gone before us, as a high priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek.

THE ORDER OF MELCHIZEDEK

7 FOR this Melchizedek, the king of Salem, a priest of 1
the Most High God, who gave Abraham his blessing,
meeting him when he came back after putting the
kings to death, and to whom Abraham gave a tenth part 2
of everything which he had, being first named King of
righteousness, and then in addition, King of Salem, that
is to say, King of peace; being without father or mother, 3
or family, having no birth or end to his life, being made
like the Son of God, is a priest for ever.

Now see how great this man was, to whom our father 4
Abraham gave a tenth part of what he had got in the
fight. And it is true that by the law, those of the sons 5
of Levi who have the position of priests may take a tenth
part of the people's goods; that is to say, they take it
from their brothers though these are the sons of
Abraham. But this man, who was not of their family, 6
took the tenth from Abraham, and gave a blessing to
him to whom God had given his undertaking. But there 7
is no doubt that the less gets his blessing from the greater.
Now at the present time, men over whom death has 8
power take the tenth; but then it was taken by one of
whom it is witnessed that he is living. And we may say 9
that in Abraham, even Levi, who has a right to take the
tenth part, gave it; because he was still in his father's 10
body when Melchizedek came to him.

THE ORDER OF LEVI TO BE CHANGED

Now if it was possible for things to be made complete 11
through the priests of the house of Levi (for the law was
given to the people in connection with them), what need
was there for another priest who was of the order of
Melchizedek and not of the order of Aaron? Because if 12
the priests are changed, it is necessary to make a change
in the law. For he of whom these things are said comes 13
of another family, of which no man has ever made offerings

at the altar. Because it is clear that our Lord comes out 14
of Judah, and Moses said nothing about priests from that
family. And this is even more clear if a second priest 15
has come up who is like Melchizedek, that is to say, not 16
made by a law based on the flesh, but by the power of a
life without end: for it has been witnessed of him, 17

You are a priest for ever
After the order of Melchizedek.

So the law which went before is put on one side, because 18
it was feeble and without profit (because the law made 19
nothing complete), and in its place there is a better hope,
through which we come near to God. And as this is 20
not without the taking of an oath (for those were made 21
priests without an oath, but this one was made a priest
with an oath by him who says of him,

The Lord gave his oath, which he will not take back,
That you are a priest for ever);

by so much is it a better agreement which we have 22
through Jesus. And it is true that there have been a 23
great number of those priests, because death does not
let them go on for ever; but this priest, because his life 24
goes on for ever, is unchanging. So that he is fully able 25
to be the saviour of all who come to God through him,
because he is ever living to make prayer to God for
them.

It was right for us to have such a high priest, one 26
who is holy and without evil, doing no wrong, having
no part with sinners, and made higher than the heavens:
who has no need to make offerings for sins every day, 27
like those high priests, first for himself, and then for the
people; because he did this once and for ever when he
made an offering of himself. The law makes high priests 28
of men who are feeble; but the word of the oath, which
was made after the law, gives that position to a Son, in
whom all good is for ever complete.

8 Now of the things we are saying this is the chief 1
point: We have such a high priest, who has taken
his place at the right hand of God's high seat of
glory in heaven, as a servant of the holy things, and of 2
the true tent, which was put up by God, not by man.
Now every high priest is given authority to take to God 3
the things which are given and to make offerings; so
that it is necessary for this man, like them, to have some-
thing for an offering. If he had been on earth he would 4
not have been a priest at all, because there are other
priests who make the offerings ordered by the law;
being servants of that which is a copy and an image of 5
the things in heaven, as Moses, when he was about to
make the tent, had special orders from God: for, "See",
he said, "that you make everything like the design
which you saw in the mountain". But now his position 6
as priest is higher, because through him God has made
a better agreement with man, based on the giving of
better things. For if that first agreement had been as 7
good as possible, there would have been no place for a
second. For, protesting against them, he says, 8

See, the days are coming
When I will make a new agreement with the house
of Israel, and with the house of Judah;
Not like the agreement which I made with their fathers 9
When I took them by the hand, to be their guide out
of the land of Egypt;
For they did not keep the agreement with me,
And I gave them up, says the Lord.
For this is the agreement which I will make with the 10
people of Israel
After those days:
I will put my laws into their minds,
Writing them in their hearts:
And I will be their God,
And they will be my people:
And there will be no need for every man to be teaching [his brother, 11

Or his neighbour, saying, 'This is the knowledge of the Lord':
For they will all have knowledge of me,
Great and small.
And I will have mercy on their evil-doing, 12
And I will not keep their sins in mind.

When he says, "A new agreement," he has made the 13
first agreement old. But anything which is getting old and past use will not be seen much longer.

THE NEW AGREEMENT

9 Now the first agreement had its rules of worship, 1
and a holy order. For the first tent was made 2
ready, having in it the vessels for the lights and the table and the ordering of the bread; and this is named the Holy place. And inside the second veil was 3
the place which is named the Holy of holies; having a 4
vessel of gold in it for burning perfumes, and the ark of the agreement, which was covered with gold and which had in it a pot made of gold for the *manna*, and Aaron's rod, which put out buds, and the stones with the writing of the agreement; and over it were the winged ones of 5
glory with their wings covering the mercy-seat; about which it is not possible now to say anything in detail. Now while these things were in existence, the priests 6
went into the first tent at all times, for prayer and the making of offerings. But only the high priest went into 7
the second, once a year, not without making an offering of blood for himself and for the errors of the people: the Holy Spirit witnessing by this that the way into the 8
holy place had not at that time been made open, while the first tent was still in being; and this is an image of 9
the present time; when the offerings which are given are not able to make the heart of the worshipper completely clean, because they are only rules of the flesh, of meats 10
and drinks and washings, which have their place till the time comes when things will be put right.

But now Christ has come as the high priest of the 11
good things of the future, through this greater and
better tent, not made with hands, that is to say, not
of this world, and has gone once and for ever into the 12
holy place, having got eternal salvation, not through the
blood of goats and young oxen, but through his blood.
For if the blood of goats and oxen, and the dust from 13
the burning of a young cow, being put on the unclean,
make the flesh clean: how much more will the blood 14
of Christ, who, being without sin, made an offering of
himself to God through the Holy Spirit, make your
hearts clean from dead works to be servants of the living
God? And for this cause it is through him that a new 15
agreement has come into being, so that after the errors
under the first agreement had been taken away by his
death, the word of God might have effect for those who
were marked out for an eternal heritage. Because where 16
there is a testament, there has to be the death of the
man who made it. For a testament has effect after death; 17
for what power has it while the man who made it is
living? So that even the first agreement was not made 18
without blood. For when Moses had given all the rules 19
of the law to the people, he took the blood of goats and
young oxen, with water and red wool and *hyssop*, and
put it on the book itself and on all the people, saying, 20
"This blood is the sign of the agreement which God has
made with you". And the blood was put on the tent 21
and all the holy vessels in the same way. And by the 22
law almost all things are made clean with blood, and
without blood there is no forgiveness.

For this cause it was necessary to make the copies of 23
the things in heaven clean with these offerings; but the
things themselves are made clean with better offerings
than these. For Christ did not go into a holy place 24
which had been made by men's hands as the copy of the
true one; but he went into heaven itself, and now takes
his place before the face of God for us. And he did not 25
have to make an offering of himself again and again, as

the high priest goes into the holy place every year with
blood which is not his; for then he would have undergone 26
a number of deaths from the time of the making of the
world: but now he has come to us at the end of the old
order, to put away sin by the offering of himself. And 27
because by God's law death comes to men once, and
after that they are judged; so Christ, having at his first 28
coming taken on himself the sins of men, will be seen
a second time, without sin, by those who are waiting for
him, for their salvation.

THE PLEASURE OF GOD

10 FOR the law, being only a poor copy of the future 1
good things, and not the true image of those things,
is never able to make the people who come to
the altar every year with the same offerings completely
clean. For if this had been possible, would there not 2
have been an end of those offerings, because the wor-
shippers would have been made completely clean and
would have had no more sense of sins? But year by year 3
there is a memory of sins in those offerings. Because it 4
is not possible for the blood of oxen and goats to take
away sins. So that when he comes into the world, he says, 5

You had no desire for offerings,
But you made a body ready for me;
You had no joy in burned offerings, or in offerings 6
for sin.
Then I said, See, I have come to do your pleasure, 7
O God
(As it is said of me in the roll of the book).

After saying, "You had no desire for offerings, for 8
burned offerings, or offerings for sin (which are made
by the law) and you had no pleasure in them," then he 9
said, "See, I have come to do your pleasure". He took
away the old order, so that he might put the new order
in its place. By that pleasure we have been made holy, 10
by the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once and for

ever. And every priest takes his place at the altar day 11
by day, doing what is necessary, and making again and
again the same offerings which are never able to take
away sins. But when Jesus had made one offering for 12
sins for ever, he took his place at the right hand of God;
and has been waiting there from that time, till all who 13
are against him are made a footrest for his feet. Because 14
by one offering he has made complete for ever those who
are made holy. And the Holy Spirit is a witness for us: 15
for after he had said,

This is the agreement which I will make with them 16
After those days, says the Lord;
I will put my laws in their hearts,
Writing them in their minds;

he said,

And I will keep no more memory of their sins and of 17
their evil-doings.

Now where there is forgiveness of these, there is no 18
more offering for sin.

So then, my brothers, being able to go into the holy 19
place without fear, because of the blood of Jesus, by the 20
new and living way which he made open for us through
the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having a great 21
priest over the house of God; let us go in with true 22
hearts, in certain faith, having our hearts made free from
the sense of sin, and our bodies washed with clean water:
let us keep the witness of our hope strong and unshaking, 23
for he is true who has given his word: and let us be 24
moving one another at all times to love and good works;
not giving up our meetings, as is the way of some, but 25
keeping one another strong in faith; and all the more
because you see the day coming near.

For if we do evil on purpose after we have had the 26
knowledge of what is true, there is no more offering for
sins, but only a great fear of being judged, and of the 27
fire of wrath which will be the destruction of the haters

of God. A man who has gone against the law of Moses 28
is put to death without pity on the word of two or three
witnesses: but will not the man by whom the Son of 29
God has been crushed under foot, and the blood of the
agreement with which he was washed clean has been
taken as an unholy thing, and who has had no respect
for the Spirit of grace, be judged bad enough for a very
much worse punishment? For we have had experience 30
of him who says, "Punishment is mine, I will give
reward". And again, "The Lord will be judge of his
people". We may well go in fear of falling into the 31
hands of the living God.

But give thought to the days after you had seen the 32
light, when you went through a great war of troubles;
in part, in being attacked by angry words and cruel acts, 33
before the eyes of everyone, and in part, in being united
with those who were attacked in this way. For you had 34
pity on those who were in prison, and had joy in the loss
of your property, in the knowledge that you still had a
better property and one which you would keep for ever.
So do not give up your hope which will be greatly 35
rewarded. For, having done what was right in God's 36
eyes, you have need of waiting before his word has effect
for you.

In a very little time 37
He who is coming will come; he will not be slow.
But the upright man will be living by his faith; 38
And if he goes back, my soul will have no pleasure in
him.

But we are not of those who go back to destruction; but 39
of those who have faith even to the salvation of the soul.

THE FAITH OF OUR FATHERS

11 Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, and 1
the sign that the things not seen are true. For 2
by it our fathers had God's approval. By faith it 3
is clear to us that all life has come into existence by the

word of God, so that what is seen has not been made
from things which only seem to be. By faith Abel made 4
a better offering to God than Cain, and he had witness
through it of his righteousness, God giving his approval
of his offering: and his voice still comes to us through
it though he is dead. By faith Enoch was taken up to 5
heaven so that he did not see death; he was seen no
longer, for God took him up: for before he was taken,
witness had been given that he was well-pleasing to God:
and without faith it is not possible to be well-pleasing 6
to him, for it is necessary for anyone who comes to God
to have the belief that God is, and that he is a rewarder
of all those who make a serious search for him. By faith 7
Noah, being moved by the fear of God, made ready an
ark for the salvation of his family, because God had
given him news of things which were not seen at the
time; and through it the world was judged by him, and
he got for his heritage the righteousness which is by
faith. By faith Abraham did as God said when he was 8
ordered to go out into a place which was to be given to
him as a heritage, and went out without knowledge of
where he was going. By faith he was a wanderer in the 9
land of the agreement, as in a strange land, living in
tents with Isaac and Jacob, who had a part with him in
the same heritage: for he was looking for the strong 10
town, whose builder and maker is God. And by faith 11
Sarah herself had power to give birth when she was very
old, because she had faith in him who gave his word;
so that from one man, who was near to death, came 12
children in number as the stars in heaven, or as the sand
by the seaside, which may not be numbered.

All these came to their end in faith, not having had 13
the heritage; but having seen it with delight far away,
they gave witness that they were wanderers and not of
the earth. For those who say such things make it clear 14
that they are searching for a country for themselves.
And truly if they had kept in mind the country from 15
which they went out, they would have had chances of

turning back. But now their desire is for a better country, 16
that is to say, for one in heaven; and so it is no shame
to God to be named their God; for he has made ready
a town for them.

By faith Abraham made an offering of Isaac, when he 17
was tested: and he with whom the agreement had been
made gave up as an offering the only son of his body,
of whom it had been said, "From Isaac will your seed 18
take their name": judging that God was able to give 19
life even to the dead; and because of this he did get him
back as if from death. By faith Isaac, blessing Jacob and 20
Esau, gave news of things to come. By faith Jacob gave 21
a blessing to the two sons of Joseph, when he was near
to death; and gave God worship, supported by his stick.
By faith Joseph, when his end was near, said that the 22
children of Israel would go out of Egypt; and gave
orders about his bones. By faith Moses was kept secretly 23
by his father and mother for three months after his birth,
because they saw that he was a fair child; and they had
no fear of the king's orders. By faith Moses, when he 24
became a man, had no desire to be named the son of
Pharaoh's daughter; feeling that it was better to undergo 25
pain with the people of God, than for a short time to
have a taste of the pleasures of sin; judging a part in 26
the shame of Christ, to be better than all the wealth of
Egypt; for he was looking forward to his reward. By 27
faith he went out of Egypt, not being turned from his
purpose by fear of the wrath of the king; for he kept on
his way, as seeing him who is unseen. By faith he kept 28
the Passover, and put the sign of the blood on the houses,
so that the angel of destruction might not put their
oldest sons to death. By faith they went through the 29
Red sea as if it had been dry land, though the Egyptians
were overcome by the water when they made an attempt
to do the same. By faith the walls of Jericho came down, 30
after they had been circled for seven days. By faith 31
Rahab the loose woman was not put to death with those
who had gone against God's orders, because she had

taken into her house in peace those sent to see the land. What more am I to say? For there would not be 32
time to give the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah, of David and Samuel and the prophets: who 33
through faith overcame kingdoms, did righteousness, got their reward, kept the mouths of lions shut, put out 34
the power of fire, got safely away from the edge of the sword, were made strong when they had been feeble, became full of power in war, and put to flight the armies of the nations. Women had their dead given back to 35
them living; others let themselves be cruelly attacked, having no desire to go free, so that they might have a better life to come; and others were tested by being 36
laughed at or by blows, and even with chains and prisons: they were stoned, they were cut up with knives, they 37
were tested, they were put to death with the sword: they went about in sheepskins and in goatskins; being poor, and in pain, and cruelly attacked, wandering in waste 38
places, and in mountains, and in holes in the rocks; for whom the world was not good enough. And not one of 39
these got the good things of the agreement, though they had all a good record through faith, because God had 40
kept some better thing for us, so that it was not possible for them to become complete without us.

THE LORD'S PUNISHMENT OF HIS LOVED ONES

12 FOR this reason, as we are circled by so great a cloud 1
of witnesses, putting off every weight, and the sin into which we come so readily, let us keep on running in the way which is marked out for us, having 2
our eyes fixed on Jesus, the guide and end of our faith, who went through the pains of the cross, not caring for the shame, because of the joy which was before him, and who has now taken his place at the right hand of God's seat of power. Give thought to him who has undergone 3
so much of the hate of sinners against himself, so that you may not be tired and feeble of purpose. Till now you 4

have not given your blood in your fight against sin:
and you have not kept in mind the word which says to 5
you as to sons,

My son, do not make little of the Lord's punishment,
And do not give up hope when you are judged by him;
For the Lord sends punishment on his loved ones; 6
Everyone whom he takes as his son has experience of
his rod.

It is for your training that you undergo these things; 7
God is acting to you as a father does to his sons; for
what son does not have punishment from his father? But 8
if you have not that punishment of which we all have our
part, then you are not true sons, but children of shame.
And again, if the fathers of our flesh gave us punishment 9
and had our respect, how much more will we be under
the authority of the Father of spirits, and have life? For 10
they truly gave us punishment for a short time, as it
seemed good to them; but he does it for our profit, so
that we may become holy as he is. At the time all 11
punishment seems to be pain and not joy: but after,
those who have been trained by it get from it the peace-
giving fruit of righteousness. For this cause let the 12
hands which are hanging down be lifted up, and let the
feeble knees be made strong; and make straight roads 13
for your feet, so that the feeble may not be turned out
of the way, but may be made strong.

Let your desire be for peace with all men, and to be 14
made holy, without which no man may see the Lord;
looking with care to see that no man among you in his 15
behaviour does not come up to the grace of God; for fear
that some bitter root may come up to be a trouble to you,
and that some of you may be made unclean by it; and 16
that there may not be any evil liver, or any man without
respect for God, like Esau, who let his birthright go
for a plate of food. For you have knowledge that even 17
long after, when he was desiring the blessing for his
heritage, he was turned away, though he made his request

frequently and with weeping; because the past might not be changed.

THE VISION OF ETERNAL THINGS

You have not come to a mountain which may be 18
touched, and is burning with fire, and to a black cloud,
and a dark smoke, and a violent wind, and to the sound 19
of a horn, and the voice of words, the hearers of which
made request that not a word more might be said to
them: for the order which said, "If the mountain is 20
touched even by a beast, the beast is to be stoned,"
seemed hard to them; and the vision was so over- 21
powering that even Moses said, "I am shaking and full
of fear". But you have come to the mountain of Zion, 22
to the place of the living God, to the Jerusalem which
is in heaven, and to an army of angels which may not
be numbered, to the great meeting and church of the 23
first of those who are named in heaven, and to God the
judge of all, and to the spirits of good men made com-
plete, and to Jesus by whom the new agreement has been 24
made between God and man, and to the sign of the blood
which says better things than Abel's blood. See that 25
you give ear to his voice which comes to you. For if
those whose ears were shut to the voice which came to
them on earth did not go free from punishment, what
chance have we of going free if we give no attention to
him whose voice comes from heaven? whose voice was 26
the cause of the shaking of the earth: but now he has
made an oath, saying, "There will be still one more
shaking, not only of the earth, but of heaven". And the 27
words, "Still one more", make it clear that there will
be a taking away of those things which are shaking, as
of things which are made, so that there may be only those
things of which no shaking is possible. If then, we have 28
a kingdom which will never be moved, let us have grace,
so that we may give God such worship as is pleasing to
him with fear and respect: for our God is an all-burning 29
fire.

A MEMORY OF THE BROTHERS IN FAITH

13 Go on loving your brothers in the faith. Take care 1 2
to keep open house: because in this way some
have had angels as their guests, without being
conscious of it. Keep in mind those who are in chains, 3
as if you were chained with them, and those who are in
trouble, as being yourselves in the body. Let married 4
life be honoured among all of you, and not made unclean,
for men untrue in married life will be judged by God.
Be free from the love of money, and pleased with the 5
things which you have; for he himself has said, "I will
be with you at all times". So that we say with a good 6
heart,

The Lord is my helper; I will have no fear:
What is man able to do to me?

Keep in mind those who were over you, and who gave 7
you the word of God; seeing the outcome of their way
of life, let your faith be like theirs. Jesus Christ is the 8
same yesterday and today and for ever. Do not be 9
turned away by different strange teachings, because it
is good for your hearts to be made strong by grace, and
not by meats, which were of no profit to those who took
so much trouble over them. We have an altar from which 10
those priests who are servants in the tent may not take
food. For the bodies of the beasts whose blood is taken 11
into the holy place by the high priest as an offering for
sin are burned outside the circle of the tents. For this 12
reason Jesus was put to death outside the walls, so that
he might make the people holy by his blood. Let us then 13
go out to him outside the circle of the tents, taking his
shame on ourselves. For here we have no fixed resting- 14
place, but our search is for the one which is to come.
Let us then make offerings of praise to God at all times 15
through him, that is to say, the fruit of lips giving
witness to his name. But go on doing good and giving 16
to others, because God is well-pleased with such offerings.

Give ear to those who are rulers over you, and do as 17
they say: for they keep watch over your souls, ready to
give an account of them; let them be able to do this
with joy and not with grief, because that would be of no
profit to you.

Make prayers for us, for we are certain that our hearts 18
are free from the sense of sin, desiring the right way of
life in all things. I make this request more strongly, in 19
the hope of coming back to you more quickly.

Now may the God of peace, who made that great 20
keeper of his flock, even our Lord Jesus, come back from
the dead through the blood of the eternal agreement,
make you full of every good work and ready to do all 21
his desires, working in us whatever is pleasing in his
eyes through Jesus Christ; and may the glory be given
to him for ever and ever. So be it.

But, brothers, take kindly the words which I have said 22
for your profit; for I have not sent you a long letter.
Our brother Timothy has been let out of prison; and if 23
he comes here in a short time, he and I will come to you
together.

Give words of love from me to those who are rulers 24
over you, and to all the saints. Those who are in Italy
send you their love.

May grace be with you all. 25

THE LETTER OF JAMES

1 JAMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, 1
sends words of love to the twelve tribes of the Jews
living in all parts of the earth.

Let it be all joy to you, my brothers, when you undergo 2
tests of every sort; because you have the knowledge that 3
the testing of your faith gives you the power of going
on in hope; but let this power have its full effect, so 4
that you may be made complete, needing nothing.

But if any man among you is without wisdom, let 5
him make his request to God, who gives freely to all,
without an unkind word, and it will be given to him.
Let him make his request in faith, doubting nothing; for 6
he who has doubt in his heart is like the waves of the
sea, which are troubled by the driving of the wind. Let 7
it not seem to such a man that he will get anything from
the Lord; for there is a division in his mind, and he is 8
uncertain in all his ways.

But let the brother of low position be glad that he is 9
lifted up; but the man of wealth, that he is made low; 10
because like the flower of the grass he will come to his
end. For when the sun comes up with its burning heat, 11
the grass gets dry and the grace of its form is gone with
the falling flower; so the man of wealth comes to nothing
in his ways.

THE TESTING OF MAN

There is a blessing on the man who undergoes testing; 12
because, if he has God's approval, he will be given the
crown of life, which the Lord has said he will give to
those who have love for him. Let no man say when he 13
is tested, "I am tested by God"; for it is not possible
for God to be tested by evil, and he himself puts no
man to such a test: but every man is tested when he is 14

turned out of the right way by the attraction of his desire.
Then when its time comes, desire gives birth to sin; 15
and sin, when it is of full growth, gives birth to death.
Do not be turned from the right way, dear brothers. 16
Every good and true thing is given to us from heaven, 17
coming from the Father of lights, with whom there is
no change or any shade made by turning. Of his purpose 18
he gave us being, by his true word, so that we might be,
in a sense, the first fruits of all the things which he had
made.

DOERS AND HEARERS

You have knowledge of this, dear brothers. But let 19
every man be quick in hearing, slow in words, slow to
get angry; for the righteousness of God does not come 20
about by the wrath of man. For this reason, putting 21
away all dirty behaviour and the overweight of evil,
take into your souls without pride the word, which
being planted there, is able to give you salvation. But 22
be doers of the word, and not only hearers of it, blinding
yourselves with false ideas. Because if any man is a 23
hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man
looking at his natural face in a glass; for after looking 24
at himself he goes away, and in a short time he has no
memory of what he was like. But he who goes on looking 25
into the true law which makes him free, being not a
hearer without memory but a doer putting it into effect,
this man will have a blessing on his acts. If a man seems 26
to have religion and has no control over his tongue
but lets himself be tricked by what is false, this man's
religion is of no value. The religion which is holy and 27
free from evil in the eyes of our God and Father is this:
to take care of children who have no fathers and of
widows who are in trouble, and to keep oneself untouched
by the world.

RESPECT OF PERSONS

2 My brothers, if you have the faith of our Lord 1
Jesus Christ of glory, do not take a man's position
into account. For if a man comes into your Syna- 2
gogue in fair clothing and with a gold ring, and a poor
man comes in with dirty clothing, and you do honour 3
to the man in fair clothing and say, "Come here and
take this good place"; and you say to the poor man,
"Take up your position there, or be seated at my feet";
is there not a division in your minds? have you not 4
become judges with evil thoughts? Give ear, my dear 5
brothers; are not those who are poor in the things of
this world marked out by God to have faith as their
wealth, and for their heritage the kingdom which he has
said he will give to those who have love for him? But 6
you have put the poor man to shame. Are not the men
of wealth rulers over you? do they not take you by force
before their judges? Do they not say evil of the holy 7
name which was given to you? But if you keep the 8
greatest law of all, as it is given in the holy Writings,
"Have love for your neighbour as for yourself," you
do well: but if you take a man's position into account, 9
you do evil, and are judged as evil-doers by the law.
For anyone who keeps all the law, but makes a slip in 10
one point, is judged to have gone against it all. For he 11
who said, "Do not be untrue in married life," is the
same who said, "Put no man to death". Now if you
are not untrue in married life, but you put a man to
death, the law is broken. Let your words and your acts 12
be those of men who are to be judged by the law which
makes free. For the man who has had no mercy will be 13
judged without mercy; but mercy takes pride in over-
coming judging.

FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD

What use is it, my brothers, for a man to say that he 14
has faith, if he does nothing? will such a faith give him

salvation? If a brother or a sister is without clothing 15
and in need of food, and one of you says to them, "Go 16
in peace, be warm and full of food"; but you do not give
them the things of which their bodies have need, what
profit is there in this? Even so faith without works is 17
dead. But a man may say, "You have faith and I have 18
works"; let me see your faith without your works, and
I will make my faith clear to you by my works. You 19
have the belief that God is one, and you do well: the evil
spirits have the same belief, shaking with fear. Do you 20
not see, O foolish man, that faith without works is of no
use? Was not the righteousness of Abraham our father 21
judged by his works, when he made an offering of Isaac
his son on the altar? You see that his faith was helping 22
his works and was made complete by them; and the holy 23
Writings were put into effect which said, "And Abraham
had faith in God and it was put to his account as
righteousness; and he was named the friend of God".
You see that a man's righteousness is judged by his 24
works and not by his faith only. And in the same way, 25
was not the righteousness of Rahab, the loose woman,
judged by her works, when she took into her house those
who were sent and let them go out by another way? For 26
as the body without the spirit is dead, even so faith
without works is dead.

THE POWER OF THE TONGUE

3 Do not all be teachers, my brothers, because we 1
teachers will be judged more hardly than others.
For we all go wrong in a number of things. If 2
a man never makes a slip in his talk, then he is a complete
man and able to keep all his body in control. Now if we 3
put bits of iron into horses' mouths so that they may be
guided by us, we have complete control of their bodies.
And again ships, though they are so great and are moved 4
by violent winds, are turned by a very small guiding-
blade, at the impulse of the man who is using it. Even

so the tongue is a small part of the body, but it takes credit for great things. How much wood may be lighted by a very little fire! And the tongue is a fire; it is the 6
power of evil placed in our bodies, making all the body unclean, putting the wheel of life on fire, and getting its fire from hell. For every sort of beast and bird and 7
every living thing on earth and in the sea has been controlled by man and is under his authority; but the 8
tongue may not be controlled by man; it is an unresting evil, it is full of the poison of death. With it we give 9
praise to our Lord and Father; and with it we put a curse on men who are made in God's image. Out of the same 10
mouth comes blessing and cursing. My brothers, it is not right for these things to be so. Does the fountain 11
send from the same outlet sweet and bitter water? is 12
a *fig*-tree able to give us olives, my brothers, or do we get figs from a vine, or sweet water from the salt sea?

Who has wisdom and good sense among you? let him 13
make his works clear by a life of gentle wisdom. But 14
if you have bitter envy and love of competition in your heart, have no pride in this, talking falsely against what is true. This wisdom is not from heaven, but is of the 15
earth and the flesh and the Evil One. For where envy 16
and love of competition are, there is no order, but every sort of evil-doing. But the wisdom which is from heaven 17
is first holy, then gentle, readily giving way in argument, full of peace and mercy and good works, not doubting, not seeming other than it is. And the fruit 18
of righteousness is planted in peace for those who make peace.

GOD'S GIVING AND MAN'S GETTING

4 WHAT is the cause of wars and fighting among 1
you? is it not in your desires which are at war in your bodies? You are burning with desire, 2
and have not your desire, so you put men to death; you are full of envy, and you are not able to get your desire, so you are fighting and making war; you have not your

desire, because you do not make request for it. You 3
make your request but you do not get it, because your
request has been wrongly made, desiring the thing only
so that you may make use of it for your pleasure. O you 4
who are false to God, do you not see that the friends
of this world are not God's friends? Every man desiring
to be a friend of this world makes himself a hater of
God. Or does it seem to you that it is for nothing that 5
the holy Writings say, "The spirit which God put into
our hearts has a strong desire for us"? But he gives 6
more grace. So that the Writings say, "God is against
the men of pride, but he gives grace to those who make
themselves low before him". For this cause be ruled 7
by God; but make war on the Evil One and he will be
put to flight before you. Come near to God and he will 8
come near to you. Make your hands clean, you evil-
doers; put away deceit from your hearts, you false in
mind. Be troubled, with sorrow and weeping; let your 9
laughing be turned to sorrow and your joy to grief.
Make yourselves low in the eyes of the Lord and you 10
will be lifted up by him.

Do not say evil against one another, my brothers. 11
He who says evil against his brother or makes himself
his brother's judge, says evil against the law and is
judging the law: and in judging the law you become,
not a doer of the law but a judge. There is only one 12
judge and lawgiver, even he who has the power of
salvation and of destruction; but who are you to be your
neighbour's judge?

How foolish it is to say, "Today or tomorrow we will 13
go into this town, and be there for a year, and do
business there, and get wealth": when you are not 14
certain what will take place tomorrow. What is your
life? It is a mist, which is seen for a little time and then
is gone. But the right thing to say would be, "If it is 15
the Lord's pleasure and if we are still living, we will
do this and that". But now you go on glorying in your 16
pride: and all such glorying is evil. The man who has 17

knowledge of how to do good and does not do it, to him it is sin.

MEN OF WEALTH

5 COME now, you men of wealth, give yourselves to 1
weeping and crying because of the bitter troubles
which are coming to you. Your wealth is unclean 2
and insects have made holes in your clothing. Your gold 3
and your silver are wasted and their waste will be a
witness against you, burning into your flesh. You have
put by your store in the last days. See, the money which 4
you falsely kept back from the workers cutting the grass
in your field, is crying out against you; and the cries
of those who took in your grain have come to the ears
of the Lord of armies. You have been living delicately 5
on earth and have taken your pleasure; you have made
your hearts fat for a day of destruction. You have given 6
your decision against the upright man and have put him
to death. He puts up no fight against you.

Go on waiting calmly, my brothers, till the coming 7
of the Lord, like the farmer waiting for the good fruit
of the earth till the early and late rains have come. Be 8
as calm in your waiting; let your hearts be strong:
because the coming of the Lord is near. Say no hard 9
things against one another, brothers, so that you will
not be judged; see, the judge is waiting at the doors.
Take as an example of pain nobly undergone and of 10
strength in trouble, the prophets who gave to men the
words of the Lord. We say that those men who have 11
gone through pain are happy: you have the story of
Job and the troubles through which he went and have
seen that the Lord was full of pity and mercy in the end.

THE USE OF PRAYER

But most of all, my brothers, do not take oaths, not 12
by the heaven, or by the earth, or by any other thing:

but let your Yes be Yes, and your No be No: so that you may not be judged.

Is anyone among you in trouble? let him say prayers. 13
Is anyone glad? let him make a song of praise. Is 14
anyone among you ill? let him send for the rulers of the church; and let them say prayers over him, putting oil on him in the name of the Lord. And by the prayer 15
of faith the man who is ill will be made well, and he will be lifted up by the Lord, and for any sin which he has done he will have forgiveness. So then, make a state- 16
ment of your sins to one another, and say prayers for one another so that you may be made well. The prayer of a good man is full of power in its working. Elijah 17
was a man of flesh and blood as we are, and he made a strong prayer that there might be no rain; and there was no rain on the earth for three years and six months. And he made another prayer, and the heaven sent down 18
rain and the earth gave her fruit.

My brothers, if one of you has gone out of the way 19
of the true faith and another has made him see his error; be certain that he through whom a sinner has been turned 20
from the error of his way, keeps a soul from death and is the cause of forgiveness for sins without number.

THE FIRST LETTER OF PETER

1 PETER, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to the saints 1
who are living in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia,
Asia and Bithynia, who, through the purpose of 2
God, have been made holy by the Spirit, disciples of
Jesus, made clean by his blood: May you have grace
and peace in full measure.

A HERITAGE IN HEAVEN

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus 3
Christ, who through his great mercy has given us a new
birth and a living hope by the coming again of Jesus
Christ from the dead, and a heritage fair, holy, and for 4
ever new, waiting in heaven for you, who, by the power 5
of God are kept, through faith, for that salvation which
will be seen at the last day. You have cause for great 6
joy in this, though it may have been necessary for you
to be troubled for a little time, being tested in all sorts
of ways, so that the true metal of your faith, being of 7
much greater price than gold (which, though it comes
to an end, is tested by fire), may come to light in praise
and glory and honour, at the revelation of Jesus Christ:
to whom your love is given, though you have not seen 8
him; and the faith which you have in him, though you
do not see him now, gives you joy greater than words
and full of glory: for so you have the true end of your 9
faith, even the salvation of your souls. For the prophets 10
who gave the news of the grace which would come to
you, made search with all care for knowledge of this
salvation; attempting to see what sort of time the Spirit 11
of Christ which was in them was pointing to, when it
gave witness to the pains which Christ would undergo

and the glories which would come after them. And it 12
was made clear to those prophets that they were God's
servants not for themselves but for you, to give you
word of the things which have now come to your ears
from the preachers of the good news through the Holy
Spirit sent down from heaven; things which even angels
have a desire to see.

THE GRACE WHICH IS TO COME

So make your minds ready, and keep on the watch, 13
hoping with all your power for the grace which is to
come to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; like 14
children ruled by God, do not go back to the old desires
of the time when you were without knowledge: but be 15
holy in every detail of your lives, as he, whose servants
you are, is holy; because it has been said in the Writings, 16
"You are to be holy, for I am holy". And if you give 17
the name of Father to him who, judging every man by
his acts, has no respect for a man's position, then go
in fear while you are on this earth: being conscious that 18
you have been made free from that foolish way of life
which was your heritage from your fathers, not through
a payment of things like silver or gold which come to
destruction, but through holy blood, like that of a clean 19
and unmarked lamb, even the blood of Christ: who was 20
marked out by God before the making of the world,
but was caused to be seen in these last times for you,
who through him have faith in God who took him up 21
again from the dead into glory; so that your faith and
hope might be in God. And as you have made your 22
souls clean, being ruled by what is true, and loving
one another without deceit, see that your love is warm
and from the heart: because you have had a new birth, 23
not from the seed of man, but from eternal seed, through
the word of a living and unchanging God. For it is said, 24

All flesh is like grass,
And all its glory like the flower of the grass.

The grass becomes dry and the flower dead:
But the word of the Lord is eternal. 25

And this is the word of the good news which was given to you.

THE CHIEF STONE OF THE BUILDING

2 So putting away all wrongdoing, and all tricks and 1
deceits and envies and evil talk, be full of desire 2
for the true milk of the word, as babies at their
mothers' breasts, so that you may go on to salvation; if 3
you have had a taste of the grace of the Lord: to whom 4
you come, as to a living stone, not honoured by men,
but of great and special value to God; you, as living 5
stones, are being made into a house of the spirit, a holy
order of priests, making those offerings of the spirit
which are pleasing to God through Jesus Christ. Because 6
it is said in the Writings,

See, I am placing a keystone in Zion, of great and special value;
And the man who has faith in him will not be put to shame.

And the value is for you who have faith; but it is said 7
for those without faith,

The very stone which the builders put on one side,
Was made the chief stone of the building;

and, 8

A stone of falling, a rock of trouble;

the word is the cause of their fall, because they go
against it; and this was the purpose of God. But you 9
are a special people, a holy nation, priests and kings,
a people given up completely to God, so that you may
make clear the virtues of him who took you out of the
dark into the light of heaven. In the past you were not 10
a people, but now you are the people of God; then there

was no mercy for you, but now mercy has been given to you.

My loved ones, I make this request with all my heart, 11
that, as those for whom this world is a strange country,
you will keep yourselves from the desires of the flesh
which make war against the soul; being of good behaviour 12
among the Gentiles; so that though they say now that
you are evil-doers, they may see your good works and
give glory to God when he comes to be their judge.

Keep all the laws of men because of the Lord; those 13
of the king, who is over all, and those of the rulers who 14
are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers and
for the praise of those who do well. Because it is God's 15
pleasure that foolish and narrow-minded men may be
put to shame by your good behaviour: as those who are 16
free, not using your free position as a cover for wrong-
doing, but living as the servants of God; have respect 17
for all, loving the brothers, fearing God, honouring the
king.

SERVANTS AND MASTERS

Servants, take orders from your masters with all 18
respect; not only if they are good and gentle, but even
if they are bad-humoured. For it is a sign of grace if 19
a man, desiring to do right in the eyes of God, undergoes
pain as punishment for something which he has not
done. What credit is it if, when you have done evil, 20
you take your punishment quietly? but if you are given
punishment for doing right, and take it quietly, this is
pleasing to God. This is God's purpose for you: because 21
Jesus himself underwent punishment for you, giving you
an example, so that you might go in his footsteps: who 22
did no evil, and there was no deceit in his mouth: to 23
sharp words he gave no sharp answer; when he was
undergoing pain, no angry word came from his lips;
but he put himself into the hands of the judge of
righteousness: he took our sins on himself, giving his 24
body to be nailed on the tree, so that we, being dead to

sin, might have a new life in righteousness, and by his wounds we have been made well. Because, like sheep, 25
you had gone out of the way; but now you have come back to him who keeps watch over your souls.

WIVES AND HUSBANDS

3 WIVES, be ruled by your husbands; so that even 1
if some of them give no attention to the word, their hearts may be changed by the behaviour of their wives, when they see your holy behaviour in 2
the fear of God. Do not let your ornaments be those 3
of the body such as dressing of the hair, or putting on of jewels of gold or fair clothing; but let them be those 4
of the unseen man of the heart, the ever-shining ornament of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is of great price in the eyes of God. And these were the ornaments of 5
the holy women of the past, whose hope was in God, being ruled by their husbands: as Sarah was ruled by 6
Abraham, naming him lord; whose children you are if you do well, and are not put in fear by any danger.

And you husbands, give thought to your way of life 7
with your wives, giving honour to the woman who is the feebler vessel, but who has an equal part in the heritage of the grace of life; so that you may not be kept from prayer.

Last of all, see that you are all in agreement; feeling 8
for one another, loving one another like brothers, full of pity, without pride: not giving back evil for evil, or 9
curse for curse, but in place of cursing, blessing; because this is the purpose of God for you that you may have a heritage of blessing. For it is said, 10

Let the man who has a love of life,
Desiring to see good days,
Keep his tongue from evil
And his lips from words of deceit:
And let him be turned from evil and do good; 11

Searching for peace and going after it with all his heart.
For the eyes of the Lord are on the upright, 12
And his ears are open to their prayers:
But the face of the Lord is against those who do evil.

GOD'S PURPOSE

Who will do you any damage if you keep your minds 13
fixed on what is good? But you are happy if you undergo 14
pain because of righteousness; have no part in their fear
and do not be troubled; but give honour to Christ in 15
your hearts as your Lord; and be ready at any time when
you are questioned about the hope which is in you, to
give an answer in the fear of the Lord and without pride;
being conscious that you have done no wrong; so that 16
those who say evil things about your good way of life
as Christians may be put to shame. Because if it is 17
God's purpose for you to undergo pain, it is better to
do so for well-doing than for evil-doing. Because Christ 18
once went through pain for sins, the upright one taking
the place of sinners, so that through him we might come
back to God; being put to death in the flesh, but given
life in the Spirit; by whom he went to the spirits in 19
prison, preaching to those who, in the days of Noah, 20
went against God's orders; but God in his mercy kept
back the punishment, while Noah got ready the ark, in
which a small number, that is to say eight persons, got
salvation through water: and baptism, of which this is 21
an image, now gives you salvation, not by washing clean
the flesh, but by making you free from the sense of sin
before God, through the coming again of Jesus Christ
from the dead; who has gone into heaven, and is at the 22
right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers
having been put under his rule.

THE DEATH OF THE FLESH

4 So that as Jesus was put to death in the flesh, do you 1
yourselves be of the same mind; for the death of
the flesh puts an end to sin; so that you may give 2
the rest of your lives in the flesh, not to the desires of
men, but to the purpose of God. Because for long enough, 3
in times past, we have been living after the way of the
Gentiles, given up to the desires of the flesh, to drinking
and feasting and loose behaviour, and unclean worship
of images; and they are wondering that you no longer 4
go with them in this violent wasting of life, and are
saying evil things of you: but they will have to give an 5
account of themselves to him who is ready to be the
judge of the living and the dead. For this was the 6
reason why the good news of Jesus was given even to
the dead, so that they might be judged as men in the
flesh, but might be living before God in the spirit.

But the end of all things is near: so be serious in your 7
behaviour and keep on the watch with prayer; and most 8
of all be warm in your love for one another; because in
love there is forgiveness for sins without number: keep 9
open house for all with a glad heart; making distribution 10
among one another of whatever has been given to you,
like true servants of the unmeasured grace of God; if 11
anyone has anything to say, let it be as the words of
God; if anyone has the desire to be the servant of others,
let him do it in the strength which is given by God;
so that in all things God may have the glory through
Jesus Christ, whose are the glory and the power for
ever.

Dear brothers, do not be surprised, as if it was some- 12
thing strange, if your faith is tested as by fire: but be 13
glad that you are given a part in the pains of Christ;
so that at the revelation of his glory you may have great
joy. If men say evil things of you because of the name 14
of Christ, happy are you; for the Spirit of glory and of
God is resting on you. Let no one among you undergo 15

punishment as a taker of life, or as a thief, or as an evil-doer, or as one who is over-interested in other men's business; but if he undergoes punishment as a Christian, 16
that is no shame to him; let him give glory to God in this name. For the time has come for the judging, 17
starting with the church of God; but if it makes a start with us, what will be the end of those who are not under the rule of God? And if it is hard for even the good 18
man to get salvation, what chance has the man without religion, or the sinner? For this reason let those who by 19
the purpose of God undergo punishment, keep on in well-doing and put their souls into the safe hands of their Maker.

"KEEP WATCH OVER THE FLOCK"

5 I WHO am myself one of the rulers of the church, and 1
a witness of the death of Christ, having my part in the coming glory, send this serious request to the
chief men among you: Keep watch over the flock of God 2
which is in your care, using your authority, not as forced to do so, but gladly; and not for unclean profit but with
a ready mind; not as lords over God's heritage, but 3
making yourselves examples to the flock. And at the 4
coming of the chief Keeper of the sheep, you will be given the eternal crown of glory. And in the same way, 5
let the younger men be ruled by the older ones. Let all of you put away pride and make yourselves ready to be servants: for God is a hater of pride, but he gives grace to those who make themselves low. For this 6
cause make yourselves low under the strong hand of God, so that when the time comes you may be lifted up; putting all your troubles on him, for he takes care 7
of you. Be serious and keep watch; the Evil One, who 8
is against you, goes about like a lion with open mouth in search of food; do not give way to him but be strong 9
in your faith, in the knowledge that your brothers who are in the world undergo the same troubles. And after 10

you have undergone pain for a little time, the God of all grace who has given you a part in his eternal glory through Christ Jesus, will himself give you strength and support, and make you complete in every good thing; his is the power for ever. So be it. 11

I have sent you this short letter by Silvanus, a true 12
brother, in my opinion; comforting you and witnessing that this is the true grace of God; keep to it. She who 13
is in Babylon, who has a part with you in the purpose of God, sends you her love; and so does my son Mark. Give one another the kiss of love. 14

Peace be to you all in Christ.

THE SECOND LETTER OF PETER

1 SIMON PETER, a servant and Apostle of Jesus Christ, 1
to those who with us have a part in the same holy
faith in the righteousness of our God and Saviour
Jesus Christ: May grace and peace ever be increasing 2
in you, in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord;
because by his power he has given us everything necessary 3
for life and righteousness, through the knowledge of him
who has been our guide by his glory and virtue; and 4
through this he has given us the hope of great rewards
highly to be valued; so that by them we might have our
part in God's being, and be made free from the destruc-
tion which is in the world through the desires of the
flesh. So, for this very cause, take every care; joining 5
virtue to faith, and knowledge to virtue, and self-control 6
to knowledge, and a quiet mind to self-control, and fear
of God to a quiet mind; and love of the brothers to fear 7
of God, and to love of the brothers, love itself. For if 8
you have these things in good measure, they will make
you fertile and full of fruit in the knowledge of our Lord
Jesus Christ. For the man who has not these things is 9
blind, seeing only what is near, having no memory of
how he was made clean from his old sins. For this cause, 10
my brothers, take all the more care to make your selec-
tion and approval certain; for if you do these things you
will never have a fall: for so the way will be open to 11
you into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour
Jesus Christ.

PETER IS CONSCIOUS OF HIS COMING DEATH

For this reason I will be ready at all times to keep 12
your memory of these things awake, though you have

the knowledge of them now and are well based in your present faith. And it seems right to me, as long as I am in this tent of flesh, to keep your minds awake by working upon your memory; for I am conscious that in a short time I will have to put off this tent of flesh, as our Lord Jesus Christ has made clear to me. And I will take every care so that you may have a clear memory of these things after my death. For when we gave you news of the power and the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, our teaching was not based on stories put together by art, but we were eye-witnesses of his glory. For God the Father gave him honour and glory, when such a voice came to him out of the great glory, saying, "This is my dearly-loved Son, with whom I am well pleased". And this voice came from heaven even to our ears, when we were with him on the holy mountain. And so the words of the prophets are made more certain; and it is well for you to give attention to them as to a light shining in a dark place, till the dawn comes, and the morning star is seen in your hearts; being conscious in the first place that no man by himself may give a special sense to the words of the prophets. For these words did not ever come through the impulse of men: but the prophets had them from God, being moved by the Holy Spirit.

AGAINST FALSE PROPHETS

2 BUT there were false prophets among the people, as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly put forward wrong teachings for your destruction, even turning away from the Lord who gave himself for them; whose destruction will come quickly, and they themselves will be the cause of it. And a great number will go with them in their evil ways, through whom the true way will have a bad name. And in their desire for profit they will come to you with words of deceit, like traders doing business in souls: whose punishment has been ready for a long time and their destruction

is watching for them. For if God did not have pity for 4
the angels who did evil, but sent them down into hell,
to be kept in chains of eternal night till they were judged;
and did not have mercy on the world which then was, 5
but only kept safe Noah, a preacher of righteousness,
with seven others, when he let loose the waters over
the world of the evil-doers; and sent destruction on 6
Sodom and Gomorrah, burning them up with fire as
an example to those whose way of life might in the
future be unpleasing to him; and kept safe Lot, the 7
upright man, who was deeply troubled by the unclean
life of the evil-doers (because the soul of that upright 8
man living among them was pained from day to day by
seeing and hearing their crimes): the Lord is able to 9
keep the upright safe in the time of testing, and to keep
evil-doers under punishment till the day of judging; but 10
specially those who go after the unclean desires of the
flesh, and make sport of authority. Ready to take chances,
uncontrolled, they have no fear of saying evil of those
in high places: though the angels, who are greater in 11
strength and power, do not make use of violent language
against them before the Lord. But these men, like beasts 12
without reason, whose natural use is to be taken and
put to death, crying out against things of which they
have no knowledge, will undergo that same destruction
which they are designing for others; for the evil which 13
overtakes them is the reward of their evil-doing: such
men take their pleasure in the delights of the flesh even
in the daytime; they are like the marks of a disease,
like poisoned wounds among you, feasting together with
you in joy; having eyes full of evil desire, never having 14
enough of sin; turning feeble souls out of the true way;
they are children of cursing, whose hearts are well used
to bitter envy; turning out of the true way, they have 15
gone wandering in error, after the way of Balaam, the
son of Beor, who was pleased to take payment for
wrongdoing; but his wrongdoing was pointed out to 16
him: an ass, talking with a man's voice, put a stop to

the error of the prophet. These are fountains without 17
water, and mists before a driving storm; for whom the
eternal night is kept in store. For with high-sounding 18
false words, making use of the attraction of unclean
desires of the flesh, they get into their power those newly
made free from those living in error; saying that they 19
will be free, while they themselves are the servants of
destruction; because whatever gets the better of a man
makes a servant of him. For if, after they have got 20
free from the unclean things of the world through the
knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they
are again taken in the net and overcome, their last con-
dition is worse than their first. For it would have been 21
better for them to have had no knowledge of the way of
righteousness, than to go back again from the holy law
which was given to them, after having knowledge of it.
They are an example of that true saying, "The dog has 22
gone back to the food it had put out, and the pig which
had been washed to its rolling in the dirty earth".

THE COMING OF THE DAY OF THE LORD

3 MY loved ones, this is now my second letter to you,
and in this as in the first, I am attempting to keep
your true minds awake; so that you may keep in 2
mind the words of the holy prophets in the past, and the
law of the Lord and Saviour which was given to you
by his Apostles. Having first of all the knowledge that 3
in the last days there will be men who, ruled by their
evil desires, will make sport of holy things, saying, 4
"Where is the hope of his coming? from the death
of the fathers till now everything has gone on as it was
from the making of the world." But in taking this view 5
they put out of their minds the memory that in the old
days there was a heaven, and an earth lifted out of the
water and circled by water, by the word of God; and 6
that the world which then was came to an end through
the overflowing of the waters. But the present heaven 7
and the present earth have been kept for destruction by

fire, which is waiting for them on the day of the judging and destruction of evil men.

But, my loved ones, keep in mind this one thing, that 8
with the Lord one day is the same as a thousand years,
and a thousand years are no more than one day. The 9
Lord is not slow in keeping his word, as he seems to
some, but he is waiting in mercy for you, not desiring
the destruction of any, but that all may be turned from
their evil ways. But the day of the Lord will come like 10
a thief; and in that day the heavens will be rolled up
with a great noise, and the substance of the earth will
be changed by violent heat, and the world and every-
thing in it will be burned up. Seeing then that all these 11
things are coming to such an end, what sort of persons
is it right for you to be, in all holy behaviour and
righteousness, looking for and truly desiring the coming 12
of the day of God, when the heavens will come to an
end through fire, and the substance of the earth will
be changed by the great heat? But having faith in his 13
word, we are looking for a new heaven and a new earth,
which will be the resting-place of righteousness.

For this cause, my loved ones, as you are looking for 14
these things, take great care that when he comes you
may be in peace before him, free from sin and every evil
thing. And be certain that the long waiting of the Lord 15
is for salvation; even as our brother Paul has said in
his letters to you, from the wisdom which was given to
him; and as he said in all his letters, which had to do 16
with these things; in which are some hard sayings, so
that, like the rest of the holy Writings, they are twisted
by those who are uncertain and without knowledge, to
the destruction of their souls. For this reason, my loved 17
ones, having knowledge of these things before they take
place, take care that you are not turned away by the
error of the uncontrolled, so falling from your true faith.
But be increased in grace and in the knowledge of our 18
Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. May he have glory now
and for ever. So be it.

THE FIRST LETTER OF JOHN

1 THAT which was from the first, which has come to 1
our ears, and which we have seen with our eyes,
looking on it and touching it with our hands, about
the Word of life (and the life was made clear to us, and 2
we have seen it, and are witnessing to it and giving
you word of that eternal life which was with the Father
and was seen by us); we give you word of all we have 3
seen and everything which has come to our ears, so that
you may be united with us; and we are united with the
Father and with his Son Jesus Christ: and we are writing 4
these things to you so that our joy may be made complete.

This is the word which came to us from him and which 5
we give to you, that God is light and in him there is
nothing dark. If we say we are joined to him, and are 6
walking still in the dark, our words are false and our acts
are untrue: but if we are walking in the light, as he is 7
in the light, we are all united with one another, and the
blood of Jesus his Son makes us clean from all sin. If we 8
say that we have no sin, we are false to ourselves, and
there is nothing true in us. If we say openly that we 9
have done wrong, he is upright and true to his word,
giving us forgiveness of sins and making us clean from
all evil. If we say that we have no sin, we make him 10
false and his word is not in us.

FORGIVENESS OF SINS

2 MY little children, I am writing these things to you 1
so that you may be without sin. And if any man
is a sinner, we have a friend and helper with the
Father, Jesus Christ the upright one: he is the offering 2
for our sins; and not for ours only, but for all the world.

And by this we may be certain that we have knowledge 3
of him, if we keep his laws. The man who says, "I have 4
knowledge of him," and does not keep his laws, is false,
and there is nothing true in him: but in every man who 5
keeps his word, the love of God is made complete. By
this we may be certain that we are in him: he who says 6
that he is living in him, will do as he did.

My loved ones, I do not give you a new law, but an 7
old law which you had from the first; this old law is the
word which came to your ears. Again, I give you a new 8
law, which is true in him and in you; for the night is
near its end and the true light is even now shining out.
He who says that he is in the light, and has hate in his 9
heart for his brother, is still in the dark. He who has 10
love for his brother is in the light, and there is no cause
of error in him. But he who has hate for his brother is 11
in the dark, walking in the dark with no knowledge of
where he is going, unable to see because of the dark.

I am writing to you, my children, because you have 12
forgiveness of sins through his name. I am writing to 13
you, fathers, because you have knowledge of him who
was from the first. I am writing to you, young men,
because you have overcome the Evil One. I have sent
a letter to you, children, because you have knowledge
of the Father. I have sent a letter to you, fathers, 14
because you have knowledge of him who was from the
first. I have sent a letter to you, young men, because
you are strong, and the word of God is in you, and
because you have overcome the Evil One. Have no love 15
for the world or for the things which are in the world.
If any man has love for the world, the love of the Father
is not in him. Because everything in the world, the 16
desire of the flesh, the desire of the eyes, and the pride
of life, is not of the Father but of the world. And the 17
world and its desires is coming to an end: but he who
does God's pleasure is living for ever.

THE LAST HOUR

Little children, it is the last hour; and as you were 18
given word that the *Antichrist* would come, so now a
number of Antichrists have come to you; and by this we
are certain that it is the last hour. They went out from 19
us but they were not of us; if they had been of us they
would still be with us: but they went out from us so
that it might be made clear that they were not of us.
And you have the Spirit from the Holy One and you 20
all have knowledge. I have not sent you this letter 21
because you have no knowledge of what is true, but
because you have knowledge, and because that which is
false has nothing in common with that which is true.
Who is false but he who says that Jesus is not the Christ? 22
He is the Antichrist who has no belief in the Father or
the Son. He who has no belief in the Son, has not the 23
Father: he who makes clear his belief in the Son has
the Father. But as for you, keep in your hearts the 24
things which were made clear to you from the first.
If you keep these things in your hearts you will be kept
in the Father and the Son. And this is the hope which 25
he gave you, even eternal life. I am writing these things 26
to you about those whose purpose is that you may be
turned out of the true way. As for you, the Spirit which 27
he gave you is still in you, and you have no need of any
teacher; but as his Spirit gives you teaching about all
things, and is true and not false, so keep your hearts
in him, through the teaching which he has given you.
And now, my children, keep your hearts in him; so that 28
at his revelation, we may have no fear or shame before
him at his coming. If you have knowledge that he is 29
upright, it is clear to you that everyone who does
righteousness is his offspring.

THE LOVE OF THE FATHER

3 SEE what great love the Father has given us in naming us the children of God; and such we are. For this cause the world does not see who we are, because it did not see who he was. My loved ones, now we are children of God, and at present it is not clear what we are to be. We are certain that at his revelation we will be like him; for we will see him as he is. And everyone who has this hope in him makes himself holy, even as he is holy. Everyone who is a sinner goes against the law, for sin is going against the law. And you have knowledge that he came to take away sin: and in him there is no sin. Anyone who is in him does no sin; anyone who is a sinner has not seen him and has no knowledge of him. My little children, let no man take you out of the true way: he who does righteousness is upright, even as he is upright; the sinner is a child of the Evil One; for the Evil One has been a sinner from the first. And the Son of God was seen on earth so that he might put an end to the works of the Evil One. Anyone who is a son of God does no sin, because he still has God's seed in him; he is not able to be a sinner, because God is his Father. In this way it is clear who are the children of God and who are the children of the Evil One; anyone who does not do righteousness or who has no love for his brother, is not a child of God. Because this is the word which was given to you from the first, that we are to have love for one another; not being of the Evil One like Cain, who put his brother to death. And why did he put him to death? Because his works were evil and his brother's works were good.

OUT OF DEATH INTO LIFE

Do not be surprised, my brothers, if the world has no love for you. We are conscious that we have come out of death into life because of our love for the brothers.

He who has no love is still in death. Anyone who has 15
hate for his brother is a taker of life, and you may be
certain that no taker of life has eternal life in him. In 16
this we see what love is, because he gave his life for us;
and it is right for us to give our lives for the brothers.
But if a man has this world's goods, and sees that his 17
brother is in need, and keeps his heart shut against his
brother, how is it possible for the love of God to be in
him? My little children, do not let our love be in word 18
and in tongue, but let it be in act and in good faith.
In this way we may be certain that we are true, and may 19
give our heart comfort before him, when our heart says 20
that we have done wrong; because God is greater than
our heart, and has knowledge of all things. My loved 21
ones, if our heart does not say that we have done wrong,
we have no fear before him; and he gives us all our 22
requests, because we keep his laws, and do the things
which are pleasing in his eyes. And this is his law, that 23
we have faith in the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and
love for one another, even as he said to us. He who keeps 24
his laws is in God and God is in him. And the Spirit
which he gave us is our witness that he is in us.

GOD IS LOVE

4 My loved ones, do not put your faith in every spirit, 1
but put them to the test, to see if they are from
God: because a great number of false prophets
have gone out into the world. By this you may have know- 2
ledge of the Spirit of God: every spirit which says that
Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God: and every 3
spirit which does not say this is not from God: this is
the spirit of *Antichrist*, of which you have had word;
and it is in the world even now. You are of God, my 4
little children, and you have overcome them because he
who is in you is greater than he who is in the world.
They are of the world, so their talk is the world's talk, 5
and the world gives ear to them. We are of God: he 6

who has the knowledge of God gives ear to us; he who is not of God does not give ear to us. By this we may see which is the true spirit, and which is the spirit of error.

My loved ones, let us have love for one another: 7
because love is of God, and everyone who has love is
a son of God and has knowledge of God. He who has 8
no love has no knowledge of God, because God is love.
And the love of God was made clear to us when he sent 9
his only Son into the world so that we might have life
through him. And this is love, not that we had love 10
for God, but that he had love for us, and sent his Son
to be an offering for our sins. My loved ones, if God 11
had such love for us, it is right for us to have love for
one another. No man has ever seen God: if we have 12
love for one another, God is in us and his love is made
complete in us: and his Spirit which he has given us is 13
the witness that we are in him and he is in us. And we 14
have seen and give witness that the Father sent the
Son to be the Saviour of the world. Everyone who says 15
openly that Jesus is the Son of God, has God in him and
is in God. And we have seen and had faith in the love 16
which God has for us. God is love, and everyone who
has love is in God, and God is in him. In this way love 17
is made complete in us, so that we may be without fear
on the day of judging; because as he is, so are we in this
world. There is no fear in love: true love has no room 18
for fear, because where fear is, there is pain; and he who
is not free from fear is not complete in love. We have 19
love for God because he first had love for us. If a man 20
says, "I have love for God," and has hate for his brother,
his words are false: for how is the man who has no love
for his brother whom he has seen, able to have love
for God whom he has not seen? And this is the word 21
which we have from him, that he who has love for God
is to have the same love for his brother.

POWER TO OVERCOME THE WORLD

5 EVERYONE who has faith that Jesus is the Christ 1
is a child of God: and everyone who has love for
the Father has love for his child. In this way, we 2
are certain that we have love for the children of God,
when we have love for God and keep his laws. For 3
loving God is keeping his laws: and his laws are not
hard. Anything which comes from God is able to over- 4
come the world: and the power by which we have
overcome the world is our faith. Who is able to over- 5
come the world but the man who has faith that Jesus
is the Son of God? This is he who came by water and 6
by blood, Jesus Christ; not by water only but by water
and by blood. And the Spirit is the witness, because 7
the Spirit is true. There are three witnesses, the Spirit, 8
the water, and the blood: and all three are in agreement.
If we take the witness of men to be true, the witness of 9
God is greater: because this is the witness which God
has given about his Son. He who has faith in the Son 10
of God has the witness in himself: he who has not faith
in God makes him false, because he has not faith in the
witness which God has given about his Son. And his 11
witness is this, that God has given us eternal life, and
this life is in his Son. He who has the Son has the life; 12
he who has not the Son of God has not the life.

I have put these things in writing for you who have 13
faith in the name of the Son of God, so that you may be
certain that you have eternal life. And we have no fear 14
before him that if we make any request to him which is
right in his eyes, he will give ear to us: and if we are 15
certain that he gives ear to all our requests, we are
equally certain that we will get our requests. If a man 16
sees his brother doing a sin which is not bad enough
for death, let him make a prayer to God, and God will
give life to him whose sin was not bad enough for death.
There is a sin whose punishment is death: I do not say
that he may make such a request then. All evil-doing 17

is sin: but death is not the punishment for every sort of sin.

We are certain that one who is a son of God will do 18
no sin, but the Son of God keeps him so that he is not
touched by the Evil One. We are certain that we are 19
of God, but all the world is in the power of the Evil
One. And we are certain that the Son of God has come, 20
and has given us a clear vision, so that we may see him
who is true, and we are in him who is true, in his Son
Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life. My 21
little children, keep yourselves from false gods.

THE SECOND LETTER OF JOHN

I, A RULER in the church, send word to the noble sister who is of God's selection, and to her children, for whom I have true love; and not only I, but all who have knowledge of what is true; because of this 2
true knowledge which is in us, and will be with us for ever: May grace, mercy and peace be with us from God 3
the Father, and from Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in all true love.

It gave me great joy to see some of your children 4
walking in the true way, even as we were ordered to do by the Father. And now, my sister, I make request 5
to you, not sending you a new law, but the law which we had from the first, that we have love for one another. And love is the keeping of his laws. This is the law 6
which was given to you from the first, so that you might keep it. Because a number of false teachers have gone 7
out into the world, who do not give witness that Jesus Christ came in the flesh. Such a one is a false teacher and *Antichrist*. Keep watch over yourselves, so that 8
you do not make our work of no effect, but may get your full reward. Anyone who goes on and does not 9
keep to the teaching of Christ, has not God: he who keeps to the teaching has the Father and the Son. If 10
anyone comes to you not having this teaching, do not take him into your house or give him words of love: for he who gives him words of love has a part in his 11
evil works.

Having much to say to you, it is not my purpose to 12
put it all down with paper and ink: but I am hoping to come to you, and to have talk with you face to face, so that your joy may be full. The children of your noble 13
sister, who is of God's selection, send you their love.

THE THIRD LETTER OF JOHN

I, A RULER in the church, send word to the well-loved 1
Gaius, for whom I have true love.

My loved one, it is my prayer that you may do well 2
in all things, and be healthy in body, even as your soul
does well. For it gave me great joy when some of the 3
brothers came and gave witness that you had the true
faith and were walking in the true way. I have no 4
greater joy than to have news that my children are
walking in the true way.

My loved one, you are doing a good work in being 5
kind to those brothers who come from other places; who 6
have given witness to the church of your love for them:
and you will do well to send them on their way well
cared for, as is right for servants of God: for they went 7
out for love of the Name, taking nothing from the
Gentiles. So it is right for us to take in such men as 8
guests, so that we may take our part in the work of the
true faith.

I sent a letter to the church, but Diotrephes, whose 9
desire is ever to have the first place among them, will
not have us there. So if I come, I will keep in mind the 10
things he does, talking against us with evil words: and
as if this was not enough, he does not take the brothers
into his house, and those who are ready to take them in,
he keeps from doing so, putting them out of the church
if they do. My loved one, do not be copying what is 11
evil, but what is good. He who does good is of God:
he who does evil has not seen God. Demetrius has the 12
approval of all men and of what is true: and we give the
same witness, and you are certain that our witness is true.

I had much to say to you, but it is not my purpose to 13
put it all down with ink and pen: but I am hoping to see 14
you in a short time, and to have talk with you face to
face. May you have peace. Your friends here send you
their love. Give my love to our friends by name.

THE LETTER OF JUDE

JUDE, a servant of Jesus Christ and the brother of James, to those of God's selection who have been made holy by God the Father and are kept safe for Jesus Christ: May mercy and peace and love be increased in you. 1 2

My loved ones, while my thoughts were full of a letter which I was going to send you about our common salvation, it was necessary for me to send you one requesting you with all my heart to go on fighting strongly for the faith which has been given to the saints once and for ever. For certain men have come among you secretly, marked out before in the holy Writings for this evil fate, men without the fear of God, turning his grace into an unclean thing, and false to our only Master and Lord Jesus Christ. 3 4

Now it is my purpose to put you in mind, though you had knowledge of all these things once for all, of how the Lord, having taken a people safely out of Egypt, later sent destruction on those who had no faith; and the angels who did not keep to their kingdom but went out from the place which was theirs, he has put in eternal chains and in dark night till the great day of the judging. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the towns near them, having like these, given themselves up to unclean desires and gone after strange flesh, have been made an example, undergoing the punishment of eternal fire. In the same way these dreamers make the flesh unclean, having no respect for authorities, and say evil of rulers. Now when Michael, one of the chief angels, was fighting against the Evil One for the body of Moses, fearing to make use of violent words against him, he only said, "May the Lord be your judge". But these men say evil about such things as they have no knowledge 5 6 7 8 9 10

of; and the things of which they have natural knowledge,
like beasts without reason, are the cause of their destruc-
tion. A curse on them! They have gone in the way of 11
Cain, running uncontrolled into the error of Balaam,
for reward, and have come to destruction by saying evil
against the Lord like Korah. These men are unseen rocks 12
at your love-feasts, when they take part in them with
you, keepers of sheep who without fear take the food
of the sheep; clouds without water rushing before the
wind, wasted trees without fruit, twice dead, pulled up
by the roots, violent waves of the sea, streaming with 13
their shame, wandering stars for whom the darkest night
is kept in store for ever. The prophet Enoch, who was 14
the seventh after Adam, said of these men, "The Lord
came with tens of thousands of his saints, to be the judge 15
of all, and to give a decision against all those whose
lives are unpleasing to him, because of the evil acts
which they have done, and because of all the hard things
which sinners without fear of God have said against
him". These are the men who make trouble, ever 16
desiring change, going after evil pleasures, using high-
sounding words, respecting men's position in the hope
of reward.

But you, my loved ones, keep in memory the words 17
which were said before by the Apostles of our Lord
Jesus Christ, how they said to you, "In the last days 18
there will be men who, guided by their evil desires,
will make sport of holy things". These are the men who 19
make divisions, natural men, not having the Spirit. But 20
you, my loved ones, building yourselves up on your most
holy faith, and making prayers in the Holy Spirit, keep 21
yourselves in the love of God, looking for life eternal
through the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ. And have 22
pity on those who are in doubt; and to some give salva- 23
tion, pulling them out of the fire; and on some have
mercy with fear, hating even the clothing which is made
unclean by the flesh.

Now to him who is able to keep you from falling, 24

and to give you a place in his glory, free from all evil,
with great joy, to the only God our Saviour, through 25
Jesus Christ our Lord, let us give glory and honour and
authority and power, before all time and now and for
ever. So be it.

THE REVELATION OF JOHN

1 THE Revelation of Jesus Christ which God gave 1
him so that his servants might have knowledge of
the things which will quickly take place: and he
sent and made it clear by his angel to his servant John;
who gave witness of the word of God, and of the witness 2
of Jesus Christ, even of all the things which he saw.
A blessing be on the reader, and on those who give ear 3
to the prophet's words, and keep the things which he
has put in the book: for the time is near.

JESUS CHRIST, THE TRUE WITNESS

JOHN to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace 4
to you and peace, from him who is and was and is to
come; and from the seven Spirits which are before his
high seat; and from Jesus Christ, the true witness, the 5
first to come back from the dead, and the ruler of the
kings of the earth. To him who had love for us, and has
made us clean from our sins by his blood; and has made 6
us to be a kingdom, and priests to his God and Father;
to him let glory and power be given for ever and ever.
So be it. See, he comes with the clouds, and every eye 7
will see him, and those by whom he was wounded; and
all the families of the earth will be sorrowing because
of him. Yes, so be it.

"I am the First and the Last," says the Lord God who 8
is and was and is to come, the Ruler of all.

I, John, your brother, who have a part with you in 9
the trouble and the kingdom and the quiet strength of
Jesus, was in the island which is named Patmos, for the
word of God and the witness of Jesus. I was in the 10
Spirit on the Lord's day, and a great voice at my back,

as of a horn, came to my ears, saying, "What you 11
see, put in a book, and send it to the seven churches:
to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to
Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to
Laodicea". And turning to see the voice which said 12
these words to me, I saw seven gold vessels with lights
burning in them; and in the middle of them one like 13
a son of man, clothed with a robe down to his feet,
and with a band of gold round his breasts. And his 14
head and his hair were white like wool, as white as
snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire; and his feet 15
like polished brass, as if it had been burned in a fire;
and his voice was as the sound of great waters. And 16
he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth
came a sharp two-edged sword: and his face was as the
sun shining in its strength. And when I saw him, I went 17
down on my face at his feet as one dead. And he put
his right hand on me, saying, "Have no fear; I am the
first and the last, and the Living one; and I was dead, 18
and see, I am living for ever, and I have the keys of
death and of Hell. Put in writing, then, the things which 19
you have seen, and the things which are, and the things
which will be after these; the secret of the seven stars 20
which you saw in my right hand, and of the seven gold
vessels with burning lights. The seven stars are the
angels of the seven churches: and the seven lights are
the seven churches."

THE CHURCH IN EPHESUS

2 "To the angel of the church in Ephesus say; 1
"'These things says he who has the seven stars
in his right hand, who is walking in the middle
of the seven gold lights: I have knowledge of your 2
doings, and your hard work and long waiting, and that
you will not put up with evil men, and have put to the
test those who say they are Apostles and are not, and
have seen that they are false; and you have the power of 3

waiting, and have undergone trouble because of my
name, without weariness. But I have this against you, 4
that you are turned away from your first love. So keep 5
in mind where you were at first, and be changed in
heart, and do the first works; or I will come to you,
and will take away your light from its place, if your
hearts are not changed. But at least you have the credit 6
of hating the works of the Nicolaitans, as I do. He who 7
has ears, let him give ear to what the Spirit says to the
churches. To him who overcomes will I give of the fruit
of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God.'

THE CHURCH IN SMYRNA

"And to the angel of the church in Smyrna say; 8
"'These things says the first and the last, who was
dead and is living: I have knowledge of your troubles 9
and how poor you are (but you have true wealth), and
the evil words of those who say they are Jews, and are
not, but are a Synagogue of Satan. Have no fear of the 10
things which you will have to undergo: see, the Evil
One will send some of you into prison, so that you may
be put to the test; and you will have great trouble for
ten days. Be true till death, and I will give you the
crown of life. He who has ears let him give ear to what 11
the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will
not come under the power of the second death.'

THE CHURCH IN PERGAMOS

"And to the angel of the church in Pergamos say; 12
"'These things says he who has the sharp two-edged
sword: I have knowledge that your living-place is where 13
Satan has his seat: and you are true to my name, and
were not turned away from your faith in me, even in
the days of Antipas my true witness, who was put to
death among you, where Satan has his place. But I have 14
some things against you, because you have with you

those who keep the teaching of Balaam, by whose suggestion Balak made the children of Israel go out of the right way, taking food which was offered to false gods, and going after the desires of the flesh. And you have those who keep the teaching of the Nicolaitans. See, then, that you have a change of heart; or I will come to you quickly, and will make war against them with the sword of my mouth. He who has ears, let him give ear to what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes will I give of the secret *manna*, and I will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name, of which no one has knowledge but he to whom it is given.'

THE CHURCH IN THYATIRA

"And to the angel of the church in Thyatira say;

"'These things says the Son of God, whose eyes are like a flame of fire, and his feet like polished brass: I have knowledge of your works, and your love and faith and help and strength in trouble, and that your last works are more than the first. But I have this against you, that you let the woman Jezebel say she is a prophet, and give false teaching, making my servants go after the desires of the flesh, and take food offered to false gods. And I gave her time for a change of heart, but she has no mind to give up her unclean ways. See, I will put her into a bed, and those who make themselves unclean with her, into great trouble, if they go on with her works. And I will put her children to death; and all the churches will see that I am he who makes search into the secret thoughts and hearts of men: and I will give to every one of you the reward of your works. But to you I say, to the rest in Thyatira, even to those who have not this teaching, and have no knowledge of the secrets of Satan, as they say; I put on you no other weight. But what you have, keep safe till I come. He who overcomes, and keeps my works to the end,

to him will I give rule over the nations: and he will be 27
ruling them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of the
potter they will be broken; even as I have power
from my Father: and I will give him the morning star. 28
He who has ears, let him give ear to what the Spirit 29
says to the churches.'"

THE CHURCH IN SARDIS

3 "AND to the angel of the church in Sardis say; 1
"'These things says he who has the seven Spirits
of God, and the seven stars: I have knowledge
of your works, that you seem to be living but are dead.
Be on the watch, and make strong the rest of the things 2
which are near to death; because as judged by me your
works have not come up to God's measure. Keep in 3
mind, then, the teaching which was given to you, and
be ruled by it and have a change of heart. If then you
do not keep watch, I will come as a thief, and you will
have no knowledge of the hour when I will come on you.
But you have some names in Sardis who have kept clean 4
their robes; and as a reward they will go in white with
me. He who overcomes will be dressed in white, and 5
I will not take his name from the book of life, and I will
give witness to his name before my Father, and before
his angels. He who has ears, let him give ear to what 6
the Spirit says to the churches.'

THE CHURCH IN PHILADELPHIA

"And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia say; 7
"'These things says he who is holy, he who is true,
he who has the key of David, opening the door so that
it may be shut by no one, and shutting it so that it may
be open to no one. I have knowledge of your works 8
(see, I have put before you an open door which may be
shut by no one), and that you have a little strength, and
have kept my word, and have been true to my name.

See, I will make those of the Synagogue of Satan who 9
say they are Jews, and are not, but say what is false;
I will make them come and give worship before your
feet, and see my love for you. Because you have kept 10
my word in quiet strength, I will keep you from the hour
of testing which is coming on all the world, to put to
the test those who are on earth. I come quickly: keep 11
that which you have, so that no one may take your crown.
He who overcomes I will make him a pillar in the house 12
of my God, and he will go out no more: and I will put
on him the name of my God, and the name of the town
of my God, the new Jerusalem, which comes down out
of heaven from my God, and my new name. He who has 13
ears, let him give ear to what the Spirit says to the
churches.'

THE CHURCH IN LAODICEA

"And to the angel of the church in Laodicea say; 14

"'These things says the true and certain witness, the
head of God's new order: I have knowledge of your 15
works, that you are not cold or warm: it would be better
if you were cold or warm. So because you are not one 16
thing or the other, I will have no more to do with you.
For you say, I have wealth, and have got together goods 17
and land, and have need of nothing; and you are not
conscious of your sad and unhappy condition, that you
are poor and blind and without clothing. If you are 18
wise you will get from me gold tested by fire, so that
you may have true wealth; and white robes to put on,
so that your shame may not be seen; and oil for your
eyes, so that you may see. To all those who are dear to 19
me, I give sharp words and punishment: then with all
your heart have sorrow for your evil ways. See, I am 20
waiting at the door and giving the sign; if my voice
comes to any man's ears and he makes the door open,
I will come in to him, and will take food with him and
he with me. To him who overcomes I will give a place 21
with me on my high seat, even as I overcame, and am

seated with my Father on his high seat. He who has 22
ears, let him give ear to what the Spirit says to the
churches.'"

A DOOR OPEN IN HEAVEN

4 AFTER these things I saw a door open in heaven, 1
and the first voice came to my ears, like the sound
of a horn, saying, "Come up here, and I will make
clear to you the things which are to come". Straight 2
away I was in the Spirit: and saw a high seat in heaven,
and one was seated on it; and to my eyes he was like 3
a *jasper* and a *sardius* stone: and there was a circle of
coloured light round about the high seat, like an *emerald*.
And round about the high seat were four and twenty 4
seats: and on them I saw four and twenty rulers seated,
clothed in white robes; and on their heads crowns of
gold. And out of the high seat came flames and voices 5
and thunders. And seven lights of fire were burning
before the high seat, which are the seven Spirits of God;
and before the high seat there was, as it seemed, a clear 6
sea of glass; and in the middle of the high seat, and
round about it, four beasts full of eyes round about. And 7
the first beast was like a lion, and the second like an
ox, and the third had a face like a man, and the fourth
was like an eagle in flight. And the four beasts, having 8
every one of them six wings, are full of eyes round about
and inside: and they have no rest day and night, saying,
"Holy, holy, holy, Lord God, Ruler of all, who was and
is and is to come". And when the beasts give glory 9
and honour to him who is seated on the high seat, to
him who is living for ever and ever, the four and twenty 10
rulers go down on their faces before him who is seated
on the high seat, and give worship to him who is living
for ever and ever, and take off their crowns before the
high seat, saying, "It is right, our Lord and our God, 11
for you to have glory and honour and power: because
by you were all things made, and by your desire they
came into being".

THE BOOK WITH THE SEVEN STAMPS OF WAX

5 AND I saw in the right hand of him who was seated 1
on the high seat, a book with writing inside it and
on the back, shut with seven stamps of wax. And 2
I saw a strong angel saying in a loud voice, "Who is
able to make the book open, and to undo its stamps?"
And no one in heaven, or on the earth, or under the 3
earth, was able to get the book open, or to take a look
at it. And I was very sad, because there was no one 4
able to get the book open, or to take a look at it. And 5
one of the rulers said to me, "Be not sad: see, the Lion
of the family of Judah, the Root of David, has overcome,
and has power to undo the book and its seven stamps".
And I saw in the middle of the high seat and of the four 6
beasts, and in the middle of the rulers, a Lamb in his
place, which seemed as if it had been put to death,
having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven
Spirits of God, sent out into all the earth. And he came, 7
and took it out of the right hand of him who was seated
on the high seat. And when he had taken the book, the 8
four beasts and the four and twenty rulers went down
on their faces before the Lamb, having every one an
instrument of music, and gold vessels full of perfumes,
which are the prayers of the saints. And their voices 9
are sounding in a new song, saying, "It is right for
you to take the book, and to make it open: for you were
put to death and have made an offering to God of your
blood for men of every family, and language, and people,
and nation, and have made them a kingdom and priests 10
to our God; and they are ruling on the earth". And 11
I saw, and there came to my ears the sound of a great
number of angels round about the high seat and the
beasts and the rulers; and the number of them was ten
thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;
saying with a great voice, "It is right to give to the 12
Lamb who was put to death, power and wealth and
wisdom and strength and honour and glory and blessing".

And to my ears came the voice of everything in heaven, 13
and on the earth, and under the earth, and in the sea, and
all things which are in them, saying, "To him who is
seated on the high seat, and to the Lamb, may blessing
and honour and glory and power be given for ever and
ever". And the four beasts said, "So be it". And the 14
rulers went down on their faces and gave worship.

THE SEVEN STAMPS UNDONE

6 AND I saw when the Lamb undid one of the stamps, 1
and the voice of one of the four beasts came to
my ears, saying as with a voice of thunder, "Come
and see". And I saw a white horse, and he who was 2
seated on it had a bow; and there was given to him
a crown: and he went out with power to overcome.

And when the second stamp was undone, the voice 3
of the second beast came to my ears, saying, "Come and
see". And another horse came out, a red horse: and 4
it was given to him who was seated on it to take peace
from the earth, so that people might put one another
to death: and there was given to him a great sword.

And when the third stamp was undone, the voice of 5
the third beast came to my ears, saying, "Come and see".
And I saw a black horse; and he who was seated on it
had scales in his hand. And a voice came to my ears, 6
from the middle of the four beasts, saying; "A measure
of grain for a penny, and three measures of *barley* for
a penny: and see that you do no damage to the oil and
the wine".

And when the fourth stamp was undone, the voice of 7
the fourth beast came to my ears, saying, "Come and
see". And I saw a grey horse and the name of him who 8
was seated on it was Death; and Hell came after him.
And there was given to them authority over the fourth
part of the earth, to put to destruction by the sword,
and by taking away their food, and by death, and by the
beasts of the earth.

And when the fifth stamp was undone, I saw under 9
the altar the souls of those who had been put to death
for the word of God, and for the witness which they
kept. And they gave a great cry, saying, "How long 10
will it be, O Ruler, holy and true, before you take your
place as judge and give punishment for our blood to
those on the earth?" And there was given to every 11
one a white robe, and they were ordered to take their
rest for a little time, till the number was complete of
the other servants, their brothers, who would be put
to death, even as they had been.

And I saw when the sixth stamp was undone, and 12
there was a great earth-shock; and the sun became black
as hair-cloth, and all the moon became as blood; and the 13
stars of heaven were falling to the earth, like green
fruit from a tree before the force of a great wind. And 14
the heaven was taken away like the roll of a book when
it is rolled up; and all the mountains and islands were
moved out of their places. And the kings of the earth, 15
and the rulers, and the chief captains, and the men of
wealth, and the strong, and every servant and free man,
took flight into the holes and the rocks of the mountains;
and they say to the mountains and to the rocks, "Come 16
down on us, covering us from the face of him who is
seated on the high seat, and from the wrath of the Lamb:
for the great day of their wrath is come, and who may 17
keep his place?"

THE FOUR ANGELS OF THE FOUR WINDS

7 AFTER this I saw four angels in their places at the 1
four points of the earth, keeping back the four
winds in their hands, so that there might be no
moving of the wind on the earth, or on the sea, or on any
tree. And I saw another angel coming up from the east, 2
having the mark of the living God: and he said with
a great voice to the four angels, to whom it was given
to do damage to the earth and the sea, "Do no damage 3

to the earth, or the sea, or the trees, till we have put
a mark on the servants of our God". And there came 4
to my ears the number of those who had the mark on
their brows, a hundred and forty and four thousand,
who were marked out of every tribe of the people of
Israel.

Of the tribe of Judah were marked twelve thousand: 5
Of the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Gad twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Asher twelve thousand: 6
Of the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand: 7
Of the tribe of Levi twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Zebulun twelve thousand: 8
Of the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand:
Of the tribe of Benjamin were marked twelve thousand.

After these things I saw a great army of people more 9
than might be numbered, out of every nation, and all
tribes and peoples and languages, taking their places
before the high seat and before the Lamb, dressed in
white robes, and with branches in their hands, saying 10
with a loud voice, "Salvation to our God who is seated
on the high seat, and to the Lamb". And all the angels 11
were round about the high seat, and about the rulers
and the four beasts; and they went down on their faces
before the high seat, and gave worship to God, saying,
"So be it. Let blessing and glory and wisdom and 12
praise and honour and power and strength be given to
our God for ever and ever. So be it." And one of the 13
rulers made answer, saying to me, "These who have
on white robes, who are they, and where did they come
from?" And I said to him, "My lord, you have know- 14
ledge". And he said to me, "These are they who came
through the great testing, and their robes have been
washed and made white in the blood of the Lamb. For 15
this cause are they before the high seat of God; and

they are his servants day and night in his house: and
he who is seated on the high seat will be a tent over
them. They will never be in need of food or drink: 16
and they will never again be troubled by the burning
heat of the sun: for the Lamb who is on the high seat 17
will be their keeper and their guide to fountains of
living water: and God will make glad their eyes for
ever."

THE SEVEN HORNS

AND when the seventh stamp was undone there was 1
quiet in heaven for about half an hour. And I saw 2
the seven angels who had their place before God;
and seven horns were given to them.

And another angel came and took his place at the 3
altar, having a gold vessel for burning perfume; and
there was given to him much perfume, so that he might
put it with the prayers of all the saints on the gold altar
which was before the high seat. And the smoke of the 4
perfume, with the prayers of the saints, went up before
God out of the angel's hand. And the angel took the 5
vessel; and he made it full of the fire of the altar, and
sent it down on the earth: and there came thunders and
voices, and flames and a shaking of the earth.

And the seven angels who had the seven horns made 6
ready for sounding them.

And at the sounding of the first, a rain of ice and fire, 7
mixed with blood, was sent on the earth: and a third
part of the earth, and a third part of the trees, and all
green grass was burned up.

And at the sounding of the second angel, it was as 8
if a great mountain burning with fire was sent into the
sea: and a third part of the sea became blood, and 9
destruction came on a third part of the living things
which were in the sea, and on a third part of the ships.

And at the sounding of the third angel, there went 10
down from heaven a great star, burning like a flame,
and it came on a third part of the rivers, and on the

fountains of water. And the name of the star is *Worm-* 11
wood: and a third part of the waters became bitter; and
a number of men came to their end because of the waters,
for they were made bitter.

And at the sounding of the fourth angel, a third part 12
of the sun, and of the moon, and of the stars was made
dark, so that there was no light for a third part of the
day or of the night.

And there came to my ears the cry of an eagle in 13
flight in the middle of heaven, saying with a great voice,
"Trouble, trouble, trouble, to all on the earth, because
of the other voices of the horns of the three angels,
whose sounding is still to come".

9 AND at the sounding of the fifth angel I saw a star 1
falling from heaven to the earth: and there was
given to him the key of the great deep. And he 2
made the great deep open and a smoke went up from it,
like the smoke of a great oven; and the sun and the air
were made dark because of the smoke. And from the 3
smoke locusts came out on the earth; and power was
given them, like the power of *scorpions.* And they were 4
ordered to do no damage to the grass of the earth, or
any green thing, or any tree, but only to such men as
have not the mark of God on their brows. And orders 5
were given them not to put them to death, but to give
them great pain for five months: and their pain was as
the pain from the wound of a scorpion. And in those 6
days men will be hoping for death, and it will not come
to them; and they will have a great desire for death,
and death will take flight from them. And the forms of 7
the locusts were like horses made ready for war; and
on their heads they had crowns like gold, and their
faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair like 8
the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth
of lions. And they had breastplates like iron, and the 9
sound of their wings was as the sound of carriages, like
an army of horses rushing to the fight. And they have 10

pointed tails like scorpions; and in their tails is their power to give men wounds for five months. They have 11
over them as king the angel of the great deep: his name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in the Greek language Apollyon.

The first Trouble is past: see, there are still two 12
Troubles to come.

And at the sounding of the sixth angel a voice came 13
to my ears from the horns of the gold altar which is before God, saying to the sixth angel who had the horn, 14
"Make free the four angels who are chained at the great river Euphrates". And the four angels were made free, 15
who were ready for the hour and day and month and year, that they might put to death a third part of men. And the number of the armies of the horsemen was twice 16
ten thousand times ten thousand: the number of them came to my ears. And so I saw the horses in the vision, 17
and those who were seated on them, having breastplates of fire and glass and of burning stone: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths came fire and smoke and a smell of burning. By these evils a third part of men was put to death, by 18
the fire, and the smoke, and the burning smell which came out of their mouths. For the power of the horses 19
is in their mouths and in their tails: because their tails are like snakes, and have heads; and with them they give wounds. And the rest of the people, who were not 20
put to death by these evils, were not turned from the works of their hands, but went on giving worship to evil spirits, and images of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and wood; which are not able to see, or give ear, or go on their feet: and they had no regret for 21
putting men to death, or for their use of strange powers, or for the evil desires of the flesh, or for taking the property of others.

10 AND I saw another strong angel coming down out 1
of heaven, clothed with a cloud; and a circle of
coloured light was round his head, and his face
was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; and 2
he had in his hand a little open book: and he put his
right foot on the sea, and his left on the earth; and he 3
gave a loud cry, like the angry voice of a lion: and at
his cry the voices of the seven thunders were sounding.
And when the seven thunders had given out their voices, 4
I was about to put their words down: and a voice from
heaven came to my ears, saying, "Keep secret the things
which the seven thunders said, and put them not in
writing". And the angel which I saw taking his position 5
on the sea and on the earth, put up his right hand to
heaven, and took his oath by him who is living for ever 6
and ever, who made the heaven and the things in it,
and the earth and the things in it, and the sea and the
things in it, that there would be no more waiting: but 7
in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when the
sound of his horn is about to come, then will the secret
of God be complete, of which he gave the good news
to his servants the prophets. And the voice came to 8
me again from heaven, saying, "Go, take the book which
is open in the hand of the angel who has his place on
the sea and on the earth". And I went to the angel, 9
and said to him, "Give me the little book". And he
said to me: "Put it in your mouth; and it will make
your stomach bitter, but in your mouth it will be sweet
as honey". And I took the little book out of the angel's 10
hand and did as he said; and it was sweet as honey in
my mouth: and when I had taken it, my stomach was
made bitter. And they said to me, "You are to give 11
word again of what is coming in the future to the peoples
and nations and languages and kings".

THE MEASURING ROD

11 AND there was given to me a measuring rod: and 1
one said, "Go up and take the measure of the
house of God, and the altar, and those who do
worship in it. But take not the measure of the space 2
outside the house; because it has been given to the
nations: and the holy town will be under their feet for
forty and two months. And I will give orders to my 3
two witnesses, and they will be prophets for a thousand
two hundred and sixty days, clothed with hair-cloth."
These are the two olive-trees and the two lights, which 4
are before the Lord of the earth. "And if any man would 5
do them damage, fire comes out of their mouth, and
puts an end to those who are working against them: and
if any man has a desire to do them damage, in this way
will he be put to death. These have the power to keep 6
the heaven shut, so that there may be no rain in the
days when they are prophets: and they have power over
the waters to make them into blood, and to send every
sort of disease on the earth as their pleasure is. And 7
when they have come to the end of their witness, the
beast which comes up out of the great deep will make
war on them, and overcome them and put them to death.
And their dead bodies will be in the open street of the 8
great town, which in the spirit is named Sodom and
Egypt, where their Lord was put to death on the cross.
And the peoples and families and languages and nations 9
will be looking on their dead bodies three days and
a half, and will not let their dead bodies be put in the
earth. And those who are on the earth will have pleasure 10
and delight over them; and they will send offerings one
to another because these two prophets gave great trouble
to all on the earth." And after three days and a half 11
the breath of life from God went into them, and they
got up on their feet; and great fear came on those who
saw them. And a great voice from heaven came to their 12
ears, saying to them, "Come up here". And they went

up into heaven in the cloud, and were seen by those desiring their death. And in that hour there was a great 13
earth-shock and a tenth part of the town came to destruction; and in the earth-shock seven thousand persons came to their end: and the rest were in fear, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

The second Trouble is past: see, the third Trouble 14
comes quickly.

THE SEVENTH HORN

And at the sounding of the seventh angel there were 15
great voices in heaven, saying, "The kingdom of the world is become the kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he will have rule for ever and ever". And 16
the four and twenty rulers, who are seated before God on their high seats, went down on their faces and gave worship to God, saying, "We give you praise, O Lord 17
God, Ruler of all, who is and who was; because you have taken up your great power and are ruling your kingdom. And the nations were angry, and your wrath 18
has come, and the time for the dead to be judged, and the time of reward for your servants, the prophets, and for the saints, and for those in whom is the fear of your name, small and great, and the time of destruction for those who made the earth unclean."

And the house of God which is in heaven was open; 19
and the ark of his agreement was seen in his house, and there were flames, and voices, and thunders, and an earth-shock, and a rain of ice.

THE WOMAN WITH THE MAN CHILD

12 And a great sign was seen in heaven; a woman 1
clothed with the sun, and with the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars.
And she was with child; and she gave a cry, in the pains 2
of child-birth. And there was seen another sign in 3
heaven; a great red *dragon*, having seven heads and ten

horns, and on his heads seven crowns. And his tail was 4
pulling a third part of the stars of heaven down to the
earth, and the dragon took his place before the woman
who was about to give birth, so that when the birth
had taken place he might put an end to her child. And 5
she gave birth to a son, a man child, who was to have
rule over all the nations with a rod of iron: and her child
was taken up to God and to his high seat. And the 6
woman took flight to the waste land, where she has
a place made ready by God, so that there they may give
her food a thousand two hundred and sixty days.

WAR IN HEAVEN

And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels 7
going out to the fight with the dragon; and the dragon
and his angels made war, and they were overcome, and 8
there was no more place for them in heaven. And the 9
great dragon was forced down, the old snake, who is
named the Evil One and Satan, by whom all the earth
is turned from the right way; he was forced down to
the earth, and his angels were forced down with him.
And a great voice in heaven came to my ears, saying, 10
"Now is come the salvation, and the power, and the
kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ:
because he who says evil against our brothers before
our God day and night is forced down. And they over- 11
came him through the blood of the Lamb, and the word
of their witness; and loving not their lives they freely
gave themselves up to death. Be glad then, O heavens, 12
and you who are in them. But there is trouble for the
earth and the sea: because the Evil One has come down
to you, being very angry, having the knowledge that
he has but a short time."

And when the dragon saw that he was forced down 13
to the earth, he made cruel attacks on the woman who
gave birth to the man child. And there were given to 14
the woman two wings of a great eagle, so that she might

take flight into the waste land, to her place, where she
is given food for a time, and times, and half a time from
the face of the snake. And the snake sent out of his 15
mouth after the woman a river of water, so that she
might be taken away by the stream. And the earth gave 16
help to the woman, and with open mouth took up the
river which the dragon sent out of his mouth. And the 17
dragon was angry with the woman and went away to
make war on the rest of her seed, who keep the orders
13 of God, and the witness of Jesus: and he took his place 1
on the sand of the sea.

THE BEAST FROM THE SEA

And I saw a beast coming up out of the sea, having
ten horns and seven heads, and on his horns ten
crowns, and on his heads unholy names. And the 2
beast which I saw was like a *leopard*, and his feet were
as the feet of a *bear*, and his mouth as the mouth of
a lion: and the *dragon* gave him his power and his seat
and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as if 3
it had been given a death-wound; and his death-wound
was made well: and all the earth was wondering at the
beast. And they gave worship to the dragon, because 4
he gave authority to the beast; and worshipping the
beast, they said, "Who is like the beast? and who is
able to go to war with him?" And there was given to 5
him a mouth to say words of pride against God; and
there was given to him authority to go on for forty
and two months. And his mouth was open to say evil 6
against God, and against his name, and his tent, even
against those who are in heaven. And it was given to 7
him to make war with the saints and to overcome them:
and there was given to him authority over every family
and people and language and nation. And all who are 8
on the earth will give him worship, everyone whose
name has not been from the first in the book of life of
the Lamb who was put to death. If any man has ears, 9

let him give ear. If any man sends others into prison, 10
into prison he will go: if any man puts to death with the
sword, with the sword will he be put to death. Here
is the quiet strength and the faith of the saints.

THE BEAST FROM THE EARTH

And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth; 11
and he had two horns like a lamb, and his voice was like
that of a dragon. And he makes use of all the authority 12
of the first beast before his eyes. And he makes the
earth and those who are in it give worship to the first
beast, whose death-wound was made well. And he does 13
great signs, even making fire come down from heaven
on the earth before the eyes of men. And those who are 14
on the earth are turned from the true way by him through
the signs which he was given power to do before the
beast; giving orders to those who are on the earth to
make an image to the beast, who was wounded by the
sword, and came to life. And he had power to give 15
breath to the image of the beast, so that words might
come from the image of the beast, and that he might
make all those who did not give worship to the image
of the beast to be put to death. And he gives to all, 16
small and great, the poor and those who have wealth,
the free and those who are not free, a mark on their right
hand or on their brows; and that no man might be able 17
to do trade but he who has the mark, even the name of
the beast or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. 18
He who has knowledge let him get the number of the
beast; because it is the number of a man: and his number
is Six hundred and sixty and six.

THE LAMB ON THE MOUNTAIN OF ZION

14 And I saw the Lamb on the mountain of Zion, and 1
with him a hundred and forty and four thousand,
marked on their brows with his name and the
name of his Father. And a voice from heaven came to 2

my ears, like the sound of great waters, and the sound of loud thunder: and the voice which came to me was like the sound of players, playing on instruments of music. And they made as it seemed a new song before 3
the high seat, and before the four beasts and the rulers: and no man might have knowledge of the song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, even those from the earth whom God has made his for a price. These 4
are they who have not made themselves unclean with women; for they are holy. These are they who go after the Lamb wherever he goes. These were taken from among men to be the first fruits to God and to the Lamb. And in their mouth there was no false word, for they 5
are untouched by evil.

And I saw another angel in flight between heaven 6
and earth, having eternal good news to give to those who are on the earth, and to every nation, and family and language and people; saying with a loud voice, 7
"Have fear of God and give him glory; because the hour of his judging is come; and give worship to him who made heaven and earth and the sea and the fountains of water".

And a second angel came after, saying, "Destruction 8
has come to Babylon the great, which gave to all the nations the wine of the wrath of her evil ways".

And a third angel came after them, saying with 9
a loud voice, "If any man gives worship to the beast and his image, and has his mark on his brow, or on his hand, to him will be given of the wine of God's wrath 10
which is ready unmixed in the cup of his wrath and he will have cruel pain, burning with fire before the holy angels and before the Lamb: and the smoke of their pain 11
goes up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day and night, who give worship to the beast and his image, and have on them the mark of his name". Here is the 12
quiet strength of the saints, who keep the orders of God, and the faith of Jesus.

THE BLESSING ON THE DEAD

And a voice from heaven came to my ears, saying, 13
"Put in writing, There is a blessing on the dead who
from now on come to their end in the Lord": "Yes,"
says the Spirit, "that they may have rest from their
troubles; for their works go with them".

And I saw a white cloud; and on the cloud I saw one 14
seated, like a son of man, having on his head a crown
of gold, and in his hand a sharp curved blade. And another 15
angel came out from the house of God, crying with
a loud voice to him who was seated on the cloud, "Put
in your blade, and let the grain be cut: because the
hour for cutting it is come; for the grain of the earth is
over-ready". And he who was seated on the cloud sent 16
in his blade on the earth; and the grain of the earth was
cut.

And another angel came out from the house of God 17
which is in heaven, having a sharp curved blade. And 18
another angel came out from the altar, who has power
over fire; and he gave a loud cry to him who had the
sharp curved blade, saying, "Put in your sharp blade,
and let the grapes of the vine of the earth be cut; for
her grapes are fully ready". And the angel sent his 19
blade into the earth, and the vine of the earth was cut,
and he put it into the great wine-crusher of the wrath
of God. And the grapes were crushed under foot outside 20
the town, and blood came out from them, even to the
head-bands of the horses, two hundred miles.

THE SEVEN GOLD VESSELS

15 AND I saw another sign in heaven, great and strange; 1
seven angels having the seven last punishments,
for in them the wrath of God is complete.

And I saw a sea which seemed like glass mixed with 2
fire; and those who had overcome the beast, and his
image, and the number of his name, were in their places

by the sea of glass, with God's instruments of music in their hands. And they give the song of Moses the 3
servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying,
"Great and full of wonder are your works, O Lord God,
Ruler of all; true and full of righteousness are your ways,
eternal King. What man is there who will not have 4
fear before you, O Lord, and give glory to your name?
because you only are holy; for all the nations will come
and give worship before you; for your righteousness
has been made clear."

And after these things I saw, and the house of the 5
tent of witness in heaven was open: and the seven angels 6
who had the seven punishments came out from the house
of God, clothed with linen, clean and bright, and with
bands of gold about their breasts. And one of the four 7
beasts gave to the seven angels seven gold vessels full
of the wrath of God, who is living for ever and ever.
And the house of God was full of smoke from the glory 8
of God, and from his power, and no one was able to
go into the house of God, till the seven punishments
of the seven angels were ended.

16 AND a great voice out of the house of God came to 1
my ears, saying to the seven angels, "Go, and
let that which is in the seven vessels of the wrath
of God come down on the earth".

And the first went, and let what was in his vessel 2
come down on the earth; and it became an evil poisoning
wound on the men who had the mark of the beast, and
who gave worship to his image.

And the second let what was in his vessel come out 3
into the sea; and it became blood as of a dead man;
and every living thing in the sea came to an end.

And the third let what was in his vessel come out 4
into the rivers and the fountains of water; and they
became blood. And the voice of the angel of the waters 5
came to my ears, saying, "True and upright is your
judging, O Holy One, who is and was from all time:

for they made the blood of saints and prophets come out 6
like a stream, and blood have you given them for drink;
which is their right reward". And a voice came from 7
the altar, saying, "Even so, O Lord God, Ruler of all,
true and full of righteousness is your judging".

And the fourth lot what was in his vessel come out 8
on the sun; and power was given to it that men might
be burned with fire. And men were burned with great 9
heat: and they said evil things against the name of the
God who has power over these punishments; and they
were not turned from their evil ways to give him glory.

And the fifth let what was in his vessel come out on 10
the high seat of the beast; and his kingdom was made
dark; and they were biting their tongues for pain. And 11
they said evil things against the God of heaven because
of their pain and their wounds; and they were not turned
from their evil works.

And the sixth let what was in his vessel come out on 12
the great river, the river Euphrates; and it became dry,
so that the way might be made ready for the kings from
the east. And I saw coming out of the mouth of the 13
dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of
the mouth of the false prophet, three unclean spirits,
like *frogs*. For they are evil spirits, working signs; who 14
go out even to the kings of all the earth, to get them
together to the war of the great day of God, the Ruler
of all. ("See, I come as a thief. Happy is he who is 15
watching and keeps his robes, that he may not go
unclothed, and his shame be seen.") And they got them 16
together into the place which is named in Hebrew
Armageddon.

And the seventh let what was in his vessel come out 17
on the air; and there came out a great voice from the
house of God, from the high seat, saying, "It is done".
And there were flames and voices and thunders; and 18
there was a great earth-shock, so that never, from the
time when men were on the earth, had there been so
great an earth-shock, so full of power. And the great 19

town was cut into three parts, and the towns of the nations came to destruction: and Babylon the great came into mind before God, to be given the cup of the wine of his wrath. And every island took flight, and the 20
mountains were seen no longer. And great drops of ice, 21
every one about the weight of a pound, came down out of heaven on men: and men said evil things against God because of the punishment of the ice-drops; for it is very great.

THE JUDGING OF THE EVIL WOMAN

17 And one of the seven angels who had the seven 1
vessels came and said to me, "Come here, so that you may see the judging of the evil woman who is seated on the great waters; with whom the kings of the 2
earth made themselves unclean, and those who are on the earth were full of the wine of her evil desires". And 3
he took me away in the Spirit into a waste land: and I saw a woman seated on a bright red beast, full of evil names, having seven heads and ten horns, and the woman 4
was clothed in purple and bright red, with ornaments of gold and stones of great price and jewels; and in her hand was a gold cup full of evil things, and her unclean desires. And on her brow was a name, SECRET, 5
BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF THE EVIL WOMEN AND OF THE UNCLEAN THINGS OF THE EARTH. And I 6
saw the woman overcome as with the wine of the blood of the saints, and the blood of those put to death because of Jesus. And when I saw her, I was overcome with a great wonder.

THE SECRET OF THE WOMAN AND THE BEAST

And the angel said to me, "Why were you surprised? 7
I will make clear to you the secret of the woman, and of the beast on which she is seated, which has the seven heads and the ten horns. The beast which you saw was, 8

and is not; and is about to come up out of the great deep, and to go into destruction. And those who are on the earth, whose names have not been put in the book of life from the first, will be full of wonder when they see the beast, that he was, and is not, and still will be. Here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven 9
heads are seven mountains, on which the woman is seated: and they are seven kings; the five have come to 10
an end, the one is, the other has not come; and when he comes, he will have to go on for a little time. And 11
the beast which was, and is not, is himself the eighth, and is of the seven; and he goes into destruction. And 12
the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, which still have been given no kingdom; but they are given authority as kings, with the beast, for one hour. These 13
have one mind, and they give their power and authority to the beast. These will make war against the Lamb, 14
and the Lamb will overcome them, because he is the Lord of lords, and King of kings; and those who are with him are named, marked out, and true." And he 15
said to me, "The waters which you saw, where the evil woman is seated, are peoples and armies and nations and languages. And the ten horns which you 16
saw, and the beast, these will be turned against the evil woman, and will make her waste and uncovered, and will take her flesh for food, and will have her burned with fire. Because God has put it in their hearts to do 17
his purpose, and to be of one mind, giving their kingdom to the beast, till the words of God have effect and are complete. And the woman whom you saw is the great 18
town, which is ruling over the kings of the earth."

THE PUNISHMENT OF BABYLON

18 AFTER these things I saw another angel coming down 1
out of heaven, having great authority; and the earth was bright with his glory. And he gave 2
a loud cry, saying,

Babylon the great has come down from her high place,
She has come to destruction and has become a place
of evil spirits,
And of every unclean spirit,
And a hole for every unclean and hated bird.
For through the wine of the wrath of her evil desires 3
all the nations have come to destruction;
And the kings of the earth made themselves unclean
with her,
And the traders of the earth had their wealth increased
by the power of her evil ways.

And another voice from heaven came to my ears, 4
saying,

Come out of her, my people,
So that you may have no part in her sins
And in her punishments.
For her sins have gone up even to heaven, 5
And God has taken note of her evil-doing.
Give to her as she gave, 6
Even an increased reward for her works;
In the cup which was mixed by her, let there be mixed
as much again for her.
As she gave glory to herself, and became more evil in 7
her ways,
In the same measure give her pain and weeping:
For she says in her heart, 'I am seated here a queen,
And am no widow, and will in no way see sorrow'.
For this reason in one day will her troubles come, 8
Death and sorrow, and need of food;
And she will be completely burned with fire;
For strong is the Lord God who is her judge.
And the kings of the earth, who made themselves un- 9
clean with her, and in her company gave themselves
up to evil,
Will be weeping and crying over her
When they see the smoke of her burning,
Watching from far away, for fear of her punishment, 10

Saying, 'Sorrow, sorrow for Babylon the great town,
the strong town!
For in one hour you have been judged'.
And the traders of the earth are weeping and crying 11
over her,
Because no man has any more desire for their goods:
Gold and silver, 12
And stones of great price, and jewels,
And delicate linen, and robes of purple and silk and red;
And perfumed wood, and every vessel of ivory,
And every vessel made of fair wood
And of brass and iron and stone;
And sweet-smelling plants, and perfumes, 13
And wine and oil and well-crushed grain;
And cattle and sheep, and horses and carriages and
servants;
And souls of men.
And the fruit of your soul's desire has gone from you, 14
And all things delicate and shining have come to an end
And will never again be seen.
The traders in these things, by which their wealth was 15
increased,
Will be watching far off for fear of her punishment,
Weeping and crying; saying, 16
'Sorrow, sorrow for the great town,
She who was clothed in delicate linen, and purple,
and red;
With ornaments of gold and stones of great price and
jewels!
For in one hour such great wealth is come to nothing.' 17
And every shipmaster and all who are sailing on the sea,
And sailors and all who get their living by the sea,
Were watching from far away,
And crying out when they saw the smoke of her 18
burning, saying,
'What town is like the great town?'
And they put dust on their heads, 19
And were sad, weeping and crying, and saying,

'Sorrow, sorrow for the great town,
In which was increased the wealth of all who had their ships on the sea because of her great stores!
For in one hour is she made waste'.
Be glad over her, heaven, 20
And you saints, and Apostles, and prophets;
Because she has been judged by God on your account.

And a strong angel took up a stone like the great stone 21
with which grain is crushed, and sent it into the sea, saying,

So, with a great fall, will Babylon, the great town, come to destruction, and will not be seen any more at all.
And the voice of players and makers of music will 22
never again be sounding in you:
And no worker, expert in art, will ever again be living in you;
And there will be no sound of the crushing of grain any more at all in you;
And never again will the shining of lights be seen in 23
you;
And the voice of the newly-married man and the bride will never again be sounding in you:
For your traders were the lords of the earth,
And by your evil powers were all the nations turned out of the right way.
And in her was seen the blood of prophets and of saints, 24
And of all who have been put to death on the earth.

19 After these things there came to my ears a sound 1
like the voice of a great band of people in heaven, saying, "Praise to the Lord; salvation and glory and power be to our God: for true and upright are his 2
decisions; for by him has the evil woman been judged, who made the earth unclean with the sins of her body; and he has given her punishment for the blood of his servants". And again they said, "Praise to the Lord".

And her smoke went up for ever and ever. And the four 4
and twenty rulers and the four beasts went down on their
faces and gave worship to God who was seated on the
high seat, saying, "Even so, praise to the Lord". And 5
a voice came from the high seat, saying, "Give praise
to our God, all you his servants, small and great, in
whom is the fear of him". And there came to my ears 6
the voice of a great army, like the sound of waters, and
the sound of loud thunders, saying, "Praise to the Lord:
for the Lord our God, Ruler of all, is King. Let us be 7
glad with delight, and let us give glory to him: because
the time is come for the Lamb to be married, and his
wife has made herself ready. And to her it was given 8
to be clothed in delicate linen, clean and shining: for
the clean linen is the righteousness of the saints." And 9
he said to me, "Put in the book, Happy are the guests
at the bride-feast of the Lamb". And he said to me,
"These are the true words of God". And I went on 10
my face before his feet to give him worship. And he said
to me, "See you do it not: I am a brother-servant with
you, and with your brothers who keep the witness of
Jesus: give worship to God: for the witness of Jesus
is the spirit of the prophet's word".

"CERTAIN AND TRUE"

And the heaven was open; and I saw a white horse, 11
and he who was seated on it was named Certain and
True; and he is judging and making war in righteous-
ness. And his eyes are a flame of fire, and crowns are 12
on his head; and he has a name in writing, of which no
man has knowledge but he himself. And he is clothed 13
in a robe washed with blood: and his name is The Word
of God. And the armies which are in heaven went after 14
him on white horses, clothed in delicate linen, white and
clean. And out of his mouth comes a sharp sword, with 15
which he overcomes the nations: and he has rule over
them with a rod of iron: and he is crushing with his feet

the grapes of the strong wrath of God the Ruler of all.
And on his robe and on his leg is a name, KING OF 16
KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

And I saw an angel taking his place in the sun; and 17
he was crying with a loud voice, saying to all the birds
in flight in the heavens, "Come together to the great
feast of God; so that you may take for your food the 18
flesh of kings, and of captains, and of strong men, and
of horses and of those who are seated on them, and the
flesh of all men, free and unfree, small and great".

And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and 19
their armies, come together to make war against him
who was seated on the horse and against his army. And 20
the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet who
did the signs before him, by which they were turned
from the true way who had the mark of the beast, and
who gave worship to his image: these two were put
living into the sea of ever-burning fire. And the rest 21
were put to death with the sword of him who was on
the horse, even the sword which came out of his mouth:
and all the birds were made full with their flesh.

THE EVIL ONE PUT IN CHAINS

20 AND I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, 1
having the key of the great deep and a great chain
in his hand. And he took the *dragon*, the old snake, 2
which is the Evil One and Satan, and put chains on him
for a thousand years, and put him into the great deep, 3
and it was shut and locked over him, so that he might
put the nations in error no longer, till the thousand
years were ended: after this he will be let loose for
a little time.

And I saw high seats, and they were seated on them, 4
and the right of judging was given to them: and I saw
the souls of those who were put to death for the witness
of Jesus, and for the word of God, and those who did
not give worship to the beast, or to his image, and had

not his mark on their brows or on their hands; and they were living and ruling with Christ a thousand years. The rest of the dead did not come to life again till the 5
thousand years were ended. This is the first coming back from the dead. Happy and holy is he who has a part 6
in this first coming: over these the second death has no power; but they will be priests of God and of Christ, and will be ruling with him a thousand years.

And when the thousand years are ended, Satan will 7
be let loose out of his prison, and will go out to put in 8
error the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to get them together to the war, the number of whom is as the sands of the sea. And they went up over the face of the earth, and made 9
a circle about the tents of the saints, and the well-loved town: and fire came down out of heaven for their destruction. And the Evil One who put them in error was 10
sent down into the sea of ever-burning fire, where the beast and the false prophet are, and their punishment will go on day and night for ever and ever.

And I saw a great white seat, and him who was seated 11
on it, before whose face the earth and the heaven took flight; and there was no place for them. And I saw the 12
dead, great and small, taking their places before the high seat; and the books were open, and another book was open, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged by the things which were in the books, even by their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were 13
in it; and death and Hell gave up the dead which were in them; and they were judged every man by his works. And death and Hell were put into the sea of fire. This 14
is the second death, even the sea of fire. And if anyone's 15
name was not in the book of life, he went down into the sea of fire.

A NEW HEAVEN AND A NEW EARTH

21 AND I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first 1
heaven and the first earth were gone; and there
was no more sea. And I saw the holy town, new 2
Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, like
a bride made beautiful for her husband. And there came 3
to my ears a great voice out of the high seat, saying,
"See, the tent of God is with men, and he will make his
living-place with them, and they will be his people, and
God himself will be with them, and be their God. And 4
he will put an end to all their weeping; and there will
be no more death, or sorrow, or crying, or pain; for
the first things have come to an end." And he who is 5
seated on the high seat said, "See, I make all things
new". And he said, "Put it in the book; for these words
are certain and true". And he said to me, "It is done. 6
I am the First and the Last, the start and the end. I will
freely give of the fountain of the water of life to him who
is in need. He who overcomes will have these things for 7
his heritage; and I will be his God, and he will be my
son. But those who are full of fear and without faith, 8
the unclean and takers of life, those who do the sins of
the flesh, and those who make use of evil powers or who
give worship to images, and all those who are false,
will have their part in the sea of ever-burning fire which
is the second death."

THE NEW JERUSALEM

And one of the seven angels who had the seven vessels 9
in which were the seven last punishments, came and said
to me, "Come here, and see the bride, the Lamb's wife".
And he took me away in the Spirit to a great and 10
high mountain, and let me see the holy town Jerusalem,
coming down out of heaven from God, having the glory 11
of God: and her light was like a stone of great price,
a *jasper* stone, clear as glass: she had a wall great and 12

high, with twelve doors, and at the doors twelve angels;
and names on them, which are the names of the twelve
tribes of the children of Israel. And on the east were 13
three doors; and on the north three doors; and on the
south three doors; and on the west three doors. And 14
the wall of the town had twelve bases, and on them the
twelve names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb. And 15
he who was talking with me had a gold measuring-rod
to take the measure of the town, and of its doors, and
its wall. And the town is square, as wide as it is long; 16
and he took the measure of the town with the rod, one
thousand and five hundred miles: it is equally long and
wide and high. And he took the measure of its wall, 17
seventy-two yards, after the measure of a man, that is,
of an angel. And the building of its wall was of jasper, 18
and the town was clear gold, clear as glass. The bases 19
of the wall of the town had ornaments of all sorts of
beautiful stones. The first base was jasper; the second,
sapphire; the third, *chalcedony;* the fourth, *emerald;* the 20
fifth, *sardonyx;* the sixth, *sardius;* the seventh, *chrysolite;*
the eighth, *beryl;* the ninth, *topaz;* the tenth, *chrysoprase;*
the eleventh, *jacinth;* the twelfth, *amethyst.* And the 21
twelve doors were twelve *pearls;* every door was made
of one pearl; and the street of the town was clear gold,
as clear as glass. And I saw no Temple there; because 22
the Lord God, the Ruler of all, and the Lamb are its
Temple. And the town has no need of the sun, or of 23
the moon, to give it light: for the glory of God did
make it light, and the light of it is the Lamb. And the 24
nations will go in its light: and the kings of the earth
will take their glory into it. And the doors of it will 25
never be shut by day (for there is no night there): and 26
the glory and honour of the nations will come into it:
and nothing unclean may come into it, or anyone whose 27
works are cursed or false; but only those whose names
22 are in the Lamb's book of life. And I saw a river of 1
water of life, clear as glass, coming out of the high seat
of God and of the Lamb, in the middle of its street. 2

And on this side of the river and on that was the tree of life, having twelve sorts of fruits, giving its fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree give life to the nations. And there will be no more curse: and the high 3
seat of God and of the Lamb will be there; and his servants will be worshipping him; and they will see his 4
face; and his name will be on their brows. And there 5
will be no more night; and they have no need of a light or the shining of the sun; for the Lord God will give them light: and they will be ruling for ever and ever.

And he said to me, "These words are certain and 6
true: and the Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, sent his angel to make clear to his servants the things which are now to come about. See, I come quickly. 7
A blessing on him who keeps the words of this book of the prophet."

And I, John, am he who saw these things and to whose 8
ears they came. And when I had seen and given ear, I went down on my face to give worship at the feet of the angel who made these things clear to me. And 9
he said to me, "See you do it not; I am a brother-servant with you and with your brothers the prophets, and with those who keep the words of this book: give worship to God".

THE WITNESS OF THE LORD

And he said to me, "Let not the words of this 10
prophet's book be kept secret; because the time is near. Let the evil man go on in his evil: and let the unclean be 11
still unclean: and let the upright go on in his righteousness: and let the holy be holy still. See, I come quickly; 12
and my reward is with me, to give to every man the outcome of his works. I am the First and the Last, the 13
start and the end. A blessing on those whose robes are 14
washed, so that they may have a right to the tree of life, and may go in by the doors into the town. Outside 15
are the dogs, and those who make use of evil powers,

those who make themselves unclean, and the takers of life, and those who give worship to images, and everyone whose delight is in what is false.

"I, Jesus, have sent my angel to give witness to you 16
of these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, the bright and morning star."

And the Spirit and the bride say, "Come". And let 17
him who gives ear, say, "Come". And let him who is in need come; and let everyone desiring it take of the water of life freely.

For I say to every man to whose ears have come 18
the words of this prophet's book, If any man makes an addition to them, God will put on him the punishments which are in this book: and if any man takes away from 19
the words of this book, God will take away from him his part in the tree of life and the holy town, even the things which are in this book.

He who gives witness to these things says, "Truly, 20
I come quickly". Even so come, Lord Jesus.

The grace of the Lord Jesus be with the saints. So 21
be it.